



# RED PACKET SERVER

BOOK 03

*Zhi Xin*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Red Packet Server

(超级红包群)

by

Zhi Xin

(知新)

# Synopsis

---

On a certain day, Ye Zichen was dragged into a deities' chat group. These deities liked to brag, and also liked to send red packets.

Ever since then, Ye Zichen's life has had unbelievable changes.

The God of Fortune sent a red packet. I'm going to snatch it! Wow, I got a large gold ingot.

Taibai Jinxing sent a red packet, I'm going to snatch it as well! Wow, I got a thousand years of cultivation.

Super WeChat Red Envelope Group, with a swipe of my hands, I got them red packets.

Stop messing around, I'm going to snatch red envelopes now!

# **Copyright © by Lisa Hayes**

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Selutu @ [Volare Novels](#)

Translation Editing by Khuja & etvolare @ [Volare Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and

incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201 – The Kind Killer – Mu Jinglei

---

Di Tian, who stayed under the same roof as the Hou brothers, gradually became more obedient.

He had no other choice, if he didn't, he really would get beaten up!

What's more, under Ye Zichen's education, those two brothers were terribly evil in beating him. That's why, right after eating breakfast super early in the morning, Di Tian obediently ran over to the kitchen sink to wash the dishes.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen was watching TV as he sat casually on the sofa. To be honest, I seem to be going to school less and less now...

Just as Ye Zichen was pondering whether or not he should report in at school...

Buzz!

When Ye Zichen heard the phone in his pocket ring, he placed it beside his ear and heard the sound of Zhang Rui gulping.

“Ye-zi, hurry and come back to school. The Kind Killer’s looking for you.”

Zing.

Ye Zichen promptly rushed towards the school after putting his phone in his pocket without saying anything.

In the university’s office of academic affairs.

Zhang Rui smiled dryly as he looked at the woman with a delicate face, who looked to be twenty seven or twenty eight.

If people were to judge her solely based on her appearance, she would definitely be a goddess in the hearts of men.

However, at that moment, the faint cold smile on her face caused the entire office to freeze.

She was Mu Jinglei, the head of the veterinary department, whose nickname was the Kind Killer.

“Zhang Rui, how many times did you help Ye Zichen call out his presence in class?” Her soft voice and the warm smile on her lips would cause people to mistakenly think that she was just a neighboring older sister.

However, Zhang Rui, as a student in the veterinary course, knew, this older sister was not as mesmerizing as her appearance led one to think.

Gulp.

Zhang Rui silently gulped, then dipped his head.

I can't meet her eyes.

I'm dead if I do.

“Wow! You aren’t speaking. You guys have a very deep friendship, as expected of brothers that have slept together for two years! Just now, you called Ye Zichen when you were outside,

right? You said... KIND! KILLER! Right?"

She retained her warm smile, but the atmosphere had become even more suppressing.

Zhang Rui was extremely stressed out. Being in the same room as the Kind Killer was definitely not a lucky thing.

Dong dong.

A knock sounded out at the office door. Not long later, Ye Zichen stuck his head in to have a look.

Ye Zichen's eyes opened wide when he saw Mu Jinglei, who sat at the desk.

“You still remember coming back to class? I was getting ready to expel you,” Mu Jinglei smiled. Her kind smile was like a sharp sword, but she wasn’t the kind to stab you to death at once, she was the kind to slowly cut you to death.

Ye Zichen ran in quickly, and subconsciously looked at the file on the desk.

F\*ck.

She’s serious.

She really wanted to expel me.

Ye Zichen shrugged with a coy smile, then licked his lips, “Miss Mu, why did you come back so early? Didn’t you say that you were

going to be gone for a foreign exchange for two months!?”

“Ha... Two months, wouldn’t you completely rebel in the school?” Mu Jinglei smiled meaningfully. Then she looked at Zhang Rui, who didn’t even dare to breathe on the side. “Go on, I’ll deal with you later.”

Zoom.

Zhang Rui ran away from the office in less than a single second.

He didn’t want to stay in this sort of damn place for even a single second.

After Zhang Rui left from the office, Ye Zichen pulled out a chair and sat opposite Mu Jinglei with a chuckle, “Sis, how did the foreign exchange go?”

“Who allowed you to sit down? Stand up!” Mu Jinglei glared at him. “I’m the dean of your department in school!”

“There aren’t any outsiders here, so why act so formal? I saw auntie a while earlier.”

“Is my mom well?”

Mu Jinglei actually lived in Ye Zichen’s village before. She was the child of his auntie.

The reason he could come to Polytechnic University to study and choose study a veterinary degree was partially due to Mu Jinglei.

“She’s doing pretty good. Our home’s getting taken down. Auntie and little bro should have moved elsewhere. What? Have you guys not been in contact recently?”

“No...”

Mu Jinglei’s expression saddened. Ever since she started to work, she very rarely contacted her home. This was especially true since she wasn’t on the best terms with her family.

It could be said that they had no communication outside of her giving living expenses to her family.

Thus, they gradually ended up like this.

“Sis is busy, so it’s normal, just go back to take a look a while later when we’re on holiday.”

This was the sort of conversation that Ye Zichen liked. Mu Jinglei nodded, then all of a sudden, she frowned and slammed the table, “Wait, why are we chatting about this? Tell me, why haven’t you been going to class? I also heard that you’ve been rather close with Su Yiyun, that rich second generation... Zichen, we’re from normal families. You are always messing around with him now. When you graduate, he can go and work in his dad’s company, but you can’t!”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but feel a bit of warmth in his heart when he heard everything from the initial interrogation to the advice later.

She wasn’t his real sister, but she was just like one...

“Sis, I understand, I will definitely go to class properly.”

Mu Jinglei sighed softly when she saw Ye Zichen's apologetic expression, then stood up and walked to his side, "Alright, sis wasn't blaming you. I just wanted to tell you not to disturb your future. We haven't met for so long, sis will take you out for a nice meal."

The place the two went was the restaurant that Ye Zichen frequents under Xiao Hai's control. Mu Jinglei couldn't help but shake her head when she saw the fancy decorations within the restaurant, "Zichen, sis can't afford to treat you to this place."

Although she was the dean of a department in a university, her salary wasn't that high. She might be able to afford a normal western restaurant, but this place...

It was clearly a place that only wealthy people could go to.

"Even if you want to rip sis off, it has to be somewhere that sis can afford financially, right?" Mu Jinglei said as she started to drag Ye Zichen out.

At this moment, the shop manager hurried over and smiled respectfully, “Mr. Ye.”

“I see that the first floor is full? Is there space on the second?”

“There is space on the second floor, but there are still rooms in the third!”

“No need, I just wanted to eat a casual meal with my sister...”

“Understood,” the manager bowed respectfully, then made a “please” gesture before leading Ye Zichen and Mu Jinglei to a booth near the window on the second floor.

“Mr. Ye, what dishes should be chosen?”

“Just do as you see fit, but don’t be like last time. It was too much, we couldn’t finish it!”

“Understood, please wait a moment.”

The manager’s respectful attitude caused Mu Jinglei to be stunned. When the manager left, she finally whispered secretly, “Zichen, what’s going on?”

“It’s a long story. Your little brother got a bit money. Just treat this meal as little brother’s treat to welcome sis back,” Ye Zichen laughed softly. However, Mu Jinglei looked at him with a shocked expression...

“A bit of money... This place isn’t somewhere that you can come

to with something as simple as a bit of money, right?”

“Hey...” Ye Zichen smiled idiotically, but the phone in his pocket started to vibrate with a very bad timing.

Ye Zichen took out his phone to take a look at WeChat, then saw a huge red packet from Erlang Shen.

# **Chapter 202 – Erlang Shen, Who’s No Longer In Poverty**

---

You received Erlang Shen’s red packet.

Gold Ingot x50

Cultivation experience x100000.

Ye Zichen was shocked upon seeing that. What’s going on with Erlang Shen? Why did he send me so much in the red packet?

50 gold ingots... That was five hundred thousand yuan.

There was also the one hundred thousand cultivation experience...

Is this still the Erlang Shen that I know?

“Bro, you got rich, ah?”

Ye Zichen sent a message in shock...

Dingdong.

Erlang Shen: Hahaha, bro, I, your brother, finally managed to stand up on my own two feet!

Erlang Shen: That Landlord game that you taught me is so goddamn amazing. I, your brother, have been slaughtering

everyone in the Heavenly Court.

Erlang Shen: I'm telling you, I, your brother, managed to stand up on my feet!

Ye Zichen could feel exactly just how excited Erlang Shen was from these words.

To be honest, Ye Zichen was truly moved when he saw the reply.

Such a great bro.

He still remembered to send me red packets even after earning so much, but I was only focused on benefits when I taught him the game.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen sighed in his heart and shook his head.

“Bro, how about I teach you another way to earn money.”

“No need, your bro, I, am earning happily with Landlord right now. When those guys in the Heavenly Court have more or less learned everything, then you can teach me something new so I can go slaughter them again.”

“Sure, it’s good that bro’s earning.”

“Haha, that’s it. The geezer, Old Lord Taishang, is not happy with losing and asked me to keep playing, so I’ll leave now.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Erlang Shen increased by 200. Current intimacy level: 500.

F\*ck, an increase of 200 instantly. It seems like Erlang Shen has truly earned a lot in the Heavenly Court.

Wait...

He mentioned Old Lord Taishang just now.

Shushushu.

Ye Zichen entered his chat with Erlang Shen, then started to spam him.

“Bro!”

“Bro!”

“Bro!”

Erlang Shen, who was about to begin playing, raised his hand to signal the others to wait a moment. This caused Old Lord Taishang and the God of Fortune to be rather displeased.

“Yang Jian, are you going to play or not?”

“Yeah, are you still playing?”

“One sec, my bro’s looking for me,” Erlang Shen crossed his legs, then replied to Ye Zichen’s message.

“Bro, what is it?”

“You said that you’re playing Landlord with Old Lord Taishang, right?”

“Yeah.”

Erlang Shen couldn’t help but chuckle when Old Lord Taishang was mentioned.

That geezer had earned a lot by refining pills in the Heavenly Court. He was definitely one of the richest people in the Heavenly Court.

He was stubborn, and would call to be Landlord no matter his cards.

Yet, he was also old, so he wasn't the brightest person around.

He was the typical fool with a lot of money.

The reason Erlang Shen was able to get back on his feet so quick was mostly thanks to that geezer.

“Bro, I have a request to ask of you.”

No need to ask, just say it.”

The reason he could get back on his feet was all thanks to Ye Zichen. In his mind, although Ye Zichen was a bro, he was more of a savior.

“Play with Old Lord Taishang, and help me win a Three Striped Soul-Clearing Heaven-Returning Pill.”

“Pill? Sure, no problem, wait for the good news.”

With that as well as the urging from Old Lord Taishang and the God of Fortune, Erlang Shen let go of everything to “fight”.

Ye Zichen smiled as he put his phone back into his pocket after getting Erlang Shen’s confirmation. However, he saw Mu Jinglei

holding her head in her hands as she looked straight at him.

“... Sis, why are you looking at me like that?”

“Did you hear me call you just now?” Mu Jinglei looked at him.  
“You were so focused when chatting with your girlfriend just  
then!”

Ugh.

Who the f\*ck is my girlfriend!?

Ye Zichen looked up speechlessly.

Then, Mu Jinglei said with a shudder, “Could it be that it’s a boyfriend and not a girlfriend... Sigh, Zichen, that isn’t good.”

...

“Sis, enough!”

He really didn’t think that Mu Jinglei was actually that kind of person.

“Ye Zichen?” At that moment, a slightly surprised voice sounded out at the stairway to the second floor.

Mu Jinglei looked over, then saw an oily-faced man in a suit walking towards them.

“Zichen, he’s looking for you?” Mu Jinglei looked over at Ye Zichen as the oily-faced man arrived in front of their table.

“Zichen, it really is you.”

“Cui Xuan, long time no see.”

Ye Zichen stood up from the chair. This was his high school classmate. They weren’t on really good terms, but they weren’t on bad terms either. His family had a bit of money, and after graduation, he seemed to have gone with his dad to do business on the oceans.

They didn’t meet after that, so it was a surprise that they met here.

“I couldn’t tell, but you’re doing pretty good. You can actually come dine in these places now,” Cui Xuan patted his shoulder and laughed.

Ye Zichen could only laugh dryly in response when he felt his ex-classmate’s intimacy, “I’m not bad.”

“Is this your girlfriend?” Cui Xuan glanced towards Mu Jinglei.

Ye Zichen quickly explained, “This is my sis, actually I can only come here because she’s treating me to a meal.”

“Oh, it’s like that... Ai, this you’re eating here too, I’m a Gold member here and is having a meal with an important person here. Don’t say that your old classmate isn’t taking care of you, let’s go together, I’ll introduce you...”

“Is that really good?” Ye Zichen smiled wryly, he merely wanted to eat a meal here...

Moreover, to have this happen when Mu Jinglei was with him, that wasn’t good.

“What’s wrong with that? You should still be in university, right? I’m telling you, you don’t know how hard it is in our society. That important person is around our age, knowing an extra person is an extra way out!”

Ye Zichen was unable to refuse when he saw that his old classmate was so passionate.

He could only sigh in his heart, then turned around to look at Mu Jinglei, “Sis, what do you think?”

“Then let’s go and take a look,” Mu Jinglei felt rather helpless as well. Since the other person has already said that, the two of them can’t really refuse.

“Then, thank you.”

...

Cui Xuan smiled on the way to the room, “Old classmate, what are you studying in uni?”

“Medicine!”

“Medicine’s good, being a doctor can earn you quite a bit of money. It’s not like me, I went to the oceans with my dad and earned several million in a few years, but my body isn’t well.”

“I study veterinary medicine.”

“A vet?” Cui Xuan frowned slightly. “That’s a bit worse since you’re not treating people, but it’s still alright. Animals are worth more than people these days.”

“It’s alright,” Ye Zichen didn’t know how to reply exactly.

Eventually, Ye Zichen followed Cui Xuan to a room. Right before entering, Cui Xuan couldn’t help but to remind Ye Zichen, “Old classmate, don’t casually say things after entering... This is related to the financing of my new company.”

“Understood,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. Only then did Cui Xuan knock lightly on the door, then walked in respectfully with his hands by his side.

“Young Master Qu.”

The person that was witting on the sofa in the room was a young man of about twenty something years old. Ye Zichen looked over...

Ugh.

Qu Yaoyang.

Ye Zichen wanted to leave subconsciously, but Qu Yaoyang had already started walking towards him.

“Young Master Qu, this is...”

Cui Xuan wanted to introduce Ye Zichen, but Qu Yaoyang ignored him and instead directly greeted Ye Zichen.

“Young Master Ye.”

# Chapter 203 – Gu Tian’s Deal

---

Young Master Ye?

Cui Xuan, who was at the side, was completely shocked. This young master in front of me is famous in Bingcheng.

His family's business is also top class. Even if my father saw this young master, he would have to act respectfully.

But he actually called Ye Zichen, Young Master Ye!

All of a sudden, Cui Xuan felt as if his brain had short-circuited.

It seemed like his old classmate wasn't just simply doing good.

“Qu Yaoyang...” Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

Qu Yaoyang quickly nodded, “Young Master Ye, I’m here!”

“Have a seat,” Ye Zichen pointed at the sofa in the room, then led Mu Jinglei over.

I didn’t think that I would bump into this great lord here.

Qu Yaoyang felt beyond awkward. Ignoring the fact that he had been beaten, he wasn’t in a position to get back at Ye Zichen either.

The meeting between the two was as awkward as it could possibly get.

However, the most awkward person present was definitely Cui Xuan.

In his mind, Young Master Qu was a very important person. From the looks of things, Ye Zichen seemed to be a very important person in the minds of the person he regarded as a very important person...

“Why aren’t you speaking!”

Ye Zichen sat on the sofa and crossed his legs, while both Qu Yaoyang and Cui Xuan forced a smile.

Ye Zichen glanced at his ex-classmate, who was on the side, and said softly, “Qu Yaoyang, let me introduce you. This is my old classmate, Cui Xuan.”

“I’ve heard a lot about you,” Qu Yaoyang quickly stood up from the sofa, while Cui Xuan also did the same to shake hands.

“I heard that you two have some sort of cooperation going on... Hmm, take good care of my old classmate in the future!”

“No problem, a friend of Young Master Ye is a friend of mine,” With that, Qu Yaoyang patted Cui Xuan’s shoulders. “Cui Xuan, about financing your company, just directly come to see me with the contract.”

“About this...” Cui Xuan was shocked.

He had troubled himself a lot for this financing matter.

He never would have thought that just because of a single one of Ye Zichen's sentence that it was passed through!

“Thank you Young Master Qu, thank you Young Master Ye. Continue chatting here, I'll be leaving first.”

Since Cui Xuan wasn't someone that couldn't read the mood, he understood that he was just in the way after finishing the talk about the contract.

Thus, Cui Yang left the room with an apologetic smile.

At this moment, Qu Yaoyang also smiled coyly, “Young Master Ye.”

“Mmm, it seems like you recovered pretty well, I can't tell that

you were ever wounded,” Ye Zichen nodded.

Hearing that, Qu Yaoyang’s expression froze as he maintained his smile, “Young Master Ye, last time, this little brother had eyes, but no pupils, I hope Young Master Ye does not take it to heart.”

“I won’t, don’t be nervous, I’m not the type to hold a grudge.”

“Thank you for Young Master Ye being magnanimous,” Qu Yaoyang smiled coyly. When he saw Ye Zichen’s impatient expression, he immediately spoke up. “Young Master Ye, I’ll leave this room to you. I won’t disturb your world of two.”

“You don’t want to stay to have a bite?”

“No need, no need!” Qu Yaoyang waved.

How would he dared to stay?

“Fine, then go. When you go out, tell the manager to take the dishes over here.”

After Ye Zichen sent Qu Yaoyang away, Mu Jinglei, who was sitting beside him, spoke up in confusion, “Zichen, we haven’t met for a bit more than a month, but you changed so much that sis doesn’t really know you anymore!”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled, “How is that possible? Aren’t I the same as before?”

Mu Jinglei shook her head and said with a hint of confusion in her eyes, “When I went out for business, I saw your header on Weibo. I’ve also heard about a talent agency taking you on board. When you told me that you earned a bit of money, I thought you signed with a talent agency, but from the looks of it, it isn’t as

simple as I thought!"

...

The meal continued slightly awkwardly.

During the meal, Mu Jinglei's questions continuously flew towards Ye Zichen like bullets.

Her title of the Kind Killer was not just for show. Although her questions seemed normal, but each one was deadly.

Ye Zichen felt like his head was going to explode just from answering the questions.

When they left the restaurant, Mu Jinglei squinted her eyes and smiled meaningfully, “Our Zichen grew up...”

“Sis, you are really making me feel troubled,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

Mu Jinglei giggled and stopped a taxi, “Didn’t you say you have stuff to busy yourself with? Then go, but the lessons tomorrow...”

“I’ll definitely be there!” Ye Zichen quickly stood straight and saluted.

“Don’t worry, sis isn’t such a not understanding person. Since you’ve achieved so much, it doesn’t matter if you go to lessons or not.”

“Sis, I’ll definitely be there!”

“Sis is very happy when I see that little brother loves studying so much. Remember to come to class tomorrow!” With that, Mu Jinglei opened the taxi door and left the restaurant.

Only then did Ye Zichen let out a long sigh...

Women are truly creatures that are hard to understand.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

At that moment, the phone in his pocket rang annoyingly once again.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but frown and take out his phone when he heard his phone.

"Hurry, hurry, hurry for what! I was eating just now, would I keep owing you a toy!?"

While he was eating, Xie Lei kept on hurrying him to send the toys over.

If he wasn't Xie Bian's grandson, Ye Zichen would've just ignored him.

"Can I interpret this as you getting angry with me?"

XIe Lei pretty much replied instantly, while his unfriendly tone caused Ye Zichen to roll his eyes.

Cocky for what.

When my Immortal Heart of Pure Yang is of a high level and I've become an Immortal King, even your grandpa's going to be of no use.

However, he wasn't able to match this brat at this moment.

"No, I just didn't want you to be anxious. This lowly one will go and buy the toys now!"

"Then hurry up. Oh yeah, buy a puzzle as well. Bu Er said that he

wants to play.”

I'll endure it.

It doesn't cost much anyways, so I'll just buy it.

Ye Zichen replied Xie Lei bitterly, then stopped a taxi to go to the toy store.

However, before he got on, Ye Zichen realized that he should buy a car.

Ever since the 918 Xiao Hai gave him was trashed, he never had another car.

I'll buy one for myself when I have time. No matter what, it is still more convenient.

When Ye Zichen got to the toy store, he bought the Transformers and puzzle, then sent it to Xie Lei.

He thought he could earn a bit of intimacy level.

But.

There wasn't even a word of thanks, not to mention intimacy level.

It was still Cold at o.

Clap.

Just as Ye Zichen was looking at his phone screen and retorting about how sissy Xie Lei was, he felt someone suddenly pat him on the shoulders.

He shuddered, put away the phone and turned around.

It was a face with a bright smile, but what awaited the face was Ye Zichen's fist.

Bang.

Gu Tian felt really dizzy by Ye Zichen's punch.

After a long while, he finally muttered in an extremely troubled tone, “Why did you hit me again?”

“My hands itch whenever I see you,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. Then he took out a cigarette from his pocket and lit it for himself. “Say it, what did you seek me out for this time!? Don’t tell me it was a coincidence, we really don’t have such fate!”

“I want to discuss with Brother Zichen about a deal!” Gu Tian smiled, and took out a piece of ancient wood. “This... is the pay!”

# Chapter 204 – I'm Watching Over It!

---

Ye Zichen looked at the ancient log with a face full of disdain.

What the hell?

It's been burnt into charcoal.

Dingdong.

The system has detected Azure Wood Charcoal, an item needed for Immortal Heart of Pure Yang Level 3.

Required Items for Immortal Heart of Pure Yang Level 3 activated.

Azure Wood Charcoal x1, Spring-Returning Pill x10, Rootless Water x5 liters

Slap.

Ye Zichen, who had been looking at the piece of wood in disdain, immediately snatched the wood up.

“Deal!”

...

Gu Tian looked at the ancient wood that had left his hand with shock, then glanced at Ye Zichen, who was holding it with loving care...

“Brother Ye, I didn’t tell you what the deal is yet.”

“That’s true.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then held out the azure wood reluctantly. An item needed for upgrading the Immortal Heart of Pure Yang is naturally good, but if the proposed deal was way too difficult...

Then it wouldn’t be worth the hassle.

“Tell me, what sort of deal do you want to make?”

Gu Tian smiled, then raised his hand to scratch his smoke-colored hair, “Brother Ye should be able to communicate with people from the Underworld, right?”

“Aren’t you asking a bit too much?” Ye Zichen smiled and squinted his eyes. He wasn’t sure of this brat’s background yet, so he couldn’t say things carelessly.

“Brother Ye, don’t be too worried,” Gu Tian smiled. “I won’t hide it from you. I’m actually one of the younger generation of the Gu family, one of the hidden families. I am also one of the successors to the position of the young family head. However, I am not as capable as my brothers in terms of other measures, so I’m pretty much eliminated from being chosen!”

“The heck does that have to do with me?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “Go and solve the problems of the hidden families yourselves. Even if you come and complain to me, I can’t help you...”

“Other people might not be able to help, but Brother Ye definitely can,” Gu Tian smiled and stretched lazily. “We, the Gu

family are rather special. Other families might purely belong to the Underworld's faction or the Heavenly Court's faction, but we, the Gu family worship both realms. We worship the Two Impermanence Lords and Four Great Spiritual Monkeys... In the past few generations, we were still able to communicate with the people from the Underworld and from the Heavenly Court. However, our family has declined, and we are unable to see people from the Underworld and the Heavenly Court in our current generation."

...

It would be weird if you could see them, alright?

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly. The Heavenly Court and the Underworld are on the verge of fighting.

A puny family like you actually didn't take a side, and chose to be neutral...

If I were someone from the Underworld or the Heavenly Court, I would ignore you guys as well.

However, Ye Zichen was able to hear some useful information in Gu Tian's words.

The hidden families were normally one of the branches of the three realms, they would have ones they worship in their families...

Doesn't that mean that if he could get on good terms with all the people from the Heavenly Court and the Underworld, and become brothers with them, these people from the hidden families would have to call him a lord!?

Thus, Ye Zichen started to laugh idiotically. Gu Tian looked at him in shock, then waved his hand in front of Ye Zichen's eyes.

“Brother Ye!”

“Here!” Ye Zichen quickly wiped away the saliva from the corner of his mouth, then raised his eyebrows. “How do you want me to help you?”

“I want Brother Ye to help me find a ghost servant during our family meeting in order to support me.”

“It’s that simple?” Ye Zichen thought that Gu Tian would want him to find the Two Impermanence Lords, but he merely wanted a ghost servant from the Underworld.

F\*ck, I’m already a ghost servant in the Underworld!

I'm a Level 4 Ghost Servant!

Of course, if a mortal like him went over to the Gu household and told others that he's a ghost servant, it would be fortunate for him to not get beaten to death. However, he knew White Impermanence, with their relationship...

What's more, the bodyguards beside him are the descendants of those Four Great Spiritual Monkeys!

Regardless of Gu Tian wanting people from the Underworld or the Heavenly Court.

It was simple.

“If your request is that simple, then deal.”

Snatch.

Ye Zichen snatched back the Azure Wood Charcoal that he had just given to Gu Tian.

Spring-Returning Pill was a pill that only cost a hundred cultivation experience in the Treasure Shop, and he had several liters of rootless water.

I am definitely going to level up the Immortal Heart of Pure Yang.

“Is Brother Ye speaking the truth?” Gu Tian merely wanted to ask. He never would have thought that something that several generations of people from the Gu family was unable to do was so easy when it came to Ye Zichen...

“It’s such a tiny thing, what’s to be surprised about.”

Buzz...

The phone in Ye Zichen’s pocket rang. Ye Zichen looked at the caller ID, then placed the phone by his ear.

Not long later, Zhuge Kongming’s childish, yet anxious call sounded out.

“Zichen-ge, someone came to trash our shop!”

Zoom.

Ye Zichen instantly frowned.

Went to trash my shop? Are these people sick of living?

“Wait a bit, I’ll be right there.”

With that, Ye Zichen turned his head to look at Gu Tian, “Start driving, take me to this place...”

At the entrance to Ye Zichen’s supermarket.

Zhuge Kongming’s face shone with a faint white light within a golden barrier, while Blackie stood beside him.

“Gu Le, if you are smart, then hurry up and f\*ck off. When my Zichen-ge comes back, you’re screwed,” Zhuge Kongming roared angrily at the man wearing a faint smug look, who was standing outside the barrier.

“Is that so? I don’t know whether or not I’ll be screwed, but I know for certain that you’re going to be screwed now,” Gu Le shook his head with a smile. He waved his hand, then the two attendants beside him stepped forward.

Beginner Ranked Spiritual Body.

“I wonder how long Young Master Zhuge’s barrier can hold up.”

With that, his two attendants charged towards the barrier and attacked maniacally.

Zhuge Kongming's expression instantly darkened.

They, the Zhuge Family's relationship with the Gu family had been extremely tense due to the fighting over spiritual veins.

These two families would often send someone to assassinate the elites of the other family. From Gu Le's expression, Gu Le was certain of killing him.

Especially since his barrier would not hold up for long against two Beginner ranked Spiritual Body leveled experts.

"Gu Le, you dare to attack me? If my family finds out, they will never be done with your Gu family!" Zhuge Kongming's face was filled with solemnity.

Gu Le suddenly pursed his lips and smiled, “Is our relationship very good? Zhuge Kongming, if you’re going to blame anyone, then blame your bad luck. Recently, several people in our Gu family are competing for the position of the junior family head. It will be a huge achievement for me to take you back.”

Crack.

At the same time, a crack also appeared on the golden barrier.

Zhuge Kongming’s expression darkened, and bit his lips...

“Wow, Young Master Zhuge is actually going to use the forbidden technique, Miracle Gates Escape. That will decrease your lifespan...”

Gu Le's face was filled with a meaningful smile.

At the same time, Zhuge Kongming also said coolly, "It's better than being taken away by a mad dog like you."

With that, Zhuge Kongming swiped his right thumb across the corner of his mouth and clapped towards the floor...

"Miracle..."

Dong.

At that very moment, two muscular men suddenly appeared outside the barrier. Immediately afterwards, the attendants who were furiously attacking the barrier also flew out with a cough of blood without any prior symptoms.

Clap.

A hand suddenly patted Gu Le's shoulder. At the same time, a cold warning sounded out.

“Brat, did you not know that, this place... has me watching over it!?”

# Chapter 205 – False Marriage String

---

The tables had turned.

Gu Le gulped in shock and didn't dare to look back. Meanwhile, Zhuge Kongming's face brightened up and dispelled the barrier in front of him.

“Zichen-ge.”

Zichen!

Gu Le's expression tensed. He had heard Zhuge Kongming mention this name before.

He didn't pay attention to the name back then, since he could do whatever he wants with two Spiritual Body attendants by his side

in the Modern Realm.

However, those two hulks had sent his attendants flying.

“Brat, say it, why did you come to trash my place?” Ye Zichen walked past Gu Le with a chuckle, then walked in front of Zhuge Kongming to rub his head. “Little fellow, I knew you weren’t a normal person.”

“Hehe,” Zhuge Kongming smiled coyly and scratched his head.

“Brat, these are matters between us, the Gu clan and the Zhuge family. You better not butt into it.”

Slap.

One of the Hou brothers slapped the attendant.

“How are you speaking to our Boss Ye!?”

High-ranked Spiritual Body level.

The attendant immediately shut his mouth, while Gu Tian’s face darkened.

He was wary about this Ye Zichen, whose identity was unknown... However, slapping his attendant’s face in front of him... Isn’t that just face-slapping him?

“Brother, you are not quite right when you’re doing this, right!!?”

“Then what do you think is right?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and smiled.

At this moment, Gu Tian also ran over, “Gu Le, why did you come?”

“Gu Tian!”

The two glared at each other as the smell of fire powder spread through the air.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Brothers of the Gu clan!

What's more, from the looks of it, they were rivals.

“I naturally came to find you to call you back to the clan...”

Gu Le instantly swept his gaze over Gu Tian and Ye Zichen, causing his dark expression to turn even more sullen...

“Gu Tian, shouldn’t you give me an explanation?”

“The heck are you, why should I explain it to you?”

Gu Tian rolled his eyes at Gu Le, then walked in front of Ye Zichen. When Gu Tian saw Zhuge Kongming, he even nodded and

smiled towards the little fellow.

“Brother Ye, I’m really sorry...”

Ye Zichen smiled helplessly, “What does that have to do with you? The one who failed to appreciate kindness is that grandson, I won’t drag you in.”

“Brat...”

Zoom.

Just as Gu Le, who was behind them, was about to speak, Third Hou and Fourth Hou had already appeared by his side...

Gu Le smiled coyly, then swallowed what he was about to say.

“From the looks of it, you aren’t the only retard in your clan,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Gu Tian in annoyance.

Gu Tian replied speechlessly, “Brother Ye, I’m stubborn, he’s a retard, we’re different.”

Ugh.

He actually spoke about his kin like that, it seems like their relationship is like oil and water.

Ye Zichen smiled, then nodded, “Then do you have to return with him?”

“Mhmm, I have to return,” Gu Tian nodded. “The succession to the junior family head is about to begin. As one of the main family, I have to return and see, when that happens, I’ll have to rely on Brother Ye helping me?”

“No problem,” after getting Ye Zichen’s confirmation, Gu Tian stopped worrying and walked to Gu Le’s side. “Let’s go, my cute elder clan brother.”

After the Gu family members left, Ye Zichen turned around with a wry smile, and smiled at Zhuge Kongming, who was playing with his fingers.

“Little fellow, you truly tricked your Zichen-ge, so, so much!”

Hearing that, Zhuge Kongming looked up and stuck out his tongue with a smile, “At the start, I didn’t know Zichen-ge was also someone from our place. Even if I told you, you won’t believe it...”

“Hehe, then why didn’t you say that earlier?” Ye Zichen swept his gaze over Zhuge Kongming meaningfully, then glanced at Blackie, “Blackie, you’re a ghost that I brought back personally...”

“Boss Ye, my heart is definitely with you,” Blackie saluted. Ye Zichen glanced over them with a meaningful smile, then walked into the supermarket.

“Zichen-ge...”

“Enough, I’m not blaming you,” Ye Zichen rubbed his head. “Since you are someone of the hidden families, and you have an infant engagement with Xia Keke, doesn’t that mean...”

“Mhmm, she is as well.”

Wow!

Ye Zichen sighed.

No wonder neither Xia Keke nor Zhuge Kongming found it weird that the Great Sage came.

I had thought that Xia Keke was merely insensitive...

It seems like I'm the insensitive person here.

The more he knew, the more Ye Zichen felt like his brain wasn't enough. He let out a long sigh, then pushed his feelings down in his heart, before brightening up, "Go and take out all of the spicy gluten in our shop."

“What?”

“Don’t mind so much. Hurry up!” Ye Zichen kicked Zhuge Kongming on the butt. Thus, both Zhuge Kongming and Blackie went to the storage to move spicy gluten packages.

In the Moon Palace.

Chang'e held her phone tightly. She had remained like that for a long time in order to receive the spicy gluten that Ye Zichen would send at the very first possible moment.

Buzz.

Her phone vibrated.

Spicy gluten!

Chang'e's eyes lit up and quickly received the red packet.

You received Sky Sovereign's red packet.

Shooooo.

A pile of spicy gluten instantly appeared in the Moon Palace. It had piled up to the size of a small mountain.

“Bunny, our good days have come.”

Seeing these, the Jade Rabbit also turned into her human form, then started to munch after grabbing a packet. Meanwhile, Chang'e couldn't help but gulp.

If it wasn't because she cared about her image, she might have done the same as the Jade Rabbit.

However, when she thought about courtesy, she still picked up her phone and replied.

“Thank you, Sky Sovereign.”

Dingodng.

Your intimacy level with Chang'e increased by 50. Current intimacy level 200.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level Trusted.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled when he saw Chang'e's reply.

"This is what Fairy deserves. If Fairy finishes all these spicy glutens, come find me. This sovereign said that from now on, fairy's spicy glutens will all be on this sovereign."

Chang'e's heart was moved when she saw the message.

Ding.

You received False Marriage String x1.

Current Possessor: Fairy Chang'e. Possessed: Only Idealism.

What the heck is a False Marriage String?

What's more, this marriage string had a lot of places that were different from before. He wasn't the possessor, and his name isn't on the possessed side, instead, it was his nickname.

Very strange.

When Ye Zichen looked back onto Fairy Chang'e's chat, he noticed that the color of their intimacy level had changed.

Normally, it was green, but his intimacy level with Chang'e had turned pink.

In order to ensure that it wasn't something wrong with his phone, he deliberately took a glance at his intimacy level with other people.

No change.

Damn, was he on the way to pick up a fairy?

If Houyi finds out...

That was a guy that dared to shoot down the suns, if he knows... Then wouldn't I get shot to death!

# Chapter 206 – My Family Worships Erlang Shen

---

Ye Zichen blanked out as he stared at the False Marriage String in his Treasure Chest.

No affability level.

It was just a string!

“Zichen-ge, why can you chat with people from the Heavenly Court? Are you an angel sent down by the Heavenly Court?” Zhuge Kongming popped up out of nowhere and freaked Ye Zichen out.

“No!”

“Then how can you chat with people from the Heavenly Court?”

“Your Zichen-ge is actually a deity!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled mysteriously. “Back then, your Zichen-ge was great deity that trembled the world in the Heavenly Court. However, I lost my wings during my battle with Chiyou. After becoming an angel with broken wings, I was no longer able to fly back to the Heavenly Court, that’s why I ended up in the mortal realm.”

“...” Zhuge Kongming looked at him blankly, then after a while, Zhuge Kongming took out a bottle of Mizone from the fridge and chucked it into Ye Zichen’s hands. “You lost your soul? Mizone it back! Zichen-ge, don’t bullshit!”

“You really don’t believe me, do you!?” With that, Ye Zichen licked his lips and crooked his finger. “Yiyuan!”

Zoom.

An azure pearl suddenly appeared in his hands.

Zhuge Kongming was stunned when he saw the pearl.

“Soul Pearl Yiyuan, the treasure the Yellow Emperor personally used during the great battle. Do you understand now? Your Zichen-ge is actually the Yellow Emperor!”

“Seriously...?”

Zhuge Kongming’s face was completely shocked.

He had heard about the Yellow Emperor’s story since he was very young, but from what he remembers, the Yellow Emperor did not work for the Heavenly Court.

Ye Zichen looked up proudly, put away Soul Pearl Yiyuan and stopped speaking.

A shitty brat is a shitty brat, he's so f\*cking easy to trick.

If laozi is truly the Yellow Emperor, then wouldn't I be beyond amazing!?

Ye Zichen felt really good after showing off, so he lit a cigarette for himself and crossed his legs, "Kongming, all of you hidden families seem to have a deity that you worship, right? Who does your family worship!?"

"Erlang Shen, Yang Jian!" Zhuge Kongming straightened his back.

There is logic behind the deities the hidden families worship. When they wanted to worship a deity, they first needed celestial light to fall.

That was to ensure that the deity welcomed their worship before they started to worship the deity.

The fact that the Zhuge family was able to worship Erlang Shen, Yang Jian, the war god of the Heavenly Court, was an incomparable honor for their family.

At the same time, the Zhuge family was indeed one of the top families amongst the hidden families.

“...”

However, in Ye Zichen's eyes, this incomparable honor was...

Why did they worship that retard?

The guy was so poor that he was about to eat his dog. He doesn't do things properly in the group either, he either flames or goes and feeds his dog...

And he's a gambling addict...

Yet, from Zhuge Kongming's look, the kid felt like it was an honorable thing.

However, he can't exactly tarnish his brother's perfect image. Since Zhuge Kongming was already so proud, Ye Zichen acted like he was shocked, "Wow, you guys worship Erlang Shen. He's a

great deity in the Heavenly Court, and a member of royalty as well!”

“Naturally,” Zhuge Kongming lifted his head really high.

Seeing his proud look, Ye Zichen felt a bit of hesitation. If he actually spoke about Erlang Shen’s real image, he really didn’t know of this child would be scarred for life, “Oh yeah, which deity does Xia Keke’s family worship?”

Zhuge Kongming’s proud face suddenly froze. He chuckled as he looked at Ye Zichen and scratched his head, “Zichen-ge, the floor of the supermarket is a bit dirty, I’m going to clean it up.”

“This is even cleaner than my face and you’re still saying it’s dirty?” Ye Zichen reached out to grab the back of Zhuge Kongming’s collar to yank him back. “Don’t try to change the topic. Tell older brother, just what does Xia Keke’s family do!”

No matter what, she was one of his girlfriends, he would have to meet their family in the future.

He needed to find out some information about the ‘enemy’, then after knowing which deity her family worships, he will focus on increasing the intimacy level with that deity.

When that happens, even if Xia Keke’s family looks down on him, he can bring out that deity to support him.

“Zichen-ge, Xia Keke’s family doesn’t worship anyone in the Heavenly Court,” Zhuge Kongming laughed idiotically.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Doesn’t worship anyone in the Heavenly Court.

Could they worship someone in the Underworld?

Zhuge Kongming instantly turned around to run when he saw that Ye Zichen let down his guard.

Zoom.

Third Hou and Fourth Hou instantly stopped him.

At this moment, Ye Zichen also chuckled, “Little fellow, should I call you naïve or dumb? Where can you run? The supermarket is only so big!”

“Zichen-ge, just don’t ask me. I can’t tell,” Zhuge Kongming frowned. He definitely couldn’t say anything about Xia Keke’s family.

If he really said it, that female tyrannosaur will beat him to death.

“Why can’t you say it? Does her family worship someone from the Underworld?”

“How is that possible!” Zhuge Kongming instantly put his hands on his waist upon hearing that. “The families that worship the Underworld are too low profiled, how can that sort of family have a marriage alliance with us, the Zhuge family?”

“Then...”

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and smiled. Then he tapped onto the table with his fingers and flipped to his chat with Erlang Shen on his WeChat.

“If you tell Zichen-ge, then I’ll let you chat with Erlang Shen!”

A struggling expression surfaced on Zhuge Kongming’s face when he heard that he could chat with Erlang Shen.

However, he still chose to refuse after some consideration.

Ye Zichen, who could not endure his curiosity, decided to stay in the supermarket and lured Zhuge Kongming for an entire afternoon, but he was still unable to hear anything about Xia Keke from Zhuge Kongming.

When Ye Zichen left the supermarket, it was already late at

night.

Just as he was about to catch a taxi on the side of the road, Ye Zichen's mind still pondered about who Xia Keke's family worshipped.

“Ye Zichen, what’s the charcoal in your pocket for!” Liu Qing had paid attention to the piece of charcoal for a long time, she really wanted to know what Ye Zichen wanted that piece of charcoal for!

However, he still hadn’t used it.

“I would have forgotten about it if you didn’t remind me!”

Only then did Ye Zichen remember the piece of charcoal. He quickly grabbed it out and bought ten Spring-Returning Pills from the Treasure Shop.

Dingdong.

The system has detected that the Immortal Heart of Pure Yang can be upgraded, would you like to upgrade it now?

Yes.

Shoo.

The charcoal in Ye Zichen's hand disappeared, while a notification popped up on the top of the screen.

Dingdong.

Immortal Heart of Pure Yang has been successfully upgraded.  
Current Level: 3.

Daily Experience: 4

Current Experience!

False Spiritual Body (28/100)

Required items to upgrade to Level 4: Unknown!

Ye Zichen couldn't help but nod when he saw the daily experience gain.

So it didn't increase by 1.

It increased exponentially. Then when the Immortal Heart is upgraded, he would be able to level up really quickly.

But right now...

It seems like his levelling speed was a bit slow.

Ye Zichen scratched his head and returned his phone to his pocket. However, Ye Zichen could feel that Liu Qing did not look at his phone. Instead, she was thinking with a frown on her face.

This wasn't like that girl, if he was doing anything before...

That girl loved to watch him.

Ye Zichen waved his hand in front of her eyes, then raised his eyebrows.

“What is it?”

“Oh, you're done,” Only then did Liu Qing return to her senses. However, she quickly frowned again. “Ye Zichen, since Keke is someone from that place, then can't she see me? But, then why isn't she speaking to me?”

# Chapter 207 – The Yellow Emperor’s Destined Girl

---

At a twenty-four hour restaurant outside the Polytechnic University.

Xia Keke held a mirror in her hands as she fixed her makeup. This was the first time that Ye Zichen had invited her out, and it was in this sort of hour...

Could it be that tonight, they were going to...

Thinking about that, Xia Keke became beyond shy. Although she liked Ye Zichen a lot, their relationship wasn’t at that level yet, right!?

In order to decrease the nervousness in her heart, she could only continuously fix her make-up so that she would look even more beautiful.

The door to the restaurant was pushed open.

Ye Zichen walked in with a smile. At the same time, Xia Keke's eyes lit up, then her face started to blush, while she dipped her head and started to fidget with the corner of her clothes.

“Keke!”

“Zichen...” At that moment, Xia Keke’s voice was like honey. She bit her lips, then asked with both nervousness and anticipation. “Why did you find me so late...”

“Oh, there’s something I want to talk to you about.”

“Say it!” Xia Keke replied in a very soft and trembling voice.

Using this chance, Ye Zichen yanked Liu Qing over and raised his eyebrows, “You can see her, right!?”

Her?

Xia Keke’s delicate face blanked out for a moment. Then, a sliver of panic flashed across her eyes before she asked curiously, “Who? Why can’t I see her?”

“Keke!” Liu Qing murmured.

Xia Keke let out a sigh, then put her make-up away with a smile, “This isn’t the place to talk about this, let’s speak outside.”

Beside the flowerbed outside the girl's dormitory in the Polytechnic University, Ye Zichen smoked softly, while the orange flame became extremely eye-catching in the dark night.

Xia Keke had pulled Liu Qing into her embrace, then chatted secretly for a long while.

"How did you know?" At that moment, Xia Keke walked over with a faint smile on her face.

"Zhuge Kongming told me."

Crack.

"That shitty brat!" Xia Keke clenched her fist, while heart-trembling rage surfaced on her face.

After a while, she let out a sigh and twitched her mouth, “Alright, you know it all, so be it. Since we’re the same, there really wasn’t anything to hide from you.”

“Then which deity does your family worship!?” Ye Zichen asked curiously.

Xia Keke suddenly rolled her eyes at him with a look of speechlessness.

“Who told you that my family worship deities? Did that shitty brat, Zhuge Kongming not tell you?”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but roll his eyes when he thought of how tightly Zhuge Kongming had sealed his mouth, “He wouldn’t say!”

“Hmm, so he does have a brain,” Xia Keke snorted with a smile. Then, her hair gradually turned gold, her eyes gradually turned gold as well, while faint traces of dragon scales slowly crawled up her arm. “Now you understand, right?”

Gulp.

Ye Zichen did not notice the dragon scale patterns on her arm, but she did see the gold hair and eyes.

“You-You’re a Super Saiyan!”

My god!

Earth truly f\*cking has Super Saiyans!

I swear to god, I only tricked the yellow hair to mess with him, f\*ck...

“Then did you come to Earth to collect the seven Dragon Balls?”

”Sai your ass!”

Xia Keke raised her hand and knocked Ye Zichen’s head, then she put her arm in front of his eyes. “Look carefully. Dragon scales! Our family is of the dragon race, an ancient divine beast. Our clan worships the [Four Sacred Beasts!](#)”

These are the Azure Dragon, the Vermillion Bird, the White Tiger and the Black Turtle.

...

Dragon race.

Aren't those what Nezha slays for fun?

"How's your clan's relationship with Nezha?"

"Nezha? You're talking about that evil dragon-slaying criminal!?" Xia Keke glared, when coupled with her 'Super Saiyan'-look, she appeared extremely menacing.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and took a step back. Zhuge Kongming was truly right when he said that she was a female tyrannosaur.

However, this Nezha truly is an expert of dragon-slaying. It seems like he has a grudge with Xia Keke's family too?

“He’s never slayed any of the descendants of the sacred beasts’ bloodline,” Xia Keke exited her Super Saiyan mode and shrugged.

“You nearly scared me to death,” Ye Zichen raised his hand and smacked her on the head.

Xia Keke twitched her mouth in a troubled manner, then yanked Liu Qing with a pout, “Liu Qing, Ye Zichen bullied me.”

“Who allowed you to bully our family’s Keke!” Liu Qing put her hands on her waist and stood in front of Xia Keke.

Seeing this, Ye Zichen sighed silently. This pair would definitely torture him to death in the future!

Xia Keke scratched her head, when a sudden light suddenly flashed across Xia Keke's eyes, "Liu Qing, I have some things that I want to say to Ye Zichen in private."

"Why does it have to be behind my back?"

"Be a good girl, we have plenty of time to talk in the future. I have some private matters that I want to talk to him with."

"Alright," Liu Qing pouted in a depressed manner, then flew back into the Dragon Eye within Ye Zichen's pocket.

Xia Keke squinted her eyes, "I'm very curious about how you got into contact with Liu Qing. I sought her out for a long time before, but I couldn't find her. I had thought that she had already gone to the Underworld to reincarnate."

“It was sort of a coincidence...”

With that, Ye Zichen explained to Xia Keke about how he go to know Liu Qing.

When he finished, Xia Keke looked at him in shock, “You can revive Liu Qing?”

“Yeah, I’ve nearly got everything needed...” Ye Zichen scratched his head.

Xia Keke immediately hugged him around his neck and smooched him, “You’re such a great person.”

Ye Zichen lifted his hand and touched his warm cheek. Zeze...

Good deeds really are rewarded!

Very soon, Ye Zichen licked his lips, then smiled, “I also have a question to ask you.”

“What question?” Xia Keke tilted her head in puzzlement.

“Why have you always been living in the Modern World....”

“In order to escape from the marriage!” Xia Keke rolled her eyes in annoyance. “You saw that shitty brat, Zhuge Kongming, right? My family is determined to marry me to him, and it was an engagement done when we were young... In order to resist, I ran away!”

“Impossible!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled. “if that

was purely it, then your family can grab you back whenever. You definitely have other purposes to remain here!"

"Oh? When did you become so smart?" Xia Keke looked at him. After a while, she sighed softly. "Fine, then I won't hide it from you, it does kind of give you a sense of danger as well..."

"What sense of danger!"

"I'm staying here in order to find The One," Xia Keke smiled, revealing cute dimples on her face. "My family did put me in an engagement with Zhuge Kongming, but that is just a façade to protect me."

"?"

Ye Zichen didn't understand.

“You’re so dumb,” Xia Keke raised her hand and knocked him on the shoulder, before leaning close to his ear. “Actually, I’m looking for the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation!”

“What?”

Ye Zichen was stunned.

Yellow Emperor.

He’s a geezer from who knows how many years back, why is she searching for his reincarnation!?

“My clan told me that I’m the reincarnation of Xia Liuli, a girl of the Yellow Emperor for three of his lives. They insist on me finding the Yellow Emperor, they said that it will cause the clan to be prosperous or something... How is it, do you feel a sense of danger? I’m telling you, I’m the Yellow Emperor’s destined one, hmpf!”

# Chapter 208 – Sleeping On The Floor Pitifully

---

Xia Liuli!

Yellow Emperor?

“What crappy Yellow Emperor? If he dares to fight with me over my woman, watch me beat him to death if he comes!” Ye Zichen pulled Xia Keke into his arms slightly bossily.

He didn’t care about it very much.

If the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation actually came... and... I can’t... beat him, then can’t I just call others over?

My bros aren't easy pickings.

"Hehe, that's why, be nicer to me from now on. If you always bully me, then I might really run away with the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation."

"You dare!?" Ye Zichen frowned.

Time slowly passed by as they bickered.

Ye Zichen held Xia Keke's hand and sent her off at the girl's dormitory. At that moment, she also wrapped her arms around his neck with a bit of reluctance to leave him.

Smooch.

“Bye bye,” Xia Keke walked towards the dormitory door after kissing him on the cheek.

Ye Zichen looked at her with a smile. However, not long later, the girl returned...

“The door’s locked,” Xia Keke’s face was extremely red.

At the same time, Ye Zichen’s heart also leaped up, while he spoke out something he had always wanted to say after going to university, but never actually said, “Then... let’s get a room?”

Zoom.

Tick, tick, tick.

The receptionist at the inn returned Ye Zichen and Xia Keke's ID cards with a smile, then handed a room card over to them, "Sir, Madam, here is your room card. I hope you enjoy your room!"

The two of them already felt extremely awkward, and the receptionist's words only made it even more awkward.

Ye Zichen held up the room card as he walked into the elevator with Xia Keke.

Isn't this giving him a chance!

There was only a room with a king-sized bed left!

A king-sized bed!

Along the way to the room, Xia Keke kept quiet with a blush, while Ye Zichen did the same.

Although he had girlfriends before, it truly was his first time getting a room with his girlfriend.

Beep.

The room opened!

It was as expected of a king-sized bed, the bed took up at least half of the room. Ye Zichen licked his lips and was unsure of what to say.

However, Xia Keke spoke up shyly first, “I’m going to take a shower!”

Then, Xia Keke ran off shyly. When Ye Zichen heard those divine like words...

Time will not wait!

When a chance was placed in front of you, you have to fight to grab it.

In less than three seconds, Ye Zichen made the wisest choice!

Strip!

Ye Zichen stripped off all his clothes in a few moments, then jumped onto the bed, and closed his eyes as he awaited the beauty's return.

Tata...

The sound of Xia Keke's slippers rang out in the room. Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then saw something huge in front of his eyes...

Gulp.

"Hehe, Zichen-gege, are you waiting for Keke?" Xia Keke said with a beyond cute voice as she blinked her bright eyes.

Ye Zichen continuously gulped, then moved his body a little, "I left some space for you!"

“Wow, Zichen-gege is great!” With that, Xia Keke jumped onto the bed.

Just as Ye Zichen’s heart cheered out loud.

Dong.

Xia Keke kicked him onto the floor, while she activated Super Saiyan mode once more.

Her tone also turned incomparably sinister.

“If you dare to come on... Hehe!”

Then she took a glance at Ye Zichen's little brother...

“Night.”

Pa.

The lights turned off.

Ye Zichen sat on the floor stunned. Not long later, a set of pillows and blanket was thrown onto his face.

F\*ck, the script shouldn't be like this.

How about I sneak on the bed in the middle of the night?

For some reason, Ye Zichen remembered Xia Keke's earlier gaze...

He felt a chill at his crotch!

I'll calm down and sleep on the floor.

...

"Ye-zi, there's no professional lessons in the afternoon, let's go and play games!"

The people from his dormitory hooked their arms around Ye Zichen's shoulder. Ever since Ye Zichen's mechanics improved, these people would often go and get him to carry them.

Ye Zichen pushed their hands away in annoyance, then got onto his bed as he muttered, "No, go yourselves."

He was extremely tired. During the previous night, he stayed in the same room with Xia Keke, so how was he supposed to fall asleep when such a drool-inducing goddess was just a meter away from him?

Then, in order to avoid the Kind Killer, Mu Jinglei causing trouble for him, he forced himself to go to lessons through the entire morning.

At that moment, his soul was about to leave his body.

Ye Zichen hugged his blanket after sending the others away...

Buzz!

The phone beside his bed rang. Ye Zichen looked at the caller ID...

They really aren't letting him off.

"Hey!" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then sat on the side of the bed as he lit up a cigarette and forced himself awake with a frown.  
"Gramps, what are you finding me for!"

At the same time, he received another call...

Huang Ming!

“Gramps, hurry up if there’s anything, I got another call here!”

The sounds of argument were very severe on Deng Cheng’s end. After quite a while, the gramps said in a hurry, “Zichen, I need your help here!”

“I truly submit, no matter what, you are a titan in the medical realm, why are you seeking me out whenever there’s some crappy matter!? What is it? Did your operation fail again?”

“Hurry over, it’s hard to explain everything over the phone.”

“Understood!”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and hung up the call. Then, he picked up Huang Ming's call.

“Huang...”

“Zichen-ge!” Huang Ming said with a tone that was essentially sobbing. “...”

Ye Zichen’s expression immediately tensed when he heard Huang Ming’s words. Then he linked it to Deng Cheng’s call earlier!

“I’ll be right there.”

Outside the operation room, Liu Qianqian's face was covered in blood, she lowered her head with fear in her eyes as she hid behind Deng Cheng.

The primary surgeon was changed to her because it wasn't a very complicated operation.

However, she failed the operation!

Due to her error, she directly caused the patient to lose all hints of her life.

The patient's family cried and shouted out in a worked up manner. Liu Qianqian didn't even dare to raise her head and meet their eyes.

Yet, in the midst of these relatives, there was a very logical young

man!

He was Huang Ming.

At this very moment, a man in a hurry appeared at the corner of the corridor to the operaetion room.

“What’s the situation!?”

Ye Zichen frowned, while Deng Cheng and Huang Ming essentially greeted him at the same time.

“Zichen-ge!”

“Little friend Zichen!”

“It seems like you guys sought me out for the same person!” Ye Zichen glanced at them. “Gramps, just what’s with you, how long as it been? You’re always failing! If it wasn’t for me helping you out, you...”

“Ahh...”

During this, one of the patient’s relative went up and grabbed Liu Qianqian’s hair.

Liu Qianqian screamed out, so Ye Zichen quickly went over to separate the two. Then, he only noticed the person behind him was Liu Qianqian as he looked abck.

“Why are you here?” Ye Zichen revealed a look of shock.

At the same time, Liu Qianqian also looked up timidly as she trembled... “The operation... was-was done... by... me...”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen sighed.

Meanwhile, a relative of the patient also cursed, “Who are you? Her boyfriend? I’m telling you, the failure of the operation is due to your hospital. I want compensation!”

The person that spoke up was a young man around Ye Zichen’s age. From the looks of his triangular eyes, it was clear that he wasn’t a good person.

“You are the patient’s family?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and looked at the young man.

“I’m her older brother!” The young man straightened his neck.

“Fine, then I’m telling you, the operation did not fail!” Ye Zichen protected Liu Qianqian behind him. “Failure will not happen with me here! Sit on the chair properly and wait for the patient in the room to walk out healthily!”

“Sterile coat!” Ye Zichen called out. Deng Cheng immediately got someone to get a sterile coat for him.

Hearing that, the young man’s expression immediately darkened as he snorted.

“Stop bullshitting with laozi. Laozi wants compensation!”

# Chapter 209 – Earning Reputation

---

“You guys think so as well?”

Ye Zichen ignored the triangular-eyed brat, and looked towards the middle-aged couple behind the young man.

“We-We...”

“Hehe, I truly feel depressed for the person inside the operation room.”

With that, Ye Zichen smiled apologetically towards Huang Ming and Deng Chen, then took out his chequebook to write a series of numbers on it before tearing the cheque out to throw into the family’s hands.

“This is your compensation. I’m not going to do this operation!”

A commotion among the people outside the operation room immediately exploded out when the cheque was thrown into the middle-aged woman’s hands.

The triangular-eyed young man tried his best to fight for it, and during so, he even pushed the middle-aged lady to the ground.

“Little friend Zichen,” Deng Cheng couldn’t help but speak up since he did not expect Ye Zichen to actually make such a choice.

“Just treat this as a medical accident. Liu Qianqian failed the operation and compensated the patient’s relatives. I’m out.”

With that, he pulled on Liu Qianqian’s hand and walked towards the exit.

“Zichen-ge,” Huang Ming suddenly stopped Ye Zichen with a pleading look in his eyes. “I sought you out to ask you to help!”

“What’s there to help for such a family?” Ye Zichen’s eyes revealed a chilling gaze. Seeing that, Huang Ming clenched his teeth and kicked the young man, who was still fighting for the cheuqe, onto the floor.

“Is there only money in your eyes!?” Huang Ming roared angrily. The young man, who was kicked, immediately stood up and threw a punch at Huang Ming.

“Hey... I’m not going to allow you to hit my little brother!” Ye Zichen grabbed the man’s fist. At that moment, the middle-aged man, who had been silent until now, walked over with the wrinkled cheque.

“Please save my daughter, we don’t want this money, I want to let my daughter alive.”

“F\*ck you,” The triangular-eyed young man immediately cursed when he heard that, and shouted as he pointed at the middle-aged man. “Old guy, you better hand the money over to me now, otherwise I’m going to take your life!”

The middle-aged man was clearly very afraid of his son, because he trembled when he heard the young man’s reply.

Yet, he still replied as his murky eyes contained disappointment and heartache that could not be hidden, “Son, the one lying inside is your little sister!”

“Tsk, she can be exchanged for several million if she dies. It’s worth it. I’m not a person without a conscience, I’ll find a good grave for her when she’s be buried...”

Ye Zichen frowned.

At the start, he thought this entire family was focused on money, but from the looks of it, it was only the young man that was a black sheep!

Ye Zichen raised his hand and grabbed the young man's arm.

Crack!

Ye Zichen dislocated the arm. Then he raised his foot to kick the young man's stomach, causing the young man to be pushed towards the wall.

"Take control of him. Give me the sterile coat, I'm going to save the person."

“I’ll go with you,” Liu Qianqian bit her lips. She caused the medical accident, so if it was possible to mend the issue, she wanted to help as well.

“Just stay here properly, my cute senior.”

Half an hour later...

The door to the operation room was pushed open as Ye Zichen walked out with a relaxed look from the inside. Then, he took off the sterile coat and chucked it to Deng Cheng.

“Success?” Deng Cheng raised his eyebrows.

Ye Zichen speechlessly rolled his eyes, “When have you ever seen me fail?”

Then, he spoke up once more, “Gramps, I’ve pretty much become a specialist doctor here, shouldn’t you give me a bit of salary?”

“If you want, then...” Deng Cheng immediately revealed the smile of a sly old fox. Seeing this smile, Ye Zichen’s heart raced...

“Never mind, I’ll just be a volunteer.”

“Zichen-ge, Xuefu...” Huang Ming’s expression was full of worry.

Ye Zichen chuckled softly, then patted his shoulders, “Saved, and I also cured her hidden illness while I was at it. What you wanted to buy that from me was for her, right?”

“Mhmm,” Huang Ming nodded seriously.

“Nice, I can tell that it’s true love, being in love is a good thing, Zichen-ge wishes you the best,” With a chuckle, Ye Zichen started to leave after patting his shoulder.

However, at that moment, the middle-aged woman, who had been pushed onto the floor spoke up, “Doctor, can you help my son attach his arm?”

“This sort of person...” To be honest, Ye Zichen didn’t want to, but he couldn’t help but sigh when he saw that woman’s begging look.

A parent’s heart was truly admirable.

When Ye Zichen walked to the young man's side, the young man continued to gaze at him fiercely.

"If you glare at me anymore, I'll break your leg," Ye Zichen truly looked down on this sort of people, thus he merely scared the grandson a bit, then pushed his arm.

"Ahh..."

Ye Zichen intentionally used a more painful method to attack the brat's arm. Then he snorted coldly before returning to Huang Ming's side and said softly, "This brat isn't a good person, take the girl's parents over to your place when you have time!"

"Understood!" Huang Ming nodded. He knew that the brat wasn't anything good, but he didn't expect the young man to be so scummy.

Ye Zichen was no longer sleepy after the situation earlier.

He took out his phone and eyed his WeChat as he stood in front of the flowerbed near the entrance of the hospital.

He did not expect there to be two system notifications on his screen.

Helping the injured, saving a life. You have gained 1 Reputation.

Doing good deeds, donating millions. You have gained 10 Reputation.

Ye Zichen didn't know how to react when he saw the system notifications.

Saving a life should be referring to the person within the operation room.

Donating millions!

Could Lin Hanben have done that? That brat truly donated quite a bit.

However, Ye Zichen was truly confused about what Reputation did.

When a new mode came out in games, there would be a guide for the new function. However, for him, the system didn't tell me about the new function at all.

All he knew was that he had 12 Reputation to his name.

And nothing else.

Just as Ye Zichen was pondering about the use of Reputation, a white-cloaked woman suddenly appeared beside him!

It was Liu Qianqian!

“What a little intern like you running around instead of staying in the hospital properly?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and returned his phone to his pocket. “Senior, it’s not that I’m scolding, but just intern when you’re an intern. What are you being the primary surgeon for? If we don’t have the ability, then don’t do that sort of thing. Say, it was fortunate that I came this time, if I didn’t, then wouldn’t you have been responsible? What’s more, that brat might even have extorted your dad out of his antique store.”

“I know my wrongs,” Liu Qianqian lowered her head deeply.

She had asked to be the primary surgeon this time. Since she would follow surgeons for their operations daily, she always felt that her skills was no worse than those doctors. However, she only realized that she was too naïve after trying it out.

She instantly panicked when blood spurted on her face.

The other doctors in the operation room immediately conducted emergency procedures, but...

“Thank you so much, if that patient really died, then I would regret it for my entire life.”

“Enough, it’s not the first time I’ve helped you, Lucy!” Ye Zichen

smiled meaningfully.

Liu Qianqian immediately blushed, “Can you stop mentioning about the Lucy thing? Alright, I am Lucy, didn’t I admit it last time?”

“Hmm!” Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile.

Liu Qianqian licked her lips, “Erm, can I treat you to...”

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone suddenly rang, so he took out his phone!

There was a new system notification.

# Chapter 210 – The Fiery Eyes Of Truth Are Back

---

Monthly Patent Earnings.

Cultivation Experience x250000

Gold ingot x340.

Reputation x15.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he saw the news. This should be ten percent of the total earnings from his game.

He looked at the date on his phone. Payment is received on the fifteenth!

Ye Zichen didn't care about the gold ingots and the Reputation so much... What he cared more about was that cultivation experience.

Dingdong.

Your official position in the Heavenly Court has been promoted.  
Current Celestial Official Level: 6

Ye Zichen quickly clicked on the Treasure Chest.

The Celestial Plate did show him as a Level 6 Celestial Official, but more importantly...

Cultivation experience: 924948

Can't I buy the Fiery Eyes of Truth soon!?

Liu Qianqian, who stood in front of him, stared idiotically at Ye Zichen, who was playing with his phone. She couldn't help but curse in her heart.

Why isn't he reacting when I offered to treat him to a meal!

No matter what, I am a school beauty of the Polytechnic University.

At that moment, Ye Zichen looked up.

Liu Qianqian also suppressed her wish to retort, “Erm, I...”

“Senior, you want to treat me to a meal, right? No need for the trouble, just go into the hospital for your internship, I still have other things to do, so I’ll be leaving.”

With that, Ye Zichen ran to the taxi parking spot near the hospital, got in a taxi and left.

“I...” Liu Qianqian looked at Ye Zichen, who had begun to disappear from her sight, in a stunned manner, and clenched her delicate fist. “Dad’s right, a forced deal isn’t good! Since you’re not going eat, I ain’t gonna treat you!”

Then, she turned angrily to leave. Yet, just as she turned around, she saw Deng Cheng look at her with a smile.

“Grandpa!” Liu Qianqian ran over happily.

Deng Cheng caressed her head with a warm smile, “You know Lil’ Ye?”

“He is my roommate’s boyfriend,” Liu Qianqian stuck out her tongue.

Hearing that, Deng Cheng was momentarily stunned, but didn’t react all that much, “What do you think about Lil’ Ye?”

...

“Zichen-ge, recently, you’ve been coming to the supermarket so frequently!”

Zhuge Kongming sat properly behind the counter in order to watch over the shop. Seeing him, Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then directly went down to the basement.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

After Ye Zichen sent out another wave of goods, Yue Lao asked after receiving all the red packets.

“Sky Sovereign, ten percent off?”

“Yes, ten percent off! Three hundred thousand cultivation experience, hurry up and send it over, I have urgent use!”

“No problem!”

Yue Lao was one of the rich in the Heavenly Court currently, so it was elementary for him to buy several hundred thousand cultivation experience of goods.

You received Yue Lao's red packet.

Cultivation experience x300000

“Sky Sovereign, if there isn’t anything else, then I’ll be going...”

“Go, go!”

Ye Zichen directly went to the Treasure Shop after quitting the chat.

Secret Scripture of the Fiery Eyes of Truth Level 1. Required cultivation experience: 1000000.

Exchange.

The current operation needs to deduct 1000000 cultivation experience, would you like to proceed?

Yes!

Dingdong.

You gained Secret Scripture of the Fiery Eyes of Truth Level 1 x1.

Withdraw.

Would you like to learn the Secret Scripture of the Fiery Eyes of Truth Level 1?

Yes.

Shooooo.

A familiar feeling reached his eyes. Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, while his eyes gradually turned gold...

“Too f\*cking amazing!” Ye Zichen laughed loudly in the basement storage.

Why did he go through so much trouble for so long?

It was just for this secret scripture!

Ye Zichen walked up from the basement joyously, and heard Zhuge Kongming make a call.

“Hey, I need to stock up here. Yes, yes, yes, these...”

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped Zhuge Kongming’s head then rolled his eyes, “You’re sticking your nose into everything.”

“Hehehe, I’m just planning ahead, okay? We need to stock up every time Zichen-ge goes down into the basement!”

Emotions arose in Ye Zichen’s heart as he looked at Zhuge Kongming.

Ye Zichen had thought about such a situation happening from the moment this little fellow had arrived.

As he expected, this child has gradually begun to know his secret.

“Don’t go around telling people about this, actually, don’t tell anyone, okay?” Ye Zichen grabbed his head.

Zhuge Kongming instantly nodded like a chick pecking grains, “I definitely won’t tell others, even if my parents ask, I...”

Zoom...

Before he finished, a black Bentley stopped in front of the supermarket entrance.

A beautiful lady, who looked to be around twenty something years old, wearing a green qipao and had her hair in a bun walked

out. Her walking posture made her seem very ladylike.

...

The moment Zhuge Kongming saw the woman, his expression tensed up.

He quickly bent down, then hid behind Ye Zichen and whispered, “Zichen-ge, if she asks whether I’m here or not, tell her that I’m not!”

Then, he ran up the stairs with an arched back.

However, a soft giggle sounded out in the room, “Kongming, you’ve played around for so long, it’s about time to go home, right?”

The door to the supermarket was clearly locked from the inside, but the woman acted like it was nothing and directly passed through it.

She still maintained the calm steps and the kind smile.

However, both Ye Zichen and Zhuge Kongming gulped silently.

“Is this person a ghost?”

This was too f\*cking miraculous, she actually passed over just like that.

At this moment, Zhuge Kongming also licked his lips with a coy smile and revealed a surprised smile, “Mom, I’ve missed you so

much.”

Mom!

Mom!?

Ye Zichen looked at the woman in front of him in shock. It made more sense to call her an older sister.

Mom?

Did everyone from their place maintain themselves so well?

“Since you miss me, then why didn’t you come to find mom

when you ran from your dad's place, and instead came here?" the woman didn't even move her mouth when she spoke, but the sound rang out from all over the supermarket.

"Hehe..." Zhuge Kongming laughed dumbly. The woman pinched his cheek, then walked in front of Ye Zichen.

"Hi Auntie," Ye Zichen quickly bowed.

"Our family's Kongming has truly troubled you," The woman smiled. "However, our family is rather special, it is trouble for you for him to keep staying here. I have come here to take him away!"

"I'm not leaving!" Zhuge Kongming frowned. "I don't want to go back, Dad always makes me learn that crappy stuff, I don't like it!"

"Is this something that you can decide, my cute son?" The

woman's voice sounded out from all over the place again. The tone was contained neither warmth nor anger, but it carried a feeling of undeniability.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but gulp once again.

Queen-like!

"Zichen-ge, I don't want to go back," Since he couldn't make progress with his mother, Zhuge Kongming could only place his hopes on Ye Zichen. "If I return, I definitely won't have any nice more days."

"Kongming, stop messing around," the woman raised her hand. Zhuge Kongming, who was hugging Ye Zichen closely flew backwards into the woman's arms as if he was affected by a huge suction force.

At the same time, a jade ornament also appeared from the woman's hand and was placed onto the cashier counter.

"Treat this as the payment for you taking care of my son recently. You can break this jade ornament in emergencies, I will hurry over to save you once!"

# Chapter 211 – Going Bungee Jumping

---

Inside the black Bentley.

Zhuge Kongming continuously stomped his feet in dissatisfaction, but the woman beside him acted as if she didn't hear anything, as she rested her eyes.

After a long time, Zhuge Kongming finally spoke up when he noticed that the woman had completely ignored him.

“Why are you bringing me back? I’m having a pretty good life here.”

“Good?” the woman’s eyes remained closed, and she did not open her mouth. “The Gu family’s kid had already came over and challenged you. I heard you didn’t even beat him, you truly lost face for us, the Zhuge family.”

“I... That’s because he had helpers! If it had been one on one, then I...”

“You what?” The woman opened her eyes meaningfully.

Zhuge Kongming instantly paused. If it was one on one, he still might not be able to beat Gu Le either.

“Heh, you truly lose face for us, the Zhuge family!” The woman snorted and revealed a solemnness in her eyes. “We, the Zhuge clan are the number one clan in the Modern Realm, you actually got bullied by a child of the failing Gu family. Go into closed cultivation for three months when we get back, then mom will take you to go challenge the Gu family!”

“That’s not so good, right?” Zhuge Kongming chuckled. “I don’t like violence. Also, can you not shut me into closed cultivation? Oh yeah! The girl that I had an infant engagement is here, I can’t leave, I have to chat her up!”

“Give up!” A light flashed across the woman’s eyes. “The Yellow Emperor has already appeared!”

Ye Zichen sat at the cashier counter as he looked at the jade ornament in his hand as well as the empty supermarket!

The little fellow left just like that.

Back then, I’d always wanted him to leave, but now that he has really left, I do miss him.

The saddest one was definitely Blackie, since no one was able to nurture his soul after Zhuge Kongming had left.

“Zhuge Kongming’s mom is truly young, but she looks pretty amazing. Is their clan a matriarchal one!?”

After a long time, Ye Zichen shook his head and lit a cigarette for himself, then picked up the jade ornament.

The jade ornament felt ice cold in his hand, while several lines seemed to spiral within.

The woman has said that this thing could protect his life!

Although I don’t know how strong that woman is, she definitely did not look weak.

“I gotta put it away, this is another life!”

...

Two days passed in the blink of an eye.

Under the Kind Killer's teachings, Ye Zichen acted like an obedient kid for two days, and never once missed a lesson.

When another lesson ended, Ye Zichen stretched lazily and stood up from his seat.

"Ye Zichen," Xia Keke hugged Su Yan's arm outside the classroom and waved towards him.

The news of Ye Zichen's affable relationship with the two school beauties was already widely known in Polytechnic University. Thus, Ye Zichen forced himself to walk over under everyone's

gazes of disdain.

“The two of you are deliberately making people hate me, right?” Ye Zichen rubbed Xia Keke’s head. When he saw her, he couldn’t help but think of the time when the two of them stayed in a hotel together.

Why did I choose to be worse than an animal that time...

“Hehe, this is your fortune alright? Other people want to have a girl in each arm, but don’t have the chance!” Xia Keke raised her delicate chin and replied blatantly.

Hearing that, Su Yan blushed and knocked Xia Keke’s head.

Although she had already accepted both of them liking Ye Zichen at the same time, she still felt shy when it was spoken about so

openly like that.

“You got hit now, right?” Ye Zichen snickered. At that moment, a hint of gold flashed across Xia Keke’s eyes.

Due to the Fiery Eyes of Truth, Ye Zichen could see a mirage of a gold dragon behind her, which was gazing at him.

Gulp.

Ye Zichen gulped.

I nearly forgot that this girl is a dragon.

“Heh!” Xia Keke frowned a little when she saw Ye Zichen’s look, then raised her head. “Oh yeah, Zhuge Kongming was taken away by his mom, right?”

“You know this as well?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and replied meaningfully. “You daughter-in-law that haven’t been married off yet, you truly care about the news of your in-laws!”

“You...”

“Enough, enough!” Su Yan couldn’t help but giggle when she saw the two argue.

At this moment, Sun Yige walked over from behind them shyly.

“Susu, Keke...”

“Class rep!”

Ye Zichen moved to the side a bit when he heard her. Sun Yige nodded towards him.

Xia Keke smiled, “We’re all here, let’s go.”

“Where to?” Ye Zichen looked at the girls in shock. He thought that these two girls came for him, but now it didn’t seem like the case.

“It isn’t good for Yige to always be like this. Susu and I are going to take her bungee jumping!” Xia Keke smiled, while Ye Zichen’s heart raced when he heard it.

Bungee jumping!

Are they just looking for excitement!?

Ye Zichen glanced at Sun Yige, he could tell that she was also very nervous, but she did not retort.

“Then you guys sought me out for?” Ye Zichen asked carefully. “I still have other things to do later...”

“Is that so!” Xia Keke smiled in suspicion. “It can’t be that Zichen-gege is scared, right? I thought Zichen-gege wasn’t scared of anything.”

“Stop trying to urge me on!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “I really have stuff to do!”

“Tsk...”

“Fine, fine, fine, isn’t it just bungee jumping? I’ll go with you!”

Xia Keke drove an A4, which could seat 4 people. Ye Zichen sat in the front seat as his heart raced.

He has only heard about bungee jumping from other people. If he was really made to jump down from such a high place...

Don’t the people that do it get scared?

Xia Keke, who was driving, kept on peeking at Ye Zichen’s face, which gradually turned nervous not long later, she couldn’t help but giggle.

“What are you laughing at, I was just thinking about other stuff!”

“Yes, yes, yes, my Zichen-gege can’t possibly be scared of bungee jumping! We might have to go parachuting later, Zichen-gege will come with us!”

“F\*ck this... Stop the car, laozi isn’t doing this anymore!”

Bingcheng Northern Extreme Park.

All the facilities here were rather exciting ones. Ye Zichen stood at the entrance and refused to walk in.

“Zichen, if you’re truly scared, then just wait for us down here,” Su Yan finally spoke up since she felt a bit reluctant to force him.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen stuck his chest out... “I’m scared? I just wanted to rest a bit, now that I am rested, let’s go!”

Then, he walked forward confidently. Su Yan and co. couldn’t help but shake their heads and giggle when they saw him act like that, then followed him.

As Ye Zichen listened to the screams, Ye Zichen breathed slowly and urged himself on silently in his heart.

Dong.

At that moment, a young man crashed into him.

Ye Zichen raised his head and glanced at the person with a frown. The young man quickly ran off after apologizing with a coy smile.

“What happened?” Su Yan and co. caught up to him. Ye Zichen shook his head, then resumed his ‘empty mode’ as the screams sounded out around him.

However, just as he, Xia Keke, Su Yan and Sun Yige walked towards the bungee jumping place, the young man who bumped into him suddenly stopped, listed his hand to cover his ear.

“Target confirmed!”

This is a reference to a widely known joke in China. Basically, the joke goes like this:

A man and a woman slept on a bed together. The woman drew a line in the middle of the bed and said to the man, “If you dare to cross this line tonight, then you’re an animal.”

The next morning, when the woman woke up, she noticed that

the man didn't cross the line, so she said to the man, "You're worse than an animal."

# Chapter 212 – The Yellow Emperor’s Best Friend

---

“The target has already gone up to the bungee jumping platform,” at the side of the artificial lake underneath the bungee jumping platform, a young man with binoculars reported the situation he is seeing into his Bluetooth earpiece.

“Leader, the target went on to the bungee jumping platform,” A man held a phone within a room of a clubhouse, then walked in front of a man sitting on the sofa after hearing the report.

“So what if he has already gone up? What’s the point of reporting that to me? Did we change the people up there with our people yet?”

“Yes!”

“Then just wait for the chance, the moment he jumps... Do you understand?”

“Understood!”

Ye Zichen looked down.

Ye Zichen stood on the bungee jumping platform as he peeked down.

The place underneath should be an artificial lake. The surface of the lake was calm, but Ye Zichen’s heart was filled with an array of emotions.

I’m about to jump?

“Go Zichen-gege go!”

Xia Keke cheered him on with her cute face, while Su Yan and Sun Yige held each other’s hand tightly.

Cheer my ass!”

“Sir, the safety check has been completed.”

The staff member took out a contract with a smile. It merely stated the potential risks and also the fact that they won’t take any responsibility unless it is their equipment was at fault.

“If you’re ready to jump, then please sign here.”

Ye Zichen looked over at where the girls were at. When Xia Keke felt his gaze, she quickly made a gesture indicating that she was cheering for him.

Ye Zichen sighed and glanced downwards.

It's purely my feelings.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth, then received the staff's file, then signed his name quickly.

“Are you sure it is safe?”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but ask right before he jumped.

“Of course there wouldn’t be any issues!” The staff answered with certainty.

“Then I’ll jump.”

With that, Ye Zichen closed his eyes, clenched his teeth, then stepped forward.

Zoom.

“Wow, Zichen-gege, you’re so cool!” Xia Keke cheered excitedly. Su Yan and Sun Yige also watched as Ye Zichen jump down.

At that very moment...

Bang.

A soft sound sounded out, while the rope suddenly snapped.

“Mission accomplished!”

The scout near the artificial lake passed the information into his Bluetooth earpiece.

When the messenger in the clubhouse passed the news along, the man on the sofa laughed softly, then picked up the wine glass on the table and looked forward.

“Tell them to leave!”

“Understood!”

The messenger relayed the orders into his phone, while the man on the sofa also pursed his lips with a smile, “Young Master Huo, it seems like it is so much simpler than we imagined.”

“In the end, you guys are much more efficient. Heh, the bodyguard I spent so much in hiring last time couldn’t even protect my safety,” Huo Da snorted coldly with a darkened expression.

The man on the sofa shrugged, “He’s just a useless person!”

“Yes, he’s useless,” Huo Da’s expression was like frost. At the same time, he said to the butler behind him, “Tell the hospital to

stop all treatment for that woman. Also, tell Yu that he's fired!"

Back at the bungee jumping platform.

"Ye Zichen!"

The moment the rope snapped, Su Yan and co. became extremely worried.

Many tourists within the park watched this happen, took out their phones to film, or just screamed.

At the moment that the rope snapped, Xia Keke's hair and eyes gradually turned gold.

Roar.

A dragon roar sounded out from all around, while a mirage of a golden dragon also raced towards Ye Zichen, who was falling.

Dong.

Ye Zichen fell into the water.

Even though Xia Keke had reacted at the very beginning, she was still just slightly slower...

“Dragon! Dragon!”

The tourists by the lake shouted out!

Creak.

Xia Keke, who was on the platform, clenched her fist, while she continuously surveyed the surroundings with her eyes flashing with a gold light...

However, she found that the staff there had already disappeared!

Bang.

She punched the metal plate on the side. When she took her hand off it, a huge dent had appeared on the metal plate.

Su Yan and Sun Yige, who were on the side, were already stunned into silence. They looked at Xia Keke blankly and did not say anything.

“Zichen-ge...”

Bang.

Xia Keke collapsed onto the floor and started to sob.

If it wasn't for her...

“History is always surprisingly familiar!”

A playful laugh suddenly rang out from midair. Not long later, the space seemed to have been forcefully ripped open, as a white-clothed man holding a feather fan walked out from within.

At that moment!

The world stopped!

Everyone stopped and maintained their previous posture as if time had stopped. Only Xia Keke watched as the man walked over.

The man seemed to walk very calmly, but his speed was very quick.

He arrived at Xia Keke's side after the flashes of a few

afterimages.

Then, he lifted Xia Keke's chin with his woman-like right hand as he shook his head with a smile, "Xia Liuli, did you do it on purpose?"

As he looked at Xia Keke's empty eyes, the man smiled and took a step back into midair, then looked down upon her, "Xia Liuli, this sovereign is asking you a question!"

"You... are someone from the Three Realms!" Xia Keke's eyes flashed with golden light. As she looked at everyone around her who had ceased to move, she suddenly stood up. "Why did someone from the Three Realms come here!"

In the Immortal Region of the Three Realms.

Suiren, who sat on a straw cushion, suddenly opened his eyes wide. He moved his fingers a few times, then revealed an expression of shock.

“Fuxi!”

With an afterimage, Suiren appeared in Fuxi's room.

“The Yellow Emperor...”

“I already know,” Fuxi continued to sat in front of a stone table as he massaged his eyes.

“What are you doing? Yellow Emperor's first tribulation has already come!”

“I know!” Fuxi continued to ignore what Suiren was saying and do his eye massage. Only when he fully massaged his eyes did he stand up from the stone table and stretched lazily. Then he picked up the watering pot on the table and muttered. “I nearly forgot to water the [Flame Emperor](#)’s flower If he found out, then I wouldn’t be able to avoid his blabbering.”

The Flame Emperor (炎帝) is the leader of the tribe that allied with the Yellow Emperor’s tribe in order to defeat Chiyou’s army. He is also called the Divine Farmer (神农氏). Chinese people often refer to themselves as 炎黃子孙, which means “descendants of the Flame Emperor and the Yellow Emperor”

Suiren was enraged by Fuxi’s lack of caring!

He immediately snatched the watering pot over and threw it angrily onto the ground.

“What exactly are you doing!?”

“...” Fuxi’s expression darkened as he stared speechlessly at

Suiren and raised his eyebrows. “Why are you always so fired up? Did you not notice who’s missing here?”

Only then did Suiren notice...

The Divine Farmer, Flame Emperor, was missing!

“Everything’s over by the time you react, Brother Flame Emperor had already left an hour ago.”

“Flame Emperor can help Yellow Emperor...”

“Father, you should think about how to explain to Brother Flame Emperor about this watering pot. This is his most beloved treasure!” Fuxi glanced at the broken white jade watering pot on the floor. “As for your worry, don’t forget, they were best friends back then!”

“Xia Liuli, you asked me why I came?” the water clothed man pursed his lips and smiled. “This is the ninth life. If I didn’t come, was I supposed to just stand idle and let Brother Yellow Emperor’s dream end up in nothingness?”

# Chapter 213 – Return

---

“Yellow Emperor!” Xia Keke glared at the frozen ripples on the lake’s surface...

“You said Zichen-gege is Yellow Emperor?”

“What? Did your memories not awaken yet?” The white clothed man squinted his eyes. “I called you Xia Liuli without any hesitation since I saw you showed the dragon mirage. I thought you remembered it all?”

“My clan told me about Xia Liuli, they said that Xia Liuli is...”

“The Sacred Dragon Bloodline is truly capable, it seems like I have to find a chance to visit the Four Sacred Beasts,” the white clothed man smiled warmly.

At the same time, Xia Keke's hair and eyes also gradually turned darker.

She did not fully accept the dragon soul within her body yet, so her dragon mirage had a time limit.

"You still didn't say who you are!" Xia Keke stood up from the floor.

The white clothed man raised his eyebrows and chuckled softly, "I... I am Flame Emperor! The Divine Farmer, Flame Emperor!"

Xia Keke was shocked!

Xia Keke never would have dreamed that she would actually see the Flame Emperor, and more importantly, that Ye Zichen was

actually the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor.

The Flame Emperor smiled when he saw Xia Keke's reaction, then gazed at the surface of the lake...

“Old friend, this life of yours is truly full of disasters!”

At that moment, three voices sounded out in the sky.

Three elders, each appearing over fifty years old, appeared on the surface of the lake right in front of the bungee jumping platform.

“Time pause! There’s an expert!” One of the elders wearing a long black robe and a hat like Black Impermanence frowned.

“Could it be the dragon roar just now?” Another elder, who seemed to have an air of an immortal around him, raised his white eyebrows. At the same time, he held his hands together in front of him and shouted out into the air. “I wonder which master has descended, can you please appear?”

“Can you not see this monarch?” the Flame Emperor, who was on the bungee jumping platform chuckled. Only at that moment did the three elders look over.

Instantly, the only one of the elders who wore casual clothing and appeared like a civilian geezer suddenly trembled.

“Lord-Lord Flame Emperor!”

“Hmm? Someone from the Immortal Region?” The Flame Emperor squinted his eyes and smiled, then signaled towards the three elders, causing them to flew over tremblingly.

“Greetings to Lord Flame Emperor,” the three elders bowed together.

Flame Emperor nodded calmly, “Surveillance Committee?”

“Yes!” The old man in casual clothes quickly bowed.

“I wonder what business does Lord Flame Emperor has in the Modern Realm!?” The one who spoke up was the geezer with an immortal air about him.

“You belong to the Heavenly Court?” Flame Emperor squinted his eyes, then smiled. “Even if your Three Pure Ones are here, they wouldn’t dare to speak to me like that. Were... you just interrogating me?”

“I wouldn’t dare!” The elder quickly lowered his head, while the black-faced elder also quickly did the same.

The Three Realms was not peaceful, and the three of them belong to the three factions in the Three Realms.

It was due to their distrust for one another that each faction sent one person. At the same time, they also acted as scouts to gather information for their own side.

The Flame Emperor’s visit was definitely an important manner, but from his tone..

If the very important person in front of them wanted to silence them for good...

“You guys have seen too much of something that you shouldn’t have seen!” Flame Emperor suddenly spoke up.

Dong.

The elder from the Heavenly Court and the one from the Underworld quickly kneeled, “Flame Emperor, please be merciful and not kill us. We won’t speak carelessly!”

“Hehe, I can’t trust you guys,” With that, the Flame Emperor opened his feathered fan and waved it towards the two elders. “Go!”

With that, he instantly wiped their memories, and caused the two elders to disappear from above the lake.

Only the elder from the Immortal Region remained. The elder

felt a bit proud in his heart.

Those two geezers would always pick on him verbally when there's nothing to do. Hehe, now they got taught a lesson by Lord Flame Emperor.

“Lord Flame Emperor, you have come here, could it be that a certain important person of our Immortal Region has reincarnated...”

At that very moment, the still lake surface started to move.

“Brother Yellow Emperor, you are always so capable of causing trouble,” Flame Emperor sighed.

The elder, who now stood on the bungee jumping platform, suddenly raised his eyebrows.

That is the Yellow Emperor!

Crack.

The sound of glass breaking suddenly sounded out, and a water pillar more than a meter wide suddenly appeared on the surface of the lake.

Ye Zichen laid on top of it with a pale expression, while his eyes were closed. Meanwhile, the azure Soul Pearl Yiyuan circled around him.

More importantly...

The still space broke.

Time started to run normally once again. The bystanders surrounding the lake had not yet recovered from the image of the dragon earlier, but then they saw another image.

“Soul Pearl Yiyuan, I didn’t think that Brother Yellow Emperor would find it in this life,” Flame Emperor shook his head with a soft smile.

“Zichen, what happened!” Su Yan and Sun Yige looked in front of them in shock when time started to run again. Not long later, the two of them saw Flame Emperor and the elder...

These two people weren’t there before.

“Su Yan!” Flame Emperor called out as he squinted his eyes.

Su Yan raised her eyebrows and looked at the man, who had appeared out of nowhere, “How do you know me?”

“Not awakened yet either,” Flame Emperor shook his head with a smile, then turned towards Xia Keke. “Xia Liuli, do you want to keep this memory? I owe you a favor from back then. I’ll give you a choice this time, and treat it as returning the favor!”

“I do!” Xia Keke immediately nodded.

“Alright, but remember, you can’t tell anyone about anything regarding Brother Yellow Emperor, including everyone belonging to the Sacred Beasts bloodlines!”

“Sure, I promise!”

“I’ll believe you!” With that, Flame Emperor reached towards the sky with his right hand. “Return...”

Zoom...

Time stopped once again.

The surrounding images continuously backtracked as if it was being played backwards, until time returned to the moment when Ye Zichen stood on the bungee jumping platform!

“Xia Liuli, I hope we can meet again soon!” Flame Emperor smiled towards Xia Keke, then looked at Su Yan once again. However, at the split second when he looked towards Sun Yige, he immediately frowned.

Crack.

Soft sounds of glass breaking sounded out again. Flame Emperor glanced at Sun Yige a few times before grabbing the elder beside him and leaving.

Pa.

Time resumed.

“The target has already gone up to the bungee jumping platform,” At the side of the artificial lake underneath the bungee jumping platform, a young man with binoculars reported the situation he is seeing into his Bluetooth earpiece.

At the same time, Ye Zichen had already put on the safety devices

for bungee jumping, but many images suddenly appeared in his mind...

It seems like I jumped earlier.

What happened? A delusion?

I'm thinking too much. I'm about to jump...

“Sir, the safety check has been completed.”

Everything happened like the scene in his head...

“Zichen-gege!” Xia Keke, who was standing beside him suddenly

spoke up.

Ye Zichen instantly ignored the images in his mind and answered speechlessly, “Stop hurrying me, isn’t it just bungee jumping? Watch, I’ll set an example for you guys.”

Ye Zichen reached over to receive the pen the staff handed over. However, Xia Keke suddenly ran over and slapped the contract the staff was holding out of his hand.

# Chapter 214 – Wei Chen

---

Xia Keke pushed the staff with a lot of force, causing the person to nearly get pushed into the artificial pool.

“Beauty, have you gone crazy...”

“Hmm?” Xia Keke glared at him as a gold light flashed across her eyes.

After the earlier scene, Xia Keke held no good impression towards the staff.

“It is very merciful of me not to push you down just now, or do you want to take a bath down there?”

Xia Keke’s eyes flashed with a bright golden light, causing the

staff to fall limp onto the floor, trembling.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also yanked Xia Keke, “Keke, are you alright?”

Why did Keke get angry just like that? Could it be that her period has come?

That truly was fast, she was fine just now.

“I’m fine! Hehe, Zichen-gege, let’s not bungee jump anymore,” Xia Keke glared fiercely at the staff, then turned around to hug Ye Zichen by the shoulder and used the most violent way to quickly take off all the equipment he had put on. “Bungee jumping is too dangerous, let’s go back.”

At the same time...

Near the artificial lake.

“What the hell? Why did I suddenly have a dream?” A young man around 1.7 meters with permed hair and an otaku face, said, while he wore a pair of black-framed glasses. “He clearly bungee jumped, fell into the water, but why the hell did a water pillar suddenly spit him back up? Also, where did the bystanders go?”

The permed hair young man scratched his face, then looked towards the bungee jumping platform, “Why is that person still standing there? Didn’t an accident happen to him..? F\*ck this, what the hell! Never mind, coming outside really is unsuitable for me, I’ll just go back to playing games.”

With that, the permed hair young man left as he shook his head.

“We’re not jumping anymore? Ye Zichen felt a huge sense of joy.

To be perfectly honest, he didn't want to jump, he was scared just looking at it. Isn't there something wrong with me if I jump despite that?

But then he thought about Xia Keke's personality. She might be using this chance to mock me, "Don't trick me, isn't this just bungee jumping? If you said jump, then let's jump."

"Not jumping, we're not jumping anymore," Xia Keke forcefully yanked Ye Zichen down. Su Yan and Sun Yige looked at this scene in confusion...

"Keke..."

"Yige, I feel like this is a personality issue, we have to think about it properly."

“Okay!”

Sun Yige had a rather timid personality and didn't really know how to refuse.

Back when Xia Keke suggested bungee jumping in the dormitory, she did not refuse. Now that Xia Keke said that they're not going to bungee jump, she didn't refuse her again either.

To be honest, she didn't really dare to jump either, so not jumping was actually better.

Thus, they left all together very quickly as if they were just touring the place.

“Leader, there's a situation! The target did not choose to bungee jump, they left Extreme Park!”

The young man, who had been watching Ye Zichen's actions reported. The man in the clubhouse room frowned, while Huo Da, who sat opposite him raised his eyebrows, "Mr. Wei, what happened?"

"Young Master Huo, there's a situation," The man with a scar on the corner of his eye raised his eyebrows. "The target left Extreme Park!"

"He..." Huo Da's expression darkened, then he laughed coldly. "Mr. Wei, I really don't know how we're supposed to cooperate in the future. Can people from your place not even deal with a normal person? Yu was whatever, but what did you promise me back then?"

"Is Young Master Huo doubting me?" The scar-faced man's expression also turned cold. "Although you're the employer, don't place yourself too highly. If it wasn't because your family was rich, do you think you can get into contact with us? You're just a mere business family!"

“Wei Chen, say it again if you dare...”

“Hmm?” Wei Chen raised his right eyebrow. At that moment, two men appeared behind Huo Da and the old butler and pressed down on their shoulders.

Huo Da’s expression darkened. A light flashed across the eyes of the butler standing behind him, “Mr. Wei, our family’s young master had no intention of doubting you. We understand that there are rules for people from your place to act. However, that brat is truly too cocky, our young master...”

“Heh, how is it any of my business whether you are in a hurry? Since it has failed this time, wait for the next chance. Of course, I am happy to see you guys deal with it yourself. Alright, I’m tired, let’s talk next time,” Wei Chen snorted in disdain, stood up from the sofa and left the room.

Bang.

Huo Da smashed the glass tea table in front of him into pieces angrily, then looked at the closed door with a dark expression.

“The f\*ck is he pretending for...”

“Young Master, we can’t afford to offend people from that place,” the butler walked over with a smile. Then he took out a bandage to wrap Huo Da’s hand up. “however, even if we, the Huo family, doesn’t rely on that place, we can still give that brat a fate worse than death...”

“Take charge of this. I have to give that brat a fate worse than death! Also, is there any news about Xiao Yumei?”

“The Xiao family’s third young mistress seems to be preparing to establish a medical company!”

“Heh, tell the person in charge to delay it, I want to make Xiao Yumei come and beg me!”

“Understood! Then about Mr. Wei...”

“Organize it as well!”

...

“F\*ck, what the hell! Isn’t he just a businessman? He really thinks that he’s something,” Wei Chen’s eyes were full of disdain. He glanced at his subordinate beside him. “Give me a piece of gum...”

At that moment...

Time suddenly came to a halt.

Wei Chen glanced at the subordinate who had stopped still in surprise, then saw a civilian old man appear in front of him as he looked up, alongside a white-robed man, who was holding a feathered fan.

“You guys...”

“Don’t be nervous, we bear no ill intentions. Come, I want to chat with you!” The white-robed man grabbed Wei Chen, then the halted time begun to run once more.

“Boss, your gum... Boss, where’s boss!?”

...

“Zichen-gege, I’ll just send you off to here,” Xia Keke waved towards Ye Zichen with a giggle, then turned the car around and slowly disappeared from his sites.

Ye Zichen stood underneath his dormitory and scratched his head. What was this? A tour...?

We f\*cking came back after going around Extreme Park once.

But what made him more speechless was his brain!

In the last two days, he could always have some weird dreams, which were connected with each other.

He seemed to be a general in the dreams, and appeared very handsome as he dressed himself in armor. There was always a woman standing beside him. It was a woman that was way too beautiful.

That woman never spoke, she merely looked at him, as if he was her everything. However, he was never able to see the woman's face!

Could I really be having delusions?

Buzz...

Just as Ye Zichen made these silent guesses, the phone in his pocket rang.

Ye Zichen took out the phone, then couldn't help but smile when he saw the caller ID.

Right when I wanted to find her!

# Chapter 215 – Flame Emperor’s Arrangement

---

Within a normal civilian home, which had plenty of vegetables glowing in the courtyard, three people sat by the eight-seated table underneath the pavilion covered in vines.

“Who are you guys? I’ll sue you guys for kidnapping!” Wei Chen sat stably on the chair, however, his ferocious expression seemed to say that he wanted to move, but couldn’t.

“Of course it’s to have a chat with you, but not now. Wait a moment, not everyone’s here yet!”

Flame Emperor smiled. At that moment, the old man in casual clothes walked over with a pot of tea and placed it onto the table.

“My lord, this is the Longjing from the Modern Realm, have a try...”

“Everyone in the Three Realms said that the Modern Realm was an abandoned place. Nobody expected that not only has the Modern Realm not become an abandoned land, and instead it has developed to this degree,” Flame Emperor pursed his lips and smiled, then raised his tea cup.

After taking a sip, he raised his eyebrows, “Not bad, it feels savory, while being a bit bitter. What is this?”

The elder showed an extremely happy expression when he heard the Flame Emperor’s praise, “The Modern Realm calls it tea!”

“Not bad, not bad!” Flame Emperor smiled, then took another sip, before closing his eyes and revealing an expression of enjoyment.

“If Flame Emperor likes it, then bring a little back?

Before the elder finished, Flame Emperor looked up with wry smile, “Did you forget about the rules? We cannot bring things from the Modern Realm to the Three Realms.”

“...”

Hearing that, the elder quickly lowered his head.

Taking things from the Modern Realm was definitely something forbidden. The elder was too intent on kissing ass, so he actually forgot about it.

“I’ll just use my chance here to drink a bit more,” Flame Emperor smiled, then picked the tea cup to take another sip.

At this moment, Wei Chen moved his nose and shouted, “Hurry up and dispel the Body-Freezing Technique on me. I’m thirsty too, so give me a cup as well.”

“Just how are you speaking to Flame Emperor!” the elder glared, causing a heart-shaking aura to radiate from his body.

The pupils of Wei Chen, who sat opposite him, contracted. He stared at that old man...

“You’re not someone from the Modern Realm, just who are you guys!”

“This is Flame Emperor from the Immortal Region of the Three Realms!”

“Flame... Emperor!”

Wei Chen glared at the Flame Emperor, who was enjoying the tea at his own pace, then his forehead and back became instantly covered in cold sweat!

“Lord Flame Emperor, this insignificant one...”

“Don’t worry,” Flame Emperor chuckled, then placed the tea cup onto the table. “I can tell that you’re not someone from the other two realms, you’re a Rogue Immortal as well, right?”

“Yes!”

Wei Chen nodded quickly. At that moment...

Creak.

The wooden door was pushed open with a loud creak, then Xia Keke walked in with a frown.

“You came!” Flame Emperor smiled slightly. A hint of confusion flashed across the eyes of the old man beside him as he looked at Xia Keke, who slowly walked towards them.

“Didn’t you tell me to come?” Xia Keke walked over with a pout. When she saw Wei Chen...

“Who is he!”

“Don’t be reckless when I say it,” Flame Emperor chuckled. “He is the person that set up the trap, which caused Brother Yellow

Emperor to get into danger..."

Bang.

Xia Keke released a suppressing aura, while the stone underneath her feet also started to crack...

"You!" Xia Keke grabbed Wei Chen by his collar, raised her fist and was about to punch..

"Xia Liuli!" Flame Emperor frowned.

Xia Keke released Wei Chen's collar in anger, "What exactly did you call me over for? Also, don't call me Xia Liuli, I'm called Xia Keke!"

“Several cycles of reincarnation has still been unable to turn your personality more mellow,” Flame Emperor shook his head with a soft laugh. “Of course there’s a reason I called you over!”

“The moment Brother Yellow Emperor’s tribulation starts, then even more tribulations will await him in the future. Also, I can’t be here to protect him, so I can only present him with a bit of good fortune!” He smiled softly, then lifted his hand to release the restraint on Wei Chen. “How about making him your lackey?”

Wei Chen’s expression instantly turned beyond weird. No matter what, he was a somewhat reputed person in the circles, and now Flame Emperor just told him to be a subordinate with just a few words.

And it was for this little girl!

Then again, this girl is truly mean. Although she doesn’t seem particularly strong, she definitely has the aura.

“Him? Xia Keke squinted his eyes with a snort. “He already did all that to Zichen-gege, and you think I’m going to accept him as a subordinate?”

“He didn’t do it on purpose, but his actions actually did help Brother Yellow Emperor.”

“?” Xia Keke revealed an expression of confusion.

Flame Emperor smiled, “Brother Yellow Emperor has been through the circle of reincarnation nine times. In every single life, the memories of his previous lives will be sealed. However, these memories are always unlocked when tribulations starts to occur. In other words, Brother Yellow Emperor has begun to gradually awaken.”

“Erm... Can I say something?” Wei Chen was shocked by what he

heard. “The Yellow Emperor you guys are talking about, is it... Ye Zichen!?”

“It is him!”

Xia Keke glared at him fiercely.

Hearing that, Wei Chen’s face instantly turned stark white!

Yellow Emperor!

I actually just planned to kill the Yellow Emperor!

Flame Emperor merely smiled, then turned towards Xia Keke,

“Because you are Xia Liuli’s reincarnation, and also because you have a rather high level of acceptance, I want to get you to become a protective charm for Brother Yellow Emperor. What do you think?”

“Of course I’m fine with it!” Xia Keke raised her chin.

Flame Emperor nodded with a smile, then looked towards Wei Chen, “What do you think!”

“I’ll do it...” Wei Chen nodded.

The fact that he was able to be a subordinate for one of the Yellow Emperor’s women was something that he would be able to brag about for a long time.

“As for you...” Flame Emperor looked towards the elder beside

him once again. “You saw Brother Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, you have to help him out often. At the same time, you can’t let the people from the Underworld or Heavenly Court know, understood?”

“Understood!” The elder quickly nodded.

“Then that’s that. I can only do so much. I’ll have to leave the rest to you all!” Flame Emperor stood up from the chair and bowed towards the three in front of him. The other two people aside from Xia Keke also quickly returned the bow. “It’s getting late, I’m going back to the Three Realms!”

“Lord Flame Emperor isn’t going to stay for a bit longer?” The elder asked. It wasn’t easy for someone of his level to meet someone like the Flame Emperor.

“No!” Flame Emperor nodded, then looked at the tea pot on the table with a slightly reluctant gaze. “Although the two big shots of the Heavenly Court and the Underworld don’t pay much attention to the Modern Realm, they do pay attention to my position. It

would be disadvantageous for Brother Yellow Emperor if they find out.”

With that, Flame Emperor looked towards Xia Keke’s position, “Oh yeah, what is the relationship of Brother Yellow Emperor with the girl beside Su Yan?”

“Are you talking about Yige?” Xia Keke blinked. “She is Zichen-gege’s classmate and our roommate.”

“Then their relationship is not of man and woman, right?”

“I don’t know about that,” Xia Keke twitched her mouth. “With that playboy, who knows if there’s anything going on between them. What is it? Why did you specifically ask about her?”

“It was just a random question,” Flame Emperor smiled, then

held his hands up towards the three people in the courtyard. “See you if fate allows it!”

“Wait!” At this moment, Xia Keke suddenly spoke up and shouted towards the Flame Emperor. “Can you tell me just what happened between Zichen-gege and me before?”

# Chapter 216 – Possession By The God Of Food

---

“You and him?” Flame Emperor turned around and glanced at Xia Keke with a smile. “The future you will know everything. It is too early now! Oh yeah, in the coming times, there might be some people that comes to look for Brother Yellow Emperor, I’ll leave everything to you.”

Then, he waved towards the three people in the courtyard, then leaped up and disappeared.

“What was that? Tsk...” Xia Keke stuck out her tongue in displeasure, then set her gaze upon Wei Chen. “Hey, Scar-face!”

“...” Wei Chen’s expression darkened, but still lowered his head and walked to her side.

“I’m telling you, don’t just think that you can follow me just because that guy said so. I remember everything about what you did against Zichen-gege!”

“If I knew that Ye Zichen was the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, I wouldn’t have dared to do anything, no matter what. What’s more, I didn’t even succeed!” Wei Chen said with a troubled expression.

Xia Keke’s eyes radiated with a gold light, then she proceeded to scan this Wei Chen, “Hmph, I don’t want to speak so much to you. Protect Zichen-gege properly from now on!”

“Understood, understood!”

When Wei Chen, who was bullied, returned to his base, the subordinate in the room quickly walked up to him with a happy expression.

“Boss, where did you run off to just now? An informant told us just now that the target appeared, should we make a move?”

Slap.

Wei Chen slapped the subordinate on the back of his head and cursed, “Make a move your ass. From today onwards, no one is allowed to threaten Ye Zichen in any way. We will continue to follow him in the dark, but... What we have to do is protect him, do you understand?”

“What?”

“What, what, what!? Shouldn’t you be f\*cking off now!?” Wei Chen kicked his subordinate on the butt, shooed everyone out of the room, then leaned limply on the sofa. “F\*ck what the hell!”

...

“You said you always get weird dreams lately?”

Huang Shengmei sat on the sofa with a cup of water, while Ye Zichen sat opposite her and nodded like an enquiring patient, “Yeah, the recent dreams can even link up. What’s more, sometimes, I would randomly have those kinds of dreams even in the day.”

Huang Shengmei put the cup onto the table, then used her hand to touch Ye Zichen’s forehead. “You’re probably under too much pressure recently, that’s why you have these thoughts. They say that what one thinks about during the day is what one dreams about during the night. You think about all sorts of stuff in the morning, so it is natural for you to dream of it during the night.”

“Are you sure?” Ye Zichen revealed a look of doubt. “The dream I have at night is very special...”

“How about this? Come with me to the hospital later, and let’s help you do a twenty-four hours EEG?”

“The sort of thing where you head and entire body is stuck with wires?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Mhmm,” Huang Shengmei nodded. “You told all that to me, and I’m not a therapist, so it’s hard for me to actually figure out what’s wrong.”

“...”

Ye Zichen shook his head speechlessly, “Then never mind, I’m scared of getting electrocuted.”

Ye Zichen ate a few grapes, then put his hands behind his head, “What did you come to find me for?”

“I pretty much would have forgotten if it wasn’t for you reminding me. I got promoted!” Huang Shengmei revealed a joyous look, then smiled. “I became an attending physician this morning...”

“Oh? Then congratulations,” Ye Zichen also raised his eyebrows. From the looks of it, Gramps Deng Cheng truly remembered what he said the other night and promoted Huang Shengmei.

However, he understood clearly that Huang Shengmei’s own ability was also part of the reason of her being promoted. All he did was merely get her an opportunity.

If she didn’t have the actual ability, it would be hard for Gramps Deng Cheng to promote her with his personality.

“Elder Deng also told me that quite a bit of it was due to you, so I

have to thank you.”

“Just who are we? Why are you being so courteous!”

Hearing Ye Zichen’s reply, Huang Shengmei blushed...

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Huang Shengmei increased by 10.  
Current affability level: 590.

Ye Zichen didn’t really care about how frequent Huang Shengmei’s affability level rose anymore.

At this moment, Huang Shengmei stood up from the sofa with a smile, “Sit here for a bit, or go and chat a bit with Lil’ Yi in his bedroom. I’ll go cook something nice for the two of you.”

“Never mind, it would be weird if that brat actually replies to me with his concentration when gaming. I’ll stay with you and be your aid or something.”

“You can cook?” Huang Shengmei revealed a suspicious look.

Ye Zichen merely smiled in reply.

When he was cooking before, he was pretty much just burning the house, but now...

Ye Zichen clicked on the Treasure Chest in his WeChat.

Withdraw the God of Food's Culinary Experience.

Learn.

Ye Zichen instantly felt like information was poured into him as a bunch of cooking knowledge suddenly appeared in his mind.

“Let me tell you just who is the God of the Kitchen!”

Ye Zichen walked confidently into the kitchen after absorbing the God of Food's Culinary Experience.

Huang Shengmei followed with a look of suspicion, but the moment she entered the kitchen, she saw Ye Zichen already starting to work.

Huang Shengmei didn't believe it at the start, but she was completely shocked later on.

Ignoring everything else, just Ye Zichen's chopping accuracy was at the level of a top class chef.

Originally, Huang Shengmei had wanted to take charge, but when she saw Ye Zichen, she decided to just silently stand at the entrance to the kitchen and watch his handsome appearance.

Men that are good at cooking were all handsome.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Huang Shengmei increased by 10.  
Current affability level 600.

Ye Zichen's hand shuddered a little when he received the notification...

“Ahh...”

A terrible scream sounded out in the kitchen.

At the dinner table later that day, Ye Zichen had a Band-Aid on his left index finger. Huang Shengmei's affability level increase came so suddenly that, it shocked him a little, resulting in him cutting his finger.

Despite that, he still made a perfect meal with four dishes and a soup, while also carving out a flower for the final dish.

“Sis, you made all this?”

Huang Yi, who just finished a game, walked out of the bedroom, then looked at Huang Shengmei in suspicion after he blanked out looking at the artistic dishes on the table.

“Why are you looking at me like that, was what I made before not good?” Huang Shengmei rolled her eyes. Then, when she saw Huang Yi smile coyly, she look at Ye Zichen with a bit of pity. “Your Zichen-ge made it. Your Zichen-ge even hurt his hand to make this meal.”

When he felt the loving gaze, Ye Zichen could only smile, “Stop blanking out and eat. Try your Zichen-ge’s ability.”

This meal made by Ye Zichen, who now had the God of Food’s level of cooking, was even more delicious than something made by

a Michelin-star chef. Even Huang Shengmei ate so much that she burped without a care for her image.

Ye Zichen looked at the siblings that endlessly praised his food, then took out the fruit plate, which he had prepared beforehand.

“No more, I really can’t eat anymore.”

Huang Yi sat on the sofa with his hands on his stomach. Even though he wanted to eat a bit when he saw that delicate fruit plate, there was a limit to the storage of his stomach, which was not out of RAM...

Huang Yi burped again, then leaned back on the sofa with his eyebrows raised.

“Zichen-ge, is that team still hiring?”

# Chapter 217 – Human? Ghost?

---

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen wore a baseball cap and stood outside Jing Wan's base after intentionally pushing down his the cap.

To be honest.

It was extremely awkward.

The base was right opposite his home. So, in order to prevent Ye Rong noticing him, Ye Zichen ended up acting like a thief.

“Jing Wan-jie, someone’s pressing the doorbell, I’m going to open the gate,” Di Xinpeng took a look at Jing Wan, who was frowning heavily on the sofa.

Jing Wan looked up and glanced outside the mansion gate.

The guy's wearing a hat.

Thinking back to what happened when she streamed a while earlier, she quickly stopped Di Xinpeng, “Don’t go.”

“What happened?” Di Xinpeng scratched his head.

Jing Wan bit her lips, “Never mind, go and open the gate. I’m going upstairs. If that person is looking for me, then tell him that I’m not here.”

With that, she ran up to the second floor with his slippers. Meanwhile, Di Xinpeng scratched his head in confusion.

What happened?

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

The more in a hurry Ye Zichen felt, the more it seemed like the gate won't be opened.

Ye Zichen had pressed the doorbell for a long time, but nobody came out of the mansion.

“Big Brother Ye, is it because no one’s here?” Huang Yi couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows as he stood outside the gate and notice that the base did not react at all.

Since nobody came to open the gate for so long, even Ye Zichen started to suspect that no one was inside.

Creak.

The door to the mansion opened, then Di Xinpeng wandered out.

“Who is it?”

“Tell me who, hurry up and open the gate,” Ye Zichen took off his hat, then quickly put it on again.

Di Xinpeng's naïve face was covered with a hint of forcefulness when he saw Ye Zichen.

“Ye Zichen, why did you come?”

“Stop bullshitting, hurry up and open the door,” Ye Zichen continuously urged. Di Xinpeng hesitated for a while, then opened the door outside.

Ye Zichen only took off his hat after entering the mansion, then he sat down on the sofa and kept on fanning himself.

“Where’s Jing Wan?”

“Not here!” Di Xinpeng did not treat him nicely.

This little fellow really held a grudge. Back then, Ye Zichen destroyed him, and stole his goddess...

He got mad just by seeing Ye Zichen!

“I practiced League a lot recently, do you dare to solo again? This time, I definitely won’t lose to you.”

Ye Zichen took a glance at the little fellow’s forceful expression and shrugged without care.

Even if he practiced for his entire life, he wouldn’t be able to beat me.

In order to not hurt this child's self-esteem, Ye Zichen indicated towards Huang Yi, who was looking around the mansion, "Go and play against him."

"Him?" Only then did Di Xinpeng put his attention onto Huang Yi. He was too intent on arguing with Ye Zichen that he didn't notice Huang Yi.

"Is he capable?" Di Xinpeng smiled in disdain. No matter what, I'm a Master on the China Telecom #1 server...

"Don't be too proud, there are plenty of people better than you," Ye Zichen stood up from the solo, then patted Huang Yi's shoulder. "This brat wants to solo you, wreck him."

"Is that a good decision?"

The people that can be in this mansion should be the team members, I didn't even join yet, and now I have to solo a teammate.

If I win, then he loses face.

If I lose, then I lose face.

“Don’t think so much, just solo him. Beat him until he submits!”

“No problem!”

Since the Big Brother Ye he trusted most said so, then he decided to just go with it!

At this moment, Di Xinpeng also hooked his fingers at Huang Yi before the two went off to solo.

When Jing Wan, who was on the second floor, heard the noise downstairs, she noticed that it didn't seem to be the person she was worried about it being.

When she took a peek down from the stairs, her eyes lit up when she saw that it was Ye Zichen, causing her to quickly run down.

“Ye Zichen!”

“Hmm? Didn’t that brat, Di Xinpeng, say that you aren’t here?” Since Ye Zichen had gotten ready to leave, he couldn’t help but be shocked when he saw Jing Wan come over. “This shitty brat, he actually dared to lie to me...”

“No, I told him to say that,” Jing Wan smiled wryly.

When she saw Ye Zichen’s appearance at the gate, she thought that it was the fanatic from when she streamed.

Not long later, Di Xinpeng’s angry roar was heard. Only then, did Jing Wan look back and notice Huang Yi.

“This is?”

“Him? He’s the top laner I got for you,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled. “Didn’t I take Xia Keke away? I was worried that you are lacking people here, so I got one for you. I’m telling you, he is so much better than Xia Keke.”

“About this...” Jing Wan instantly revealed a joyous expression,

then looked down and bit her lips. “I really don’t know how I should thank you.”

She had been very worried after the misunderstanding about Di Xinpeng.

She never expected Ye Zichen to send a top laner over to her so quickly after last time.

“What’s there to thank me for? I also hope that you can establish a super strong team and bring the world championship trophy back to our country.”

“If that’s really the case, then I feel like you can’t be missing from the team,” Jing Wan’s beautiful eyes sparkled as she smiled. “If you were here, then I have completely confidence to bring the trophy back.”

“Can you stop getting ideas about me?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled wryly.

This girl was truly determined.

“Who told you to be so amazing!” Jing Wan smiled. At this moment, a suspicious-looking man suddenly appeared at the gate to the base.

Jing Wan’s expression immediately changed when she saw the man.

Ye Zichen looked over according to her gaze...

The man dressed up in a similar manner to him earlier... like a thief!

What's more, that sneaky look also caused people to become suspicious of him, so Ye Zichen looked at him a few more times.

Dingdong.

The doorbell rang.

Jing Wan's face turned grey like a frightened doe, as she fidgeted with the corner of her clothes and bit her lips, "Came, he really came..."

"What came? The hell are you talking about? Someone's pressing the doorbell, are you not going to open the door?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then rolled his eyes at Jing Wan, who stood dumbly, frozen in place.

She truly lacks hospitality, and now I, the guest, have to go and open the door.

Ye Zichen twisted his neck, then walked towards the mansion door. At this moment, Jing Wan also came back to her senses. When she wanted to stop Ye Zichen, it was already too late.

“What are you doing?”

Ye Zichen stood at the mansion gate, and looked at the young man standing outside the metal gate, who wore black-framed glasses and was about Ye Zichen’s height.

The guy had a pure otaku face, and when Ye Zichen thought back to what Jing Wan muttered just mere moments ago...

It can't be a crazed fan of hers, right?

The glasses young man outside the gate was also shocked when he saw Ye Zichen.

He raised his hand to push up his glasses, then gulped.

"Did... you go bungee jumping at Extreme Park a few hours ago?"

It was Ye Zichen's turn to be shocked.

He glanced at the young man and raised his eyebrows, "How'd you know? You can't be my fan that's tailing me, right!?"

“It really is you...”

The young man outside the gate revealed a shocked expression, then he took a few steps back as if he saw a ghost.

“Didn’t you-you-you-you die? Are you a human or a ghost!?”

## Chapter 218 – Died

---

The glasses-wearing young man spoke like it was the truth, and his body language along with his shimmering gaze emphasized that even more.

“You are f\*cking insane,” Ye Zichen cursed loudly.

Is this brat retarded? He immediately told me that I died before. Did his brain get fried or something?

He was lucky if he didn’t get beaten to death since no one else heard it.

“Who’s insane? I clearly saw that when you went bungee jumping in Extreme Park, the rope snapped, and you fell into the lake!” the young man in glasses cursed at him.

“...”

Ye Zichen was stunned upon hearing that.

He looked at the glasses-wearing young man in surprise.

When the young man saw that Ye Zichen did not reply immediately, he freaked out so much that his entire face turned stark white, “You really are a ghost... Wait, aren’t ghosts scared of like? Oh yeah, cross, my cross.”

With that, the young man in glasses actually took out a cross that was several centimeters long and prodded Ye Zichen with it repeatedly.

“You escaped from Azure Dragon Mental Institution, right?” Ye

Yi Chen revealed a speechless expression as he looked at the young man outside with his hands on his hips.

After a long time, when the young man saw that the silver cross didn't do any actual damage to Ye Yi Chen, he couldn't help but yell, "You really aren't a ghost!"

"How could Laozi be a ghost? Have you seen any ghost with a face as nourished as mine?" Ye Yi Chen rolled his eyes.

This caused the young man to eye Ye Yi Chen vigilantly a few times.

He really doesn't seem like a ghost.

"Sorry, I don't know what happened to me recently, I always have some weird dreams. When I go outside, I would see a lot of

weird things, so..." The glasses-wearing young man stuttered out an explanation.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then looked at the young man, "What did you come here for..."

Buzz!

When the phone in his pocket rang, Ye Zichen looked at the caller ID, then subconsciously looked towards the window of the mansion.

Jing Wan stood by the window and indicated for him to pick up the call before placing the phone by her ear...

"Can you make the person outside leave?

“What did he do?”

“He...” Jing Wan told him about what happened during her stream. After hearing that, Ye Zichen made a hand gesture that told her not to worry before putting his phone back into his pocket.

“Brat, what did you come here for?”

“I’m looking for Jing Wan!”

The glasses young man’s face instantly lit up with excitement. During Jing Wan’s stream, she had accidentally revealed her location...

Thus, he used his otaku computing skills to find out the exact place!

Due to his excitement, he immediately hurried over.

“Jing Wan?” Ye Zichen revealed a confused look. “Who’s Jing Wan? This is my home, you got the wrong place!”

“Impossible, Jing Wan is here!” The glasses young man said determinedly. He had checked the IP and it was this place.

“Little bro, don’t act crazy with me,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. “I didn’t even want to care that you said such unlucky things to me earlier. If you act crazy with me, I’m going to hit you!”

“Jing Wan is right here! Don’t try to trick me, Jing Wan called you just now, right? What’s your relationship with Jing Wan?

Goddess is actually living with a man..." The glasses young man's face was bright red. If a look could kill, Ye Zichen would have died several times already.

"What? I said Jing Wan isn't here. This is my home, can you stop messing around? Otherwise, I'm going to call the police!"

"How are you supposed to prove that!?"

"... Madman."

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. At this moment, a white poodle walked by the gate of the base as he lead a bunch of subordinates, as if it was a supervisor surveying the place.

The moment it saw Ye Zichen, the poodle immediately ran over with its tongue out.

When he saw Lil' White, Ye Zichen's eyes also lit up...

“Lil' White, bite him!”

...

Huang Yi and Di Xinpeng's solo competition ended with a draw. Since she was able to gain another strong player, Jing Wan smiled so much that her eyes turned into crescent moons.

“Welcome to our large family.”

After getting the contract signed, Jing Wan reached out her hand

with a smile. Huang Yi stood at the side blankly and was hesitant in reaching his hand over.

Why?

As the number one gaming streamer, Jing Wan had a huge reputation and fanbase.

Huang Yi was one of her fans.

It wasn't hard to understand the emotions in his heart when he found out that the owner of the team was actually the idol, whose stream he had watched for several years.

Seeing that Jing Wan seemed in a rather awkward situation with her hand held out, Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly, "What are you blanking out for? Isn't it just a handshake...?"

Then, Ye Zichen reached his hand over without thinking, “This kid’s shy, so I’ll just shake hands for him.”

Jing Wan smiled, then looked at Ye Zichen, who had a bright smile on his face, with a complicated gaze.

This man had criticized my dreams over and over again.

Yet, he helped me realize it over and over again.

A weird emotion that she never felt before began to grow as if she took some catalyst.

After a long while, when she finally suppressed the strange feelings in her heart, she laughed using a normal tone, “Are you sure you don’t want a place in the team? With you here, the championship is within our sights.”

“Never mind, you should clearly know that my ambition is not here,” Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile, then looked at the blushing Huang Yi. “I’ll leave my little bro with you, you have to treat him well.”

“Of course!” Jing Wan replied without any hesitation.

Ye Zichen nodded, then said a few more words to Huang Yi before looking at the team, “Since you now have enough people for your team, I, who’s unneeded, will stop disturbing your team’s training. Also, I have something to say to you...”

Ye Zichen glanced at Jing Wan, “Be more careful when you stream from now on. Or you should just hire a few bodyguards, I feel like that brat might come by again.”

“I know, that was indeed my negligence. I’ll apologize to my fans the next time I stream.”

“Then... That’s it!”

After saying farewell, Ye Zichen left the mansion. The moment he walked out of the gate, he saw Lil’ White waiting for him there.

Despite Lil’ White looking like a poodle, when you talked about ferocity...

This little guy was very ferocious.

Just moments earlier, this little guy chased the glasses-wearing young man for several blocks.

“Boss!”

However, the moment it saw Ye Zichen, Lil’ White ran over with a flattering look.

Yet, the moment Lil’ White neared him, a hint of solemnity appeared in the little dog’s eyes as he scanned Ye Zichen’s body with a flash of green light.

“F\*ck, watch it what you’re doing when you’re outside,” Ye Zichen hurriedly looked around. If this was f\*cking seen by outsiders, both he and Lil’ White would be captured for experiments.

“Boss...”

“?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in confusion. The distressed tone did not sound like the Lil' White he knew.

Lil' White looked at him with a somber expression, and this stare caused Ye Zichen to feel very uncomfortable.

“What? What do you want to say?”

After a long while, Lil' White finally looked up and stared straight into Ye Zichen's eyes.

“You... died before.”

# Chapter 219 – Chang'e's Affability Level

---

Dong.

Ye Zichen kicked Lil' White to the side. Why did this little guy have to say such unlucky things to him as well?

“Boss, you hit me again,” Lil’ White looked at Ye Zichen with pitiful puppy eyes.

“Don’t you know why I hit you?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “I’m standing here alive and well, and you told me that I died! Then are you talking to a ghost?”

“I didn’t lie to you!” Lil’ White wagged its tail in front of Ye Zichen. “The aura of death is very dense around you. That’s a situation that would only happen if you died before. I also used my scanning eyes, and saw that you did die several hours earlier.”

“You still dare to continue...” Ye Zichen acted like he was going to hit Lil’ White again, causing the latter to immediately run away.

...

Late at night.

When the bell for midnight sounded out, Ye Zichen laid on the bed, while gazing at the ceiling, without any reaction.

Did I really die before?

Lil’ White had said it in such confidence, and that crazy fan of Jing Wan also said that he saw me die.

What's more, what I thought were just a delusion...

I died in it too.

Ye Zichen raised his hand in confusion.

My hand is still warm, and I still cast a shadow when the sunlight shines on me. How did I die before?

“What are you doing? You seem to be in a weird mood,” Liu Qing floated out of the Dragon Eye.

Ye Zichen turned his head with a smile and looked at her in the eyes, “Some strange things happened today...”

Thus, Ye Zichen told Liu Qing all about what Lil' White and the glasses-wearing young man as well as his daydream.

Liu Qing blinked after hearing that, then after thinking about it for a moment, she replied, “Then you’re alive right now, right?”

“Of course...” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance.

Hearing that, Liu Qing shrugged, “Then that’s good, since you’re alive, why think about it so much? If you can’t think it through, then don’t think about it at all, it’s just adding to your frustration.”

They say that no one is wise in their own affairs.

Liu Qing's words immediately cleared Ye Zichen's mind.

That's true, why think about so much? No matter what, I'm alive right now.

"It seems like this lady was very successful in enlightening you. Then let me borrow your phone."

"..." Ye Zichen's face darkened.

Seeing that, Liu Qing pouted, "Hurry up, I have to read the latest chapter."

"You are truly traversing far on the path of a fujoshi."

“I’m fine with it!”

...

“Ye-zi, you’ve come regularly to school, it isn’t like you!” Zhang Rui hook his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder as they walked towards their dormitory.

“How could I not? The Kind Killer gave me the ultimatum, you should know the results awaiting me if I don’t go to class...”

Zhang Rui couldn’t help but shrink his neck when the Kind Killer was mentioned, “RIP!”

Zhang Rui didn’t have anything much to say about it. The Kind

Killer's prowess was something that the entire faculty and even the entirety of Polytechnic University had witnessed.

Back at the dorm, their three other roommates were already ready.

"Ye-zi, Lil' Rui, hurry up and login. The experienced guy is about to start."

Kang Peng waved towards the two who had just walked in. Ye Zichen nodded, then turned on his computer. At that moment, the phone on the computer table rang.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen picked up the phone, then saw that Chang'e had sent a message to him.

“Start first, I’ll come later!”

With that, Ye Zichen ran over to his bed while his roommates complained.

Chang'e's pink chat seemed clearly different to everyone else's. Ye Zichen took a look at the message...

Chang'e: Sky Sovereign, are you here?

Chang'e: We finished all the spicy gluten that you sent last time.

...

Ye Zichen was shocked.

That was several hundred yuan worth of spicy gluten! Just how long has it been? She finished it all already?

“Fairy, you ate the spicy glutens a tad bit too quickly, right?”

Even though the other person was Chang'e, Ye Zichen truly couldn't help but retort.

Within the Moon Palace, Chang'e, who was holding the phone,

blushed when she saw the message Ye Zichen sent her.

What can I do? I just like to eat it!.

“Actually, there’s still a bit more, I...”

Chang’e replied hesitantly.

Ye Zichen sighed helplessly.

“Alright, this sovereign will send some to you later.”

“Thank you, Sky Sovereign.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Chang'e increased by 100. Current intimacy level: 300.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Chang'e increased by 15. Current affability level: 15.

F\*ck.

Affability level appeared!

Logically speaking, affability level...

This Chang'e can't have gotten a crush on me, right?

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide, while his heart beat loudly. He thought about it, then quickly sought Yue Lao out.

“Yue Lao!”

Yue Lao, who was in the midst of playing Landlord in the Heavenly Court, picked up his phone, then replied after seeing the message.

“Sky Sovereign!”

“Do you have time? I want to ask you something.”

“Erm...”

Yue Lao glanced at Old Lord Taishang and Erlang Shen.

“Yue Lao, it’s your turn. Hurry up, do you want to run now that you won?” Old Lord Taishang glared at him in anger. This Old Lord really didn’t get it.

He had played Landlord so many times, but he has barely won any of the rounds.

“Sky Sovereign, it’s inconvenient for me.”

Then, Yue Lao patted the cards on his table...

“I see, you don’t want to stock up anymore, right!?”

Did he really think that I was asking him just now?

The moment the products were mentioned, Yue Lao instantly gave up. He slightly comforted Old Lord Taishang, then replied.

“Sky Sovereign, please ask.”

“I want to know how a False Marriage String appears, I’ve recently been connected to one.”

“False Marriage String,” Yue Lao touched his beard. “This False Marriage String is actually similar to the Marriage String, both of them are links of a couple in love. However, a False Marriage String is different from a Marriage String in that the relationship is not firm.”

“Normally speaking, a False Marriage String appears when one side has something that the other side likes, causing the other side to be moved. However, since there is no actual love, a False Marriage String would be produced.”

Ye Zichen nodded after seeing Yue Lao’s explanation, then asked.

“Then what’s with the affability level on a False Marriage String!?”

“When the affability level on a False Marriage String rises to a certain level, it will turn into a real Marriage String.”

...

This is serious.

Ye Zichen looked at the news blankly.

It will turn into a real Marriage String once it reaches a certain level.

Doesn't that mean that Chang'e will truly fall in love with me in the future? Then wouldn't that cause me to be screwed by the deities that have a hidden crush on Chang'e?

I'm just a mere mortal, I can't beat deities.

Ye Zichen asked once more for his own safety.

"Then can you make the False Marriage String's affability level to not be able increase anymore...?"

"I don't think so. Affability level is very mystical, it can't be controlled."

Yue Lao raised his eyebrows, after connecting red strings of fate for so many years, this was the first time he met someone that wanted to decrease affability level, and it was a man.

However, when Yue Lao thought about the importance of this

Sky Sovereign for him, he couldn't help but ask.

“Sky Sovereign, how about you tell me the name of the person with the False Marriage String? Perhaps I can help you try to decrease the affability level or directly cut the string for you.”

“Are you for real?”

“I can try!”

“Then...” Ye Zichen licked his lips. “She is Chang'e!”

# Chapter 220 – Huge Gossip

---

Chang'e.

Yue Lao instantly jumped up from his chair when he saw Ye Zichen's reply.

"What? You don't want to play anymore because you won?" Old Lord Taishang's face was covered in anger.

"I lost, alright!?" Yue Lao rolled his eyes and ignored Old Lord Taishang, while his eyes were filled with curiosity.

"Is it the Fairy Chang'e in the Moon Palace of the Heavenly Court?"

"Yes."

“Alright, I understand. I will try my best to help Sky Sovereign.”

Ye Zichen only let out a long sigh when he got Yue Lao’s answer. However, since he was worried about the effects, he couldn’t help but remind Yue Lao.

“Do not bring it up with other people!”

“Naturally,” Yue Lao promised. “I keep my mouth shut.”

However, at the very moment that he replied, Yue Lao put his phone down onto the table and smiled mysteriously, “Old Lord, True Lord Erlang, I’ll tell you guys a gossip, so can you guys return what you won from me to me?”

“.. Don’t even think about it,” Old Lord Taishang raised his eyebrows. Recently, he lost quite a lot when he played Landlord with Erlang Shen, the God of Fortune, the Canopy Marshal and co.

He wasn’t going to give up something that he finally won from Yue Lao so easily.

As for Erlang Shen, since he managed to do very well just playing Landlord, he didn’t need Yue Lao’s bits, so he asked with interest, “I wonder what gossip Yue Lao wants to share?”

“Huge gossip, it’s definitely a huge gossip. It’s a gossip about the number one beauty in our Heavenly Court and the number one mysterious person.”

The moment Yue Lao said that, even Old Lord Taishang was slightly moved.

“I don’t need the cultivation experience and money I lost, just returning the Reputation to me is enough.”

“That’s okay,” Old Lord Taishang nodded. Ten-odd Reputation wasn’t really of any use. Erlang Shen also nodded on the side as well. In his eyes, only cultivation experience and money were of any use.

“I’m telling you guys, Chang’e and Sky Sovereign Nameless got linked with a Marriage String!”

“Whut?” Erlang Shen nearly jumped up upon hearing that. He furiously gulped and licked his lips. “You said my bro and Chang’e...”

“Of course, the two are only linked by a False Marriage String. However, according to Sky Sovereign, there is already an affability level on it. Don’t you think that’s a huge gossip? I’m telling you, within the last ten thousand years in the Heavenly Court, this is

definitely the number one gossip,” Yue Lao caressed his beard with a smile. Then, before leaving, he did not forget what Ye Zichen said. “Oh yeah, don’t spread this.”

“No problem, we’ll both keep our mouths shut!” The moment Old Lord Taishang and Erlang Shen finished, they picked up their phones to seek out their friends.

“You there? Let me tell you a huge gossip!”

...

At that moment, the litigant, Ye Zichen, did not yet know that the secret he just told Yue Lao about had already been spread in the Heavenly Court.

He was sitting in Lin Ru’s car and going towards the Lin

household.

“I didn’t get the chance to thank you when you saved my grandpa, let me take the chance to say it now. Thank you so much,” Lin Ru said sincerely.

Ye Zichen, who sat in the front seat, raised his eyebrows and smiled, “Didn’t you already thank me?”

“... Don’t think too much into it, although I feel like you’re pretty funny, I don’t like you,” Lin Ru quickly explained since thought that her actions back then had caused Ye Zichen’s misunderstanding. “What’s more, you already have Susu and that girl by your side, be happy about it.”

“Don’t think too much into it!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly. This girl truly felt great about herself. “I’m good brothers with Haoyu, I’m not enough of a scum to steal my brother’s woman...”

“Hehe...” Lin Ru suddenly laughed coldly. “You actually know that you’re scum? Hmph, you actually get involved with other girls even though you have a girl as good as Susu already. I really don’t know why Susu would like someone like you.”

“It’s my charm, you won’t get it.”

Hearing that, Lin Ru twitched her mouth. In her heart, she still felt unfair for Su Yan.

With Su Yan’s conditions, what kind of men would she be unable to find? Yet, she just had to get a playboy.

The two of them finally reached the Lin household as they bickered. The moment they entered the door, Ye Zichen saw Lin Hanben and Lin Lin standing at the mansion gate waiting for them.

“Mr. Ye...” Lin Hanben quickly walked up, while Lin Lin also lowered his head as he felt unsure of what to say.

Ye Zichen ignored that proud brat and raised his eyebrows at Lin Hanben with a smile, “You didn’t donate very little, ten million, not bad.”

“It’s something I should do,” Lin Hanben smiled, while he felt shocked in his heart.

He did not donate publicly, nor did he tell Ye Zichen. However, the other person actually knows how much he donated. From the looks of it, this savior is not only capable in medical skills, he had standing and contacts in other areas as well.

Ye Zichen nodded, then shrugged, “Don’t just stand here. Didn’t you guys call me over for Old Man Lin’s follow-up treatment? Let’s go!”

Inside Old Man Lin's room.

Since Ye Zichen's treatment method was rather special, only he and Elder Lin remained in the room.

After pulling the final silver needle out, Ye Zichen smiled towards Elder Lin, "It's done."

"Little friend, I've troubled you."

Elder Lin's face was covered with a kind smile.

Ye Zichen raised his hand to wipe away the sweat from his

forehead, then sat down on a chair in the room to rest for a while.

“Old Man Lin, this kid wants to ask you a question.”

A light flashed across Elder Lin’s eyes, then he immediately chuckled, “Ask, you are this old man’s savior, so I’ll definitely answer any questions!”

Ye Zichen hesitated for a moment, then licked his lips, “There are many families in that place, but why did you mention the Gu family then? Do you think I’m similar to the Gu family in any ways? Also, according to my checkup, the situation of your meridians were not caused by any disease...”

“The questions little friend asked is very tricky,” Elder Lin smiled.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen answered, “If Elder Lin feels like it’s inconvenient, just pretend that I never asked them.”

“No worry!” Elder Lin raised his hand and shook his head, while a look of reminiscence surfaced in his eyes. “Then I’ll answer your second question first. My eldest son has asked me this question before as well, but I did not answer it back then since I was afraid of bringing trouble to him. However, I don’t have that kind of worry with little friend. Actually, my injuries were caused by people from that place.”

“Elder Lin is in contact with people from that place? But why did the other person have to be so deadly!?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Old Man Lin smiled, “It is natural that when your position reaches a certain level, you will get into contact with areas that you’ve never been in contact with people. As for why they did it, are you scared of trouble?”

Seeing that Elder Lin hit the ball back to his court, Ye Zichen

licked his lips, then replied after thinking about it for a moment, “Never mind, I’m afraid of trouble.”

“Then I won’t tell you. When you’re not afraid of trouble, or you feel like you have so much trouble around you that one extra is no difference, then come ask me again, I will definitely tell you,” With that, Old Man Lin looked up at Ye Zichen. “Now, I’ll answer your first question. Before that, I want to ask you a question first! Have you never been suspicious of your background?”

# Chapter 213 – Mystery Of His Background

---

What's to be curious about my background?

I never had a father, and mom had raised me all by herself. I grew up in a family that couldn't be more normal. It could be said that I have no actual background at all...

However, those words sounded a bit different from Elder Lin's mouth. He had frequent contact with people from that place, and from the looks of his gaze, it seems like he knows something.

"Elder Lin, just say it directly," Ye Zichen's eyes held a hint of nervousness. Old Man Lin merely replied with one sentence, but it was enough to cause Ye Zichen's expression to change drastically.

Back in his own mansion, Ye Rong washed fruits with a joyous expression as usual, while Ye Zichen sat on the sofa in a clearly down mood, as he continuously wrote out two characters on the sofa with his finger.

叶 (Ye).

古 (Gu).

If it wasn't for Elder Lin, he might never have thought about this.

The character Ye was the character Gu if you rotated it by ninety degrees.

Chinese characters are truly deep.

Pant, pant.

Lil' White rubbed its head at his leg.

Ye Zichen raised his hand and rubbed its head, “What do you want to say to me?”

Lil' White glanced towards the kitchen sink, then jumped onto Ye Zichen’s lap and muttered, “Boss, you’ve got something on your mind?”

“You can tell as well?” Ye Zichen patted its head, then sighed with a troubled expression. “Yeah, and it’s weighing on me.”

“Then...” Just when Lil’ White was about to speak, Ye Rong walked over with a plate of fruits and put it on the tea table.

“Zichen, eat some fruits.

That kind smile caused Ye Zichen’s emotions to become more complex. He had used his mother’s surname since a young age.

Could my normal mother be someone of the Gu family that was one of the Hidden Families?

Ye Zichen nodded with a dry smile, then used a toothpick to put a piece of apple into his mouth absentmindedly.

“What have you been busy with recently? Why haven’t you been coming back?”

“Mm!”

“Then make sure you rest, don’t act so fiercely, you’re going to be in trouble if you collapse.”

“Mm!”

Ye Zichen’s absentminded situation finally caught Ye Rong’s attention.

She sat down at Ye Zichen’s said and looked at him worriedly, “Zichen, did you run into some trouble recently?”

Ye Zichen placed the toothpick in his hand onto the tea table, then held his hands together and placed it on his lap and leaned forward to think for a long time...

“Mom, I want to ask you a question.”

“What is it?” Ye Rong revealed a confused expression, she was able to feel Ye Zichen’s strangeness at that moment.

“Who exactly is my father?” Ye Zichen looked up directly at Mother Ye. This question was something that had bothered him for a long time.

Ye Rong’s expression stiffened, then she revealed a wry smile and caressed his head, “Child, why did you suddenly ask about this? Haven’t we been living a decent life these years?”

“I just want to know,” Ye Zichen frowned. “Every time I ask you about it, you would always find an excuse, can you tell me this time...?”

Silence.

Ye Zichen smiled wryly and shook his head the moment this feeling appeared.

It is far too familiar.

Regardless of when he asked Mother Ye regarding news of his father, Mother Ye would always deal with it using this sort of silence.

After a long time, Ye Zichen looked up and smiled, “Alright, I won’t ask anymore.”

“Zichen, it’s not that mom isn’t telling you, it’s that...” Ye Rong revealed a troubled expression. “Mom has some difficulties.”

“I understand, I’ll just not ask anymore,” With that, Ye Zichen’s expression suddenly turned serious. “Then can you tell me what is the relationship between our family and the Gu family?”

Instantly...

The moment Ye Rong heard the question, her expression drastically changed. This intense change of mood was even more severe than when Ye Zichen asked who his father was.

“What are you talking about? What Gu family?” After a long while, Mother Ye finally sorted out her mood, and smiled as if she didn’t know what Ye Zichen was talking about.

“Are you telling the truth?” Ye Zichen stared straight into Mother Ye’s eyes. He could feel that his mother was hiding something from the look in her eyes...

“Mom doesn’t know what you’re talking about. I’m a bit tired, so I’m going back to rest,” With that, Ye Rong stood up from the sofa and hurriedly walked upstairs without saying anything else.

Ye Zichen didn’t say anything for a long time as he watched his mother walk away.

At this moment, Lil’ White jumped onto his lap and licked his hand, “Boss.”

“Stay here properly, I’m a bit tired, so I’m going to rest.”

Ye Zichen dragged his tired body back into his room.

He was very tired.

His heart was very tired.

Ye Zichen laid on the bed and looked at the ceiling. If there was no surprise, his mother definitely knew about the Gu clan.

Judging from her expression, they didn't have a normal relationship at all.

Ye Zichen habitually took out his phone and clicked on the WeChat app...

Ten-odd messages from Erlang Shen.

Several tens of messages from the Canopy Marshal.

Several messages from Third Prince Nezha.

Ten-odd messages from Great Sage Sun.

Even Taibai Jinxing left a message for him.

Meanwhile, people also continuously @'d him in the Heavenly Court's WeChat group.

Why's going on? Why did I suddenly become so popular?

Then he looked at the 99+ friend requests in his contact list and

the friend request messages...

They were all cursing him!

The hell? What's going on?

Ye Zichen looked at the deities, who were cursing him, in shock. Just what did I do to actually make these deities gang up on me?

Dingdong.

At this moment, Han Xiangzi also sent a message over.

“Congrats, congratz!”

What the hell?

Something was definitely up since even the Eight Immortals knew about it.

Ye Zichen frowned, then replied.

“I wonder what Brother Han is congratulating me for? This sovereign did not have any sort of happy business!”

Within the Eight Immortals Palace.

Iron Crutch Li, Lü Dongbin and the rest of the Eight Immortals

sat in a circle and gossiped about the stuff they heard from their friends with interest.

Han Xiangzi, who was part of it, couldn't help but smile when he saw the message on his phone, "Sky Sovereign Nameless is actually playing dumb with me!"

"Mm, this is normal," Iron Crutch Li smiled like someone who has been through it all. "Fairy Chang'e's immortal heart has never once been moved after Houyi. It is normal for Sky Sovereign Nameless to want to hide it after actually getting into a relationship with the fairy."

"Yeah," Lan Caihe held his basket and glance towards Immortal Lady He. "Didn't you and Immortal Lady He only tell us the truth when you couldn't hide it anymore?"

"Lan Caihe!" Immortal Lady He frowned. At this moment, she still had a shiny diamond ring around her ring finger.

Han Xiangzi merely laughed idiotically towards this.

Lü Dongbin sent a message towards Ye Zichen using this chance.

“Sky Sovereign, stop hiding it, everyone knows.”

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone vibrated again.

At this moment, Ye ZIchen was sitting in a car as he read the other messages the other celestial friends sent him. All of them had some random words of congratulations, only the geezer, Taibai Jinxing, sent him a question mark.

Ye Zichen finished reading all the messages with a look of confusion, then when he saw Lü Dongbin's message, he got even more confused.

Stop hiding it!

What the heck did I hide?

# Chapter 222 – The First Voice Message

---

What happened with everyone in the Heavenly Court? A bunch of friend requests with curses, while a bunch of people left messages to congratulate me...

“Brother Lü, this sovereign truly doesn’t understand what you guys are talking about. Just what happened?”

“Hey, Brother Nameless, you’re in the wrong here,” Lü Dongbin replied with a smile. “Although we have never met before, we’re already family just by you helping our Old Han. You actually didn’t tell us such a huge thing first!”

...

Just what is it!?

“Never mind, I’ll stop teasing Brother Nameless. Your thing with Fairy Chang’e is known in throughout the Heavenly Court now. Brother Nameless, you are amazing for actually gaining the number one beauty in the Heavenly Court!”

After the message, there was a row of thumbs up emojis.

Ye Zichen’s hand shuddered.

My thing with Fairy Chang’e is exposed.

Although he managed to guess approximately what happened, based on his trust for Yue Lao, he still had a hint of hope...

“I wonder what business between Fairy Chang’e and I is Brother Lü talking about?”

“There is no need to hide it now, is there? Of course it is your relationship with Fairy Chang'e. I wonder when Brother Nameless is holding the feast, we, the Eight Immortals, will definitely be there!”

F\*ck you!

Ye Zichen nearly chucked his phone out of the car when he read the news.

His face instantly turned as black as Lord Bao's.

Lord Bao (包公) is a famous government official during the Song Dynasty. He was mainly famous for 2 things. 1) His uprightness and 2) His dark skin

Yue Lao, f\*ck you!

They say that people without facial hair can't be replied on.

Yue Lao already has a huge beard, and had promised with certainty that he wouldn't tell others. In less than a day, everyone in the Heavenly Court already knew.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth...

Dingdong.

Yue Lao's profile picture suddenly jumped to the top of Ye Zichen's chat, while the red "1" nearly caused Ye Zichen to clench his teeth until they shattered.

He still dares to come and find me.

“Sky Sovereign, I came to admit my wrongs and ask for punishment.”

Yue Lao held a cigarette in his right hand, while smoke swirled around the entire celestial manor. His expression was also full of worry.

Sky Sovereign Nameless and Fairy Chang'e's news was in heated discussion in the Heavenly Court. It was a lie if he said that he didn't know about it.

Although he felt annoyed at Old Lord Taishang and True Lord Erlang, but what can he do about it? He shouldn't have wanted to gain that little bit of benefit!

There was no helping it, he could only apologize first in order to beg for a lighter punishment.

Ye Zichen, who sat in the car, laughed. It was a laugh of anger caused by the geezer.

“Sky Sovereign, I only accidentally mentioned it to Old Lord Taishang and True Lord Erlang while we were playing cards. After that, I did tell them not to spread it around, but who would have thought... This is all on me!”

Yue Lao placed himself in a really low position.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and snorted with a laugh.

“It is your fault.”

“I ask Sky Sovereign to be the bigger person. I will try my best to help you out and prevent the effects of the discussion in the Heavenly Court.”

“You focused on the wrong thing,” Ye Zichen let out a sigh. “Although I’m one of the victims, no matter what, I’m still a guy. You should think about Fairy Chang’e. Now that the news has been spread, what is she going to do in the Heavenly Court?”

“Sky Sovereign is right!”

“Stop kissing ass here. If you have the time to do that, you should think about a strategy to deal with this instead. As for how I’ll deal with you in the future, that would depend on how you handle this.”

“Yes, yes, yes.”

A ray of hope rose in Yue Lao's heart after he saw the message. At least there's still chance for salvation.

Yue Lao put his phone back in his pocket, then called over the two celestial children standing guard outside the door.

“Esteemed Master!” Both celestial children bowed.

Yue Lao put out the cigarette in his hand, then squinted his eyes, “Go and hire the fifty cents army for me. Spread the news that the red string between Sky Sovereign Nameless and Fairy Chang'e Is a rumor and not to be believed!”

Back at Ye Zichen's home, Third Fatty Jin sat on the sofa like a master, while Di Tian wore an apron and did housework like a housewife.

“Boss Ye,” Third Fatty Jin quickly jumped down from the sofa when he saw Ye Zichen enter.

“Don’t annoy me, I’m in a bad mood.”

Ye Zichen pushed Third Fatty Jin to the side, then returned to his bedroom. Di Tian, who was doing housework, took a peek...

“What are you looking at? Do your job properly!”

Di Tian instantly frowned when he heard that.

Third Fatty Jin raised his eyebrows, “What, you can’t accept it? Boss Hou!”

Zoom.

The Hou brothers suddenly appeared in the room.

Third Fatty Jin quickly acted like he was enraged and cursed, “Boss Hou, this grandson glared at our Boss Ye!”

Ding dang dong...

Ye Zichen, who was in the bedroom, ignored the situation outside. At that moment, he was troubled over Fairy Chang'e's situation.

“Hehe, you finally came back,” Liu Qing came out of the Dragon Eye by the bedside table, then floated to Ye Zichen's side with a happy look and reached out her hand. “Phone!”

“I can’t let you use it now,” Ye Zichen frowned, then let out a sigh.

Dingdong.

The Monkey King mentioned you in the group.

Seeing this message, Ye Zichen felt like his head was going to explode. What is this Monkey Bro doing? It was whatever that he didn't help, but why did he do the exact opposite!

Ye Zichen opened the chat group...

God of Thunder: I heard news just now that said Sky Sovereign Nameless and Fairy Chang'e's news is fake.

Mother of Lightning: I heard that too.

Monkey King: Hey, what are you just guessing for? Isn't it fine if we just call the two of them out! @Only Idealism @Chang'e.

Immortality Peach Fairy: The Great Sage is brave.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Watching the show.

Third Prince Nezha: Watching the show.

Canopy Marshal: Why did Old Li come as well? @Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li, you like this sort of gossip too?

Third Prince Nezha: hehe, I just used my dad's phone to transfer pocket money to me in secret, I used the wrong phone.

Wu Gang: I need an explanation!

From the looks of it, Yue Lao had already started the salvation procedures. However, what troubled Ye Zichen was that the monkey really knew how to cause trouble.

“Hey, the Sky Sovereign Nameless they’re talking about is you, right? What happened with you and Chang’e?” Liu Qing floated on the side with a look of curiosity.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and smiled wryly, “The Heavenly Court

is talking about a red string linking Chang'e and I..."

Ugh.

"It can't be, you aren't even letting deities off now?" Liu Qing revealed a look of shock with an opened mouth. Then, she quickly shrugged. "Yeah, that's more like it. As long as the woman's pretty, you won't let them go!"

Ye Zichen did not have any spare effort to care about Liu Qing's retort. He merely looked at the messages that kept on moving up in the chat. At this moment, Chang'e appeared.

Chang'e: What did Great Sage @ me for?

It's over!

Ye Zichen's heart chilled. From the looks of it, Chang'e did not know the situation before hand, but this mention...

In order to prevent Chang'e from seeing the news the damn deities in the group will say, Ye Zichen immediately spoke up.

Only Idealism: @Chang'e, PM!

Wow.

Both of them appeared, and it was one after another.

The group instantly exploded once again.

All sorts of questions filled the screen, but both litigants, Chang'e and Ye Zichen, had already went to private chat.

“Sky Sovereign, what’s going on the group? They seem to be talking about us...”

She still saw it in the end.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then replied apologetically.

“Sorry, Fairy. I caused you to get disturbed like this.”

The face of Chang'e, who was within the Moon Palace, was bright red. She had skimmed over the chat history when she opened the group chat, then knew that her thing with Sky Sovereign Nameless

went public in the Heavenly Court.

She did feel a hint of a crush on Sky Sovereign Nameless, but she had never made it clear.

Especially in this sort of situation, the one that could feel it was only Sky Sovereign Nameless...

Dingdong.

Just as Ye Zichen pondered about how to explain...

Chang'e sent another message.

A voice message.

# **Chapter 223 – Announcing The Relationship**

---

This was the first time Ye Zichen saw a deity send a voice message since he had begun to deal with the Heavenly Court and the Underworld.

Ye Zichen clicked on the voice message curiously.

“Did Sky Sovereign spread the news?”

“Yes! I’m so sorry!”

Ye Zichen did not hide it. If they were to talk of the origin of the news, it was from him.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Chang'e increased by 1000. Current affability level: 1015.

Dingdong.

Your Red String with Chang'e has changed. Current Red String is identified as a Marriage String.

Damn!

An affability level increase of 1000!

Ye Zichen stared at the notification in shock, then looked at the Marriage String, that resided in the Treasure Chest.

It seriously changed!

“There is no need for Sky Sovereign to apologize to me. I suppose it’s good that it went public.”

It was a very soft voice that had a bit of faint shyness mixed in with the coldness. More importantly, her reply...

I suppose it’s good that it went public!

Before Ye Zichen could reply, he saw that in the Heavenly Court group...

Chang'e mentioned you in the group chat.

F\*ck, it seems like I'm definitely going to end up with a grudge with the male deities in the Heavenly Court!

Chang'e: @Only Idealism.

The reactions of the deities in the group were nearly identical. If it had to be described with one word, it would be...

Exploded!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Watching intently on the front row. It seems like they're going to announce their relationship.

God of Thunder: It seems like we're going to be stuffed with dog food.

Dog food refers to a display of affection by couples in front of single people. The reason it is referred to as such in slang is because single people are often referred to as “single dogs” (单身狗). Most of the time, single people don't actually want to see that sort of display of affection, which is why the word “stuffed” (塞) is used.

Mother of Lightning: Are you trying to say that you're single?

Mother of Lightning is married to God of Thunder.

God of Thunder: No, I don't dare. I'm merely giving a moment of silence for the many old young men in the group.

Heavenly Soldier A: Although I just got married a few days ago, I still feel sad for the goddess just announcing her relationship like this.

Heavenly Soldier B: Brothers, don't cry, before getting Chang'e's reply of confirmation, we still have a chance.

Chang'e: Everyone, give me a moment please, I have something to say.

The group instantly turned silent.

Chang'e: @Only Idealism, let's come straight out with it.

Ye Zichen felt very troubled when he saw the message.

Come straight out!

Wouldn't I be f\*cking beaten to death!?

“Wow, Chang'e seems like she's going to announce her relationship! Don't these announcements normally have a photo of the two together, then a sentence with “we”? You guys advanced way too quick!” Liu Qing exclaimed, then said as if the only thing she fear was the lack of chaos in the world. “Hurry up and appear, Chang'e is very lonely!”

Ye Zichen glared at the girl and rolled his eyes, then let out a long sigh...

“Hahahaha!”

He didn't know what he should say, so he could only type a row of “haha” in the group chat.

Seeing that he appeared, Chang'e sent a cute emoji followed by a text message.

“As you guys have thought. Sky Sovereign and I have indeed been linked by a Red String.”

Wow.

Immortality Peach Fairy: The news is crazy enough!

Wu Gang: Impossible! @Chang'e, I've chopped trees in front of your door for so long, do you still not understand my feelings for you?

Chang'e: @Wu Gang, you chopping trees in front of my home everyday is super annoying, I can't even sleep! Stop chopping from now on!

Chang'e: Also, I chose to link myself to Sky Sovereign Nameless

with a red string.

Chang'e: I'm no good at talking with other people. All I want to say is that I hope that you guys can bless us.

Chang'e: @Only Idealism, say a few words.

Ye Zichen: Hahahahah...

Immortality Peach Fairy: Great deity is so happy. That's natural, able to be with Chang'e is indeed something to be happy about. It's just a pity that I like Sky Sovereign quite a lot... <insert a row of pitiful emojis>

Third Prince Nezha: I don't understand the world of adults, but since Chang'e-jiejie asked as to bless them, then I shall.

God of Thunder: Congratulations!

Mother of Lightning: Congratulations!

The chat group was instantly filled with congratulating messages. At this moment...

Wu Gang: Anyone wants to go and have a drink?

Heavenly Soldier C: Big Brother Gang, count me in.

Heavenly Soldier B: As the cold dog good slaps my face, my tears started to flow uncontrollably.

The group was filled with either congratulating messages or complaints. It was only the two extremes.

Ye Zichen did not say anything in the group since the private chat messages came way too quickly.

Monkey King: Bro, I heard Chang'e and you announced your relationship.

Canopy Marshal: I'll let you have it.

Erlang Shen: I'll stop my thoughts about Chang'e from now on. Bro, I wish you a long and lasting one.

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign, it seems like... I don't need to hire the

fifty cents army anymore, right?

Ye Zichen truly felt helpless when he saw everyone's messages.

The speed that it spread was even quicker than the internet.

Dingdong.

At this moment, Taibai Jinxing also sent him a message.

Taibai Jinxing: What do you actually want to do?

Taibai Jinxing: Did you forget about your identity? How can you date someone from the Heavenly Court?

Taibai Jinxing: And it had to be Chang'e!

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and smiled wryly.

“Gramps, do you think I wanted to?”

Is dating Chang'e such an easy task? That was something that could cause me to become the topics of everyone. Just a second after Chang'e announced their relationship and said that she was the one who took the initiative...

Deities continuously sent him friend requests on WeChat.

The cursing...

Was no worse than flaming on the internet.

“Never mind, I’m not going to care about you dating Chang’e. How’s the situation with the Underworld?”

“...”

Ye Zichen licked his lips and replied with a coy smile.

“I haven’t managed to infiltrate in yet.”

“Hurry up and do so. I’m waiting for your good news.”

What Ye Zichen did not expect was that this geezer actually did not swear at him in anger.

That wasn't like him.

Ye Zichen replied to Taibai Jinxing simply, then quit the chat, and saw that Chang'e had left him a voice message.

"Sky Sovereign, may I call you Nameless from now on?"

Her soft tone was mixed with a hint of shyness and anticipation, causing Ye Zichen to not know whether to laugh or cry.

I'm dating Chang'e.

“Yes!”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Chang'e increased by 300. Current intimacy level: 600.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Chang'e has leveled up. Current intimacy level: Respect.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Chang'e increased by 1000. Current affability level: 2015.

Dingdong.

You have received Heart-to-Heart Voice Transmitting Sigil x1.

Possessors: Only Idealism, Chang'e!

“Nameless?”

An inquiring voice rang in Ye Zichen's mind.

F\*ck.

Voice-transmission!

“Here!” Ye Zichen replied in his mind.

“Wow, such a nice voice,” Chang'e exclaimed like a little girl, then immediately turned embarrassed. “We already publicly announced our relationship, when can you come back to the Heavenly Court...”

What for!?

For a celebratory feast?

Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort, then replied in his mind, "It's impossible for me to do so recently. I'm on the verge of breakthrough, so I cannot leave the secret location."

"Then alright," Chang'e's tone held a bit of disappointment that was hard to mask.

Since Ye Zichen's mind was in a mess, he replied, "Fairy, I'm going into closed cultivation."

"Mm, then go!"

Only when Chang'e's voice in his mind disappear did Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then lay on the bed

Liu Qing floated above his head and asked with a look of curiosity, “How is it going with you and Chang’e.”

“Nothing special!”

“Just say it, don’t be so petty.”

“Here’s the phone, go and read your doujinshi.”

Then, Ye Zichen chucked the phone over. After Liu Qing received the phone, she immediately ran to the side happily and ignored him.

# Chapter 224 – The Dog That’s Never Full

---

Ever since Ye Zichen had asked about the Gu family, Ye Rong begun to instantly avoid him.

This abnormality made the thoughts in Ye Zichen’s mind even more concrete.

But more of it was irritation.

Gu family!

If I’m really related to the Gu family, then wouldn’t that Gu Tian, who has a low EQ, be my cousin?

Ye Zichen got angry whenever he thought about that brat’s idiotic look.

Buzz.

The phone on the tea table rang.

Ye Zichen picked up the phone and put it by his ear, “Yumei.”

Within a separate room of a certain business clubhouse, the Hou Brothers stood behind Ye Zichen like two guardians of the door, while he sat on the sofa and raised his eyebrows at Xiao Yumei, “What did you call me over so urgently for?”

“What? Is it not alright for me to find you?” A wave of feelings rose in Xiao Yumei’s alluring eyes, before she proceeded to roll her eyes at him.

“I didn’t say that,” Ye Zichen hurriedly explain. “It’s just that weren’t you busying yourself with the medical company? That’s why you didn’t have any time to contact me.”

“You’re picking on my flaws, are you?” Xiao Yumei put her hands on her waist, then frowned a little. “You are truly happy being an uncaring owner. I nearly busied myself to death, yet you aren’t caring about me.”

“Fine, it’s my mistake. My Yumei has worked hard.”

“Heh!” Xiao Yumei raised the corner of her lips. “The reason I called you out this time is for you to back me up...”

“What happened?”

“Our medical company has been organized pretty well, and all sorts of papers came pretty quickly, but there still hasn’t any news from the papers of the Drug Administration.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then looked at her meaningfully, “They want a share of the cake?”

“I’m not too sure,” Xiao Yumei asked with confusion in her eyes. “I have met with the Commissioner of Drug Administration and tried to give him cheques, but he returned them all, regardless of the amount.”

“Heh, it seems like he’s a glutton.”

As he finished, the door to the room was pushed open. A middle-aged man with balding hair and a pair of gold-framed glasses walked in as he held his beer belly.

“Commissioner Fu,” Xiao Yumei immediately went up to greet him after seeing the man.

Ye Zichen also stood up with his eyebrows raised.

### Deputy Commissioner?

Commissioner Fu (付局) and Deputy Commissioner (副局) are homophones.

“Lil’ Xiao!” Commissioner Fu nodded in an old-fashioned manner, then looked at Ye Zichen. “This is...”

“Commissioner Fu, this is the chairman of our medical company, Ye Zichen,” Xiao Yumei introduced.

“You actually managed to establish such a large medical company at such a young age. I’m impress,” Commissioner Fu smiled courteously, while Ye Zichen also greeted him back.

When everyone sat down, Commissioner Fu sat opposite Xiao Yumei and Ye Ziche. He leaned back on the sofa, “Lil’ Xiao, what did you call me out for this time? I have plenty of things to do back at the office.”

“Of course it’s to trouble you,” Xiao Yumei smiled, then took out a cheque of five million and placed it onto the table. “Commissioner Fu is busy with all sorts of official work. We’re clear about that, so this is just a small...”

Commissioner Fu looked towards the table with his green pea-like eyes, and when he saw the number, his folded face revealed a playful smile, “Boss Xiao, I know you urgently need the Drug Administration’s papers, but we have to go by the books, right? Your company invested so much at the start, so it will naturally take longer to check everything.”

Commissioner Fu pushed the cheque back emotionlessly. Both Xiao Yumei and Ye Zichen couldn’t help but gasp when they saw this.

“Such a glutton.”

The papers were definitely in his hands. Everything else was done, and all they needed was the last paper.

It could be said that Xiao Yumei was beyond troubled.

Each day delayed was countless amounts of profits lost. She clenched her teeth, then took out her chequebook from her bag, and prepared to write another number.

“Yumei, no need,” Ye Zichen stopped her with a smile. Since five million wasn’t enough to feed this Commissioner Fu, then just don’t feed him at all.

Ye Zichen picked up the cheque from the table and slowly ripped it to shreds in front of Commissioner Fu.

Commissioner Fu squinted his eyes, causing them to become a mere slit, as he looked at Ye Zichen's playful gaze. At the same time, Ye Zichen also slammed the table and stood up with a laugh, "Commissioner Fu truly has a huge appetite!"

"Boss Ye wants to break the rules?" Since someone was going to do that, Commissioner Fu also decided to just be blunt. "I'll tell you the truth, the papers are in my hands now. Since you want to go through the normal procedures, then just wait a year or two, I just don't know if you guys can afford to wait."

"Don't think that I don't understand anything. According to normal procedures, medical papers should be done in fifteen days at max. Since Commissioner Fu told us to go by the books, then let's do so," With that, Ye Zichen wrapped his arm around Xiao Yumei's waist and laughed. "No wonder he's so fat. So, it's because of his huge appetite. Since even five million can't make you full, you truly are a dog that's never going to be full!"

“Heh, young man, don’t be so arrogant. It seems like we have nothing to talk about anymore. Good bye, Boss Xiao!” Commissioner Fu left with his briefcase in hand.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and looked at Commissioner Fu’s back, then said to Eldest Hou, “Follow that fat ass and find a chance to beat him up.”

“Understood!”

Zoom.

Thus, Eldest Hou disappeared from the room.

Xiao Yumei wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen’s arm and

frowned, “Zichen, doing that isn’t good, right?”

“What’s bad about it? He’s just a puny deputy commissioner!”

“What, he’s the proper commissioner, his surname is Fu.”

“This name... Let’s ignore it. That grandson is a bottomless pit, he’s never going to be full,” Ye Zichen snorted coldly. “Don’t worry about the drug administration, did you forget who are our partners?”

“Are you sure you want to trouble Young Master Su?”

“What trouble? He has shares in the company as well. What’s more, it’s time for him, the number one young master in Bingcheng to do something.”

With that, Ye Zichen called Su Yiyun.

After Ye Zichen explained the situation properly, Su Yiyun immediately replied, “Leave it to me, it’ll be done in three days.”

Since Xiao Yumei had other matters in the company to attend to, she left first.

Ye Zichen leaned back on the sofa in the room lazily and smoked. At that moment, the door to the room was pushed open.

“Go in!”

Fourth Hou held Yu’s shoulders with both hands and pushed him down onto the floor.

“Boss Ye, this brat was being suspicious outside. I feel like he came for you!”

“...”

Ye Zichen was instantly speechless when he saw Yu.

He casually chucked the cigarette onto the floor, then tilted his head, “Say, bro, why did you come again? You’re too stubborn.”

Ye Zichen was truly speechless. Yu had already been taught a lesson by Soul Pearl Yiyuan and his two monkeys before. Why the heck did he come in after a few days again?

“What is your purpose of coming this time? To kill me again?”

“Yes!”

Yu's answer was still extremely straightforward and lacked an understanding of people.

# Chapter 225 – Yu’s Request

---

Cough cough.

Ye Zichen coughed dryly. This brother is seriously...

He actually still dared to say that despite getting controlled by my people.

“Just what should I say to you?” Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly, then advised earnestly. “Didn’t I already tell you very clearly last time that you just can’t kill me? Why are you so hell bent on attempting it!? I didn’t give you the healing pill for you to recover and cause trouble for me. You have to learn to thank people, bro!”

“Young Master Hou told me to kill you!” Yu’s eyes were sinister and cold like that of a poisonous snake’s.

“But the problem is that you can’t kill me,” Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then signaled Fourth Hou to release Yu. “Be honest with yourself. Can you kill me?”

“No!” Yu replied without any sort of hesitation.

“Bro, then why do this!?” Ye Zichen showed a troubled expression. Why did this guy have to be so stubborn?

Just as both sides came to a stalemate, Yu suddenly put his hand into a pocket at his waist. Third Hou instantly stood in front of Ye Zichen to protect him, while Fourth Hou dashed forward...

Bang.

Yu took Fourth Hou’s punch, and slammed into the wall of the

room. However, he still carefully protected the thing in his hand.

That thing...

“Wait.”

Seeing that Fourth Hou was going to attack again, Ye Zichen quickly stopped him.

“Isn’t this the pill I gave you? You didn’t eat it!”

“I want to know where you got this,” Yu disregarded the injuries on his body and walked over with the pill. However, Fourth Hou stopped him at a three meter distance.

“Your recovery ability is pretty good. You actually managed to more or less recover without taking the pill,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled.

However, Yu continued to look at him seriously, “I want to know where this pill came from.”

“Speaking with you is so tiring,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “Why do you care so much? If you feel like it’s poison, then just give it back to me, it’s rather expensive!”

Ye Zichen was speechless. I gave him the pill, yet he still has so many issues, seriously...

“This is very important to me,” Yu, who was bad with words, suddenly shouted, instantly shocking Fourth Hou who was beside him.

Fourth Hou kicked Yu and cursed, “Are you trying to scare our Boss Ye? What are you shouting for? Are you just trying to show that you’re loud!?”

“Fourth Hou!” Ye Zichen called out, causing Fourth Hou to release Yu’s collar. “This pill is mine, I’m the producer.”

“Are you sure?” Yu asked in confusion.

Ye Zichen merely nodded, “Why should I lie to you for no reason?”

The moment Ye Zichen finished, Yu looked at him blankly, then kneeled onto the floor, “Please help me!”

This kneeled completely shocked Ye Zichen. This bro was arguing

with me just moments earlier, why did he kneel now?

Ye Zichen hurried over to help him up, but it was as if Yu's leg were covered in superglue and he just wouldn't get up.

"I'm not getting up until you agree! Please help me!" Yu's expression was filled with anticipation.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and squatted beside Yu, "Then do say how I'm supposed to help you. How am I supposed to help you if you don't actually tell me what it is?"

"I want to ask you to help me take a look at a patient!"

"..."

Such a puny matter actually caused so much trouble.

Ye Zichen truly did not understand Yu's thoughts. Couldn't he just directly ask me to go and save someone?

It was fortunate that it was in the room, if it was outside, and was seen by some bystanders who didn't know what was going on, I might end up in the headlines tomorrow.

“Sure, I'll help, now you can get up, right?”

“Thank you, if you can save her, then my life is yours!”

He's still kneeling!

I've already promised you and yet you're still kneeling!?

"I told you to get the f\*ck up! If you still want me to help you, then stand up!"

.....

It was very hard to imagine that a Spiritual Body leveled expert like Yu actually lived underneath a bridge.

Ye Zichen stood in front of the arc of the bridge and smoked. Yu said that his friend was still in the hospital, he had asked Ye Zichen to wait here for a moment, while he went to get her.

Ta, ta.

A series of quick footsteps sounded out. Not long later, Yu hurried over with a pale-faced girl, whose eyes were tight shut.

The girl was in her teenage years. Her breathing was faint, but strong.

It was clear that this woman had a very strong will to live, but she was sick...

“The friend you were talking about is her?”

No matter how I look at it, Yu seems to be of her father's generation. Could he be an old cow that eats young grass?

Zeze...

Yu nodded silently, then placed the girl softly on a piece of torn cloth underneath a bridge. At the same time Ye Zichen reached his finger out to feel the girl's pulse.

He frowned.

He looked up at the girl's pale face and the painful expression.

What's going on? She's not sick at all.

Not only was the girl not sick, her body was even a lot healthier than normal people.

Ye Zichen removed his hand from her wrist with a frown.

Yu immediately went up to him with a nervous expression, “How is she?”

Ye Zichen signaled him to be quiet, then his eyes flashed with a ray of gold light.

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

He scanned the girl’s body, then Ye Zichen’s frowned eyebrows deepened.

“What did the girl go through before?” Ye Zichen looked to the side with a frown.

However, Yu lowered his head and did not say anything.

“It’s fine if you don’t say it, I’ll just tell you directly, this girl isn’t sick at all. Not only is she not sick, she’s a lot healthier than normal people!”

“That’s impossible, why is she not waking up if she isn’t sick?”

“She’s lacking a spiritual soul!” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. “Out of the three spiritual souls and six physical souls, she’s lacking a spiritual soul.”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but be a bit scared after saying that.

Back then, he didn’t know anything. That grandson, Xie Lei, had

asked him for a spiritual and a physical soul. He nearly gave it to the brat.

It was fortunate that he didn't...

“So it's like this,” Yu did not show any surprise, and instead sat on the ground with a look as if he knew it, while his eyes were filled with trouble.

“You guessed it already?”

From the looks of it, he clearly knew that it would be the result.

“Mhmm,” Yu nodded, while emotions arose in his eyes. “I guessed the possibility, but I didn't think that it would actually be the case.”

“You believe my words?”

“Naturally, the fact that you can take out that sort of pill means that you have no need of lying to a useless person like me,” Yu squinted his eyes, then signs of a struggle rose up from his lifeless face. “Ling’er, don’t blame uncle, I can’t save you, so I can only let you leave more comfortably!”

With that, Yu suddenly smacked towards the girl with his right hand.

Slap.

At the moment that his hand was about to land on the girl’s head, Ye Zichen suddenly caught his arm.

“What are you doing?” Yu’s eyes were filled with a savage light.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and answered speechlessly, “I do want to ask just what are you doing. Doesn’t she just lack a spiritual soul? Isn’t it fine if we just find it!?”

# Chapter 226 – Catching A Thief

---

When Yu heard Ye Zichen's words, his gaze gradually turned from shock to excitement.

“Are you speaking the truth?”

To be honest, Yu's anticipating gaze gave Ye Zichen quite a bit of pressure.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth, then touched the phone in his pocket, “I can't promise that I will be able to find her spiritual soul, but I will do my best.”

Bang.

He's kneeling again.

“If you can save Ling’er, then my life is yours...”

“Stop!”

What the heck was with this bro? He just kneels so suddenly, doesn’t he know that men have gold under their knees?

Ye Zichen interrupted Yu’s words that were about to express his loyalty and spoke helplessly.

“I don’t want your life, I just hope that you won’t randomly come to kill me. I’m a coward, and your assassinations always freak me out. As for whether I can find it, it’s still unknown. If I really can, then I’ll be satisfied if you just keep a thankful heart and don’t cause trouble for me.

“No matter what the result is, I won’t cause trouble for you,” Yu stood up from the ground with Ye Zichen’s help and answered with determined eyes.

Yu wasn’t a person without a conscience. Instead, he paid a lot of weight on relationships. However, since he had no choice, he could only discard the so-called conscience for Ling’er.

“That’s for the best,” Ye Zichen smiled and shrugged. Then, he took out a cheque book from his pocket and wrote a number on it, before handing the cheque to Yu. “Don’t live underneath the bridge from now on, use this money to rent a home.”

“How-How could I accept your money?” Yu raised his hand and refused.

“I’m not some goody two shoes, just treat it as me lending you the money. I think that with your abilities, you should be able to

easily pay me back.”

After a bit more comforting, Yu finally received the cheque solemnly.

Ye Zichen glanced at Yu’s pale face. It was clear that Fourth Hou’s punch had caused quite a bit of damage to him.

“Take the pill I gave you later. It’ll help with your recovery.”

“I’m going to save it for Ling’er.”

“What’s the point of saving it,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly. “Since I can casually give you one, do you think it’s something rare? When this friend of yours truly recovers, then I’ll give more to you. Oh yeah, what is she called?”

“Zhang Lingling!”

“Okay, then wait for my news, if I find her spiritual soul, then I will contact you.”

When Ye Zichen left from the bottom of the bridge, he let out a sigh.

I finally managed to defuse the ticking time bomb. With the Hou Brothers and Soul Pearl Yiyuan’s protection, Ye Zichen wasn’t too afraid that Yu would pose a threat to him.

However, that bro was relentless. What’s more, even though he had bodyguards, his family and friends didn’t.

If Yu went crazy and made a move on his family...

Basically, calming Yu down was for the best.

Yu, who was underneath the bridge, watched Ye Zichen's retreating figure, then looked down at the cheque in his hand, while his gaze would show that he was slightly moved.

At that moment, the phone in his pocket rang.

He took out a second-handed phone worth only a two digit amount. When he saw the caller ID, he lowered his head and looked at Zhang Lingling, who was lying on the ground and placed the phone by his ear.

“Wait.”

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen sat on a park bench with squinted eyes as he focused on the screen of his phone.

He automatically disregarded those words of congratulations and the deities that wanted to add him in order to cuss at him.

If I want to find Zhang Lingling's spiritual soul, I can only start from people in the Underworld.

When considering the intimacy level, White Impermanence was his only option.

However, he didn't message her immediately. At this hour, she should still be resting.

“Choo choo...” Liu Qing popped out at an unknown time and continuously made weird noises as she stood behind him.

Ye Zichen turned his head and rolled his eyes at her, “What do you want to do now!?”

“I’m not going to do anything at all,” Liu Qing blinked, then floated to sit down beside him. “I saw that the Zhang Lingling just now looked pretty good. Is the harem going to increase by another one?”

“Are you a retard?” Ye Zichen stared at her. “If I pick up one whenever I see one, just how loving am I? Even if I don’t consider Su Yan and co.’s feelings, shouldn’t I still consider about my old waist?”

“Waist?” Liu Qing was confused. However, when she saw Ye Zichen’s slightly ambiguous gaze, she bit her lips and slapped him. “Shameless.”

“Stop!”

“Catch the thief!”

“Brat, stop!”

At that very moment, the loud roars of several men suddenly resonated through the park.

Ye Zichen looked up and saw a young man holding a lady's bag frantically run as fast as the wind as he occasionally looked back.

A large group of guys followed behind him and chased him as they shouted.

“Does everyone like being a samaritan now?”

Ye Zichen scratched his head and stood up from the bench, causing the thief, who was looking around, to bump into Ye Zichen.

Since Ye Zichen had Unbreakable body activated, that bump...

Was like hitting himself on an iron plate, resulting in the thief getting completely confused.

“Why aren’t you learning to be good when you’re so young, and instead decided to steal someone else’s bag!?”

The young man only looked to be in his early twenties. From his delicate appearance, he didn't seem to be any person of great evil.

Ye Zichen looked at the men fiercely screaming out to catch the thief behind them, he let out a sigh, then took the bag from the young man's hands.

“I’m taking the bag, I’ll just treat it like I didn’t see you.”

The young man looked at Ye Zichen blankly for a moment, then immediately ran away with a thankful look.

“Why did you let him run?”

“Are you a cohort of that thief? Why did you let him go just now?”

When the men, who were catching the thief hurried over, they immediately started to make it difficult for Ye Zichen as they looked at the thief, who was running away, and the bag in Ye Zichen's hands.

“What? Here, take the bag, go and get praised.”

Ye Zichen handed the bag to one of the men. He thought that they would return the bag to the owner of it, but what he didn't expect was...

“Give it to me!”

“Give it to me!”

“All of you, let go, my big bro is Brother Scar from around here, if you fight with me over it, then I’ll get my big bro to kill you all.”

“F\*ck off, laozi is police in the area, just try to get your big bro to come...”

The men howled as they fought over the bag. Ye Zichen stood on the side with a confused look as he watched on.

What the hell, why did they start fighting?

When Ye Zichen saw that the bag was nearly ripped apart by them, he saw Sun Yige run over, out of breath.

When the men saw Sun Yige, they also fought over the bag even more intently as if they were doped up.

What made Ye Zichen more speechless was that one of them kicked another one, causing the entire group to turn completely chaotic.

Sun Yige also stood dumbly on the spot when she saw that.

Ye Zichen walked next to her, “That bag is yours?”

“Ye Zichen.”

A hint of red surfaced on Sun Yige’s face, then she instantly bit her lips and nodded.

“Then I’ll help you get it back.”

# Chapter 227 – Do You Think I Have A Chance At Being An A-list Star?

---

The Battle of the Bag was extremely intense.

Sun Yige crossed her arms and bit her lips as she frowned while looking at the heated fight, “Don’t-Don’t go, it looks so dangerous.”

To be honest, Ye Zichen felt his heart jump to his throat when he saw how fiercely they fought.

Even if the male:female ratio is unbalanced, and that Sun Yige was also a girl whose looks are among the best of girls, there still isn’t a need to act like this, right?

Even if one of them gets it, was it supposed to get Sun Yige to treat them to a meal?

He knew Sun Yige's personality very well. Don't talk about treating them to a meal, it was unbelievable for her to even allow them to send her home.

"Don't worry, just wait here for a moment."

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then gradually moved towards the fight. If he really wanted to attack, then these people definitely won't be able to beat him...

At that moment, several unidentified objects flew out from the riled up crowd. Ye Zichen picked them up from the ground...

Makeup case.

Card holder.

As well as the backpack strap of the bag.

“It seems like I won’t be able to get it back.”

Ye Zichen picked up the three items.

Sun Yige looked at the three items, then received them with a smile, “This is enough.”

The smile was very warm. It was as if her mood did not turn sour due to the case with the bag.

“Wow, you guys! If you have guts, then just wait here for laozi. Big bro, call some people over for me.”

“Call your big bro? Heh! Captain, there is a gang fight here, I request for backup.”

“You two, stop pretending to be grandsons, nobody can leave today!”

Several loud angry roars sounded out at the fight. Ye Zichen glanced over, then raised his eyebrows at Sun Yige, “Let’s leave first.”

The two of them walked side-by-side on the business street. Fortunately, the day wasn’t very hot, and as the breeze blew past, it provided people with an indescribable comfort.

When one looked near the business street, they would be able to see girls carrying shopping bags everywhere, while their faces were full of happy smiles.

They were indeed very happy, but their wallets were sobbing.

Walking with Sun Yige was definitely an honor, and something of equal importance was that she was exceptionally quiet...

She was so quiet to the point that if you don't try to find a topic to talk about, she wouldn't speak!

In order to make the atmosphere between the two of them less awkward, Ye Zichen pursed his lips, "Ha... Oh yeah, Class Rep, where did you go just now? How did you get your bag snatched away?"

“Me!?” Ye Zichen could tell from Sun Yige’s expression that she was very nervous. She bit her lips a few times, then finally replied. “I have a friend that wants to be an actress, so I went with her.”

“Actress? Even an amateur can be one?”

“It’s just extras,” Sun Yige smiled kindly. “Starting from extras, then getting into the crew...”

“...” Ye Zichen didn’t know how he should reply.

Sun Yige turned to look at him, then bit her lips, “Uhm... Thank you for just now.”

Her voice was extremely soft. If it wasn’t for Ye Zichen’s hearing being rather good, he might not have been able to hear it clearly.

“No need for thanks, just don’t hate me,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly. “I got the bag back just now, but then I gave it to them. If I didn’t give it to them, then your bag might not have been broken either.”

“No worries, it isn’t a name brand bag.” Sun Yige took it rather easily. Her face was forever accompanied by a warm smile, giving people an unusual feeling of intimacy. However, it was clearly that her holding the makeup case and card holder was very inconvenient.

“Class Rep Sun, follow me.”

In front of a flagship store of some luxurious brands.

“What did you bring me here for?” Sun Yige stood at the entrance yet did not enter. This sort of place was not somewhere that her family would be able to afford.

“Of course it’s to buy a bag for you. I am partially responsible for your broken bag...”

“No need for the trouble, I’ll just buy another one the next time I go to the night market,” Sun Yige shook her head like a rattle drum. Although she had never been to such a place, she could guess that the prices of the bags inside were definitely very expensive.

“We already came, so go in and have a look!” With that, Ye Zichen grabbed Sun Yige by her wrist and walked into the store.

“Sir, Madam, welcome!” The clerk went up to them passionately.

Ye Zichen nodded towards her, “We want to have a look at some bags.”

“Please follow me.”

Not long later, the clerk brought them to the area just for bags and begun to introduce all sorts of bags to them.

“Have a look and see which one you like?” Ye Zichen tilted his head and saw that Sun Yige’s entire face was as red as an apple. She breathed quickly and her pulse raced.

“Can-Can you let go of me!” A hint of a tremble was mixed in Sun Yige’s voice.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen let go of his hand with a smile, and said apologetically, “Sorry, have a look, which one do you like?”

Sun Yige looked at the bags on the counter. All women like these, and Sun Yige was no exception.

When she saw these pretty bags, her eyes gradually lit up, but when she saw the price...

“So expensive.”

“Beauty, all bags in our shop are real from high-class brands, so the price is naturally slightly more expensive. However, since your boyfriend doesn’t care, then don’t try to help him save money!”

Zoom.

Sun Yige’s face, that had just turned slightly calmer instantly turned bright red once again.

“He’s not my boyfriend,” Sun Yige answered quietly with a blush.

That clerk was stunned for a moment before she smiled softly, “If he isn’t your boyfriend, then he’s your pursuer, you’re so fortunate...”

“He...” It seemed like Sun Yige still wanted to explain, but at that moment, a middle-aged man in casual clothes hugging a girl around twenty years old, who was wearing beautiful clothes, walked over.

“Help me wrap that bag up.”

“Thank you, Director Wang,” the girl answered coquettishly.

Hearing the voice, Sun Yige turned her head, “Lil’ Ya!”

When she noticed the man beside the girl, Sun Yige’s expression changed drastically, “Li Ya, why...”

“Yige!” The face of the girl acting coquettishly stiffened up when she saw Sun Yige.

On the other hand, a hint of greed flashed across the middle-aged man’s eyes before he raised his eyebrows and smiled, “Isn’t this Miss Sun?”

“Director Wang,” Sun Yige nodded politely, but her gaze remained on Li Ya.

Director Wang noticed the gaze, so he put down his hand from Li Ya's waist with a smile, "I met Lil' Li on the road. On yeah, why didn't you go in for the interview just now..."

"I never thought about being an actress, I just went with Lil' Ya."

"That's a shame, with your potential as long as you slightly understand, you can definitely become popular," As he spoke, Director Wang reached his hand towards Sun Yige in an attempt to hold her hand.

"How about it? Join my crew, I'll help you become an A-List star."

Slap.

As Director Wang reached his hand out, Ye Zichen reached out

his hand to hold Director Wang's hand with a smile.

"Director Wang, do you think I have the potential to become an A-List star?"

# Chapter 228 – Sweetie Darling, I’m Coming To Find You

---

“You are?” Displeasure flashed across Director Wang’s eyes, but he retained his kind smile and asked politely.

“I am a capable young man with a dream. Since a young age, I had hoped to become a character on the television screen. Director Wang, do you think I have the potential to become an A-List star?” Ye Zichen’s eyes were filled with anticipation, while his acting was almost on an award-deserving level.

Director Wang felt very annoyed. I wanted to shake hands with Sun Yige, what the hell is with this guy?

“You’re an acting faculty student?”

“No!”

“Since you’re not, then it’ll be a bit harder. When our crew hires, even the extras with a bit of lines have to have some acting background.”

“Oh!” Only then did Ye Zichen reveal an understanding smile, then he smiled with his eyes filled with mockery. “But, Sun Yige is my classmate, she doesn’t have any acting background either. Could Director Wang’s words be bullshit?”

Ye Zichen gradually used more and more strength in his hand, but his face retained the warm smile.

Director Wang wanted to reply, but the pain from his hand caused him to frown.

He wanted to forcefully pull his hand away, but Ye Zichen’s hand had locked down his hand tightly.

“Let go of my hand!”

“Didn’t Director Wang want to shake hands just now, why let go? What? You don’t want to shake hands anymore?” Ye Zichen continued to smile. When Director Wang’s face gradually turned the color of pig liver, he forcefully flung Director Wang’s hand. “I really don’t know what’s good about a shitty director. I’m warning you, don’t try anything with Sun Yige, otherwise, I’ll make it so that you can’t stay in Bingcheng anymore.”

With that, he picked up the bag that Sun Yige was more interested in initially, then handed to the clerk, who didn’t quite understand what was going on.

“Help me wrap this up please.”

At the same time, Ye Zichen pulled Sun Yige’s arm with a smile, “Let’s go.”

“Yige,” At this moment, Li Ya bit her lips as struggle arose in her eyes.

Ye Zichen turned his head with a smile and shook his head, “Since you chose this path, then don’t bother Sun Yige in the future anymore if you truly treat her as a friend.”

Sun Yige remained in low spirits ever since the two of them left the flagship store.

“You’re still thinking about your classmate just now?”

“Zichen, she... Lil’ Ya...”

“There’s no need for you to not dare to say it. She got taken by the director. Perhaps you might see her acting on television after a while. Of course, it is possible that you won’t be able to,” Ye Zichen replied mercilessly.

“Actually Ll’ Ya isn’t someone like that!” It was as if Sun Yige wanted to help her classmate explain.

Ye Zichen merely nodded, “This doesn’t have anything to do with me, I’m not going to marry her in the future, so what does it matter to me just how many people she slept with!”

“Perhaps she has her own difficulties!”

“Class Rep, should I say that you’re pretending to be naïve or should I say that you’re truly kind? Difficulties?” Ye Zichen’s eyes were filled with disdain. “I won’t deny that there are some unspoken rules to enter the entertainment industry. However, there are still a lot of famous ones that rose with their own abilities. In the face of fate, she did not choose to work hard, and instead chose to take the easy way out. You’re still saying that she

has her difficulties?”

“It’s better if you contact her less. Some people doesn’t care what means they use in order to reach their goal. I don’t know much about your friend, but I hold my suspicions of her.”

“Alright,” Sun Yige actually thought along the same lines at Ye Zichen, but the other person was a good friend of hers, so she kept on wanting to find an excuse for her.

However, Sun Yige knew very clearly about whether her friend was taken or not.

“Uhm... I’ll earn enough money to return the money for the bag to you,” Sun Yige bit her lips, and said, since she no long wanted to talk about the previous topic.

“There’s no need, this is my compensation.”

“My bag wasn’t this expensive, I’ll give you back the money.”

Seeing Sun Yige’s forceful look, Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly, “Alright, then I’ll wait for Class Rep to earn a lot in order to return the money to me.”

“Mhmm.”

After Ye Zichen sent Sun Yige back home, Liu Qing cracked her knuckles and muttered, “Harem +1.”

“Is there a need of always paying attention to this area of my life?” Ye Zichen revealed a speechless expression.

Liu Qing snorted as she pouted, “I like to, I just want to know, just how many girls are you, the scum, going to bring disaster to.”

What they didn’t know was that while Ye Zichen and Liu Qing argued.

A plane slowly landed at Bingcheng International Airport.

A tall red-haired girl, who was wearing a pair of aviator’s sunglasses, stood in the arrival hall with her luggage.

She smiled as she looked at the surrounding people, “This is the Modern Realm? Sweetie Baby, I came to look for you.”

...

Ye Zichen's dormitory was filled with cheers when the enemy Nexus exploded.

“Our win rate is truly spectacular with Ye-zi here.”

“Hahaha, Diamond!”

Ye Zichen's roommates were all very happy, especially Zhang Rui who was able to get promoted to a Diamond gatekeeper. From the looks of it, he was going to hook up with girls using this account.

“Gatekeeper, what's there to be happy about?” Zhu Yunbai said sourly. He was only in Plat III, the lowest out of everyone in the room.

“So what if I’m a gatekeeper? Isn’t a gatekeeper still better than you?” Zhang Rui acted like a successful petty person.

Zhu Yunbai rolled his eyes, then walked next to Ye Zichen, “Fifth Bro, duo queue and carry me when you have time...”

“Ol’ Five is really busy, how could he have the time for you,” Zhang Rui snickered.

Zhu Yunbai waved his fist towards Zhang Rui, then looked towards Ye Zichen in anticipation.

“We’ll see, if we have the chance.”

“Hahaha...” Zhang Rui laughed after hearing that. “I told you Ol’ Five has no time, see?”

“Tsk, Fifth Bro said there will be a chance!” Zhu Yunbai answered without backing down.

Seeing that the two of them were about to get into a fight, the boss of the dorm, Kang Peng, stood up from his chair and stretched, “Stop blabbering, we’ve played for the entire day, so let’s go and eat. Ye-zi, let’s go together?”

At this moment, Liu Qing, who was lying on Ye Zichen’s bed and playing with his phone, suddenly flew to Ye Zichen’s side. He looked at the girl...

“I’m not going, you guys go.”

After he sent away his roommates, Ye Zichen pursed his lips and shrugged, “My dear mistress, what orders do you have now?”

“Someone’s finding you on your phone,” Liu Qing replied in annoyance. She had just gotten to the climax of the doujinshi...

“Those deities sought me out again? Ignore them!”

Most of the deities that sought him out recently were either ones that congratulated him and Chang’e, or ones that wanted to know the details.

He didn’t want to cause trouble for himself, so just ignored everyone’s message.

“Are you certain that you’re not going to look?” Liu Qing pouted, then smiled as she blinked. “it seems like the one finding you is Xie Lei, you know?”

“Who?”

“Xie Lei!”

Zoom.

Ye Zichen took off his shoes and jumped onto the bed. Right when I wanted to look for the brat.

# Chapter 229 – Tall Guy, You Reincarnated

---

“Hey, I have business with you! Answer me!”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes while feeling Xie Lei’s extremely arrogant tone, which also caused him to want to flame Xie Lei.

If Liu Qing did not bring the phone over, Ye Zichen would have exploded upon seeing the brat’s tone.

Ye Zichen, calm down, you still have things to ask him for help.

Ye Zichen repeated it to himself a few times, then replied.

“I’m here!”

“I knew that you would be there,” Xie Lei’s message revealed unspeakable certainty. “I recently broke the Transformer you gave me, and Bu Er is getting a bit bored with the puzzle. Come and give us new ones.”

“You’re insane!”

Ye ZIchen truly couldn’t help it the instant he saw the message.

Who does he think he is? Xie Bian?

That commanding tone, what, does he think that I’m his servant? I need to give it to him just because he wants it, does he think that I owe him?

“What kind of tone are you taking with me?”

It was clear that Xie Lei had gotten angry.

Ye Zichen smiled, while a look of disdain appeared in his eyes.

“So what if I speak like that to you?” Ye Zichen sent the message, then typed extremely quickly. “The last time I sent you a Transformer was for our deal, now we don’t owe each other anything. What did you mean earlier? I owe you? Or am I your servant?”

“Don’t be so short-tempered!” Liu Qing patted Ye Zichen’s shoulders. “What are you arguing with him for? If you are unhappy, just ignore him. Actually, I dislike him quite a lot too.”

“I’m just annoyed.”

Ye Zichen caressed Liu Qing's hair, then sent another message in the chat with Xie Lei, who did not reply.

“Aren’t you guys, the Xie family, all about equivalent exchange? It’s okay if you want Transformers and puzzles! What are you going to use to trade with me?”

“What do you want?”

Xie Lei twitched his mouth and replied.

“Help me find a ghost, she only has a spiritual soul. Her name is Zhang Lingling, if you can help me find her, then I’ll give you a Transformer and a puzzle..”

“No problem!”

This was way too easy for him, who was a child of the Xie family. There were no ghosts that they, the Xie family, cannot find information on.

“I will help you find that soul as quick as possible, we’ll talk then.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei.  
Current intimacy level: 100.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: Friendly.

...

The intimacy level increased just like that. Also, that brat's level... He's a Level 1 Ghost Messenger.

This is even f\*cking higher than White Impermanence's rank.

Xie Bian definitely helped him level it up.

Ye Zichen retorted bitterly in his heart.

Liu Qing who stood on the side jumped in front of Ye Zichen with a giggle and stared at the phone in his hand, “Can you return the phone to me now?”

...

This girl... It seems like she really is addicted to doujinshis.

On the next day, while Ye Zichen was sleeping on the bed, he randomly heard endless footsteps and the sound of urging within the room.

Ye Zichen opened his eyes blurrily, and saw that all of his bros in the dorm had woken up.

“What time is it?”

Ye Zichen took out his phone to look at the time. It was only slightly more than eight.

“What did you guys wake up so early for?”

“For class! Ye Zichen, stop sleeping, hurry and wake up,” Zhang Rui hurried Ye Zichen, while he put on his vest.

Ye Zichen was confused.

Ye Zichen even suspected that he didn’t wake up yet. Zhang Rui actually woke up so early just for class.

Ye Zichen swept his gaze across the others in the room. Kang Peng and Bai Yu kept on posing and in front of the mirror. Meanwhile, Zhu Yunbai ran around the room in his slippers and a towel dangling from his shoulder, with a look of excitement on his face.

“Boss Kang is going to? I don’t think Bai Yu is in our faculty, right? What’s Zhu Yunbai going over there for?”

Pa.

At that moment, a phone flew towards Ye Zichen, while Zhang Rui spoke up, “Have a look.”

Major News: Polytechnic School Beauty Leaderboard might be Reshuffled.

At nine o'clock last night, this journalist received news that...

Ye Zichen took a simple glance at it, then chucked the phone to the side, uninterested.

No wonder these guys all acted like they were doped. So there was a transfer student coming.

Ye Zichen took a glance at the picture at the bottom. The face of the person could not be seen due to the dim light...

“Is there a need to be like this? Isn’t it just a transfer student!?”

“Are you blind? Can’t you see the title!? The Polytechnic School Beauty Leaderboard might be Reshuffled. What does this mean? The transfer student is a beauty!” Zhang Rui, who had gotten dressed, rolled his eyes.

At this moment, Zhu Yunbai, the youngest in the dorm, said weakly, “Don’t talk about school beauties with Fifth Bro. The school beauties of first year are all in his hands, would he care about this new transfer student...?”

This sentence was instantly agreed to by the others in the dorm.

When Ye Zichen felt the weird gazes of everyone else in the dorm, he laughed dryly and crawled up from the bed, “Uhm... I’ll get up immediately and have a look at the beauty of the transfer student.”

“You can look, but we’re going to make it clear now,” Kang Peng, who was full of muscles, walked over in a tight shirt that revealed his physique, while cracking his knuckles. “You have two school beauties by your side already, so don’t fight over her with your bros, do you understand?”

“Yeah, Ye-zi, you have enough women by your side, give us a chance,” Bai Yu also agreed.

“...” Ye Zichen, who sat on the bed, looked at the rest who stood on the same front and smiled wryly. “There isn’t a need to be like that, right? We haven’t even seen her yet... What’s more, there are tons of young and capable people in our Polytechnic University, are you sure that you guys can... can...”

The others were not affected by his argument at all. They replied together, “Hmph, who cares if we can or not, we have to deal with you, the school beauty harvester, first.”

“Who the f\*ck gave me this new nickname!”

“You can have a good relationship with the four school beauties and have an ambiguous relationship with both Su Yan and Xia Keke, what are you if you are not a school beauty harvester!” Zhang Rui’s face was full of disdain. If it wasn’t due to their

feelings of being roommates for two years, he would definitely beat Ye Zichen up.

Bai Yu nodded as well, while Kang Peng grabbed hold of Ye Zichen's arm and begged, "Ol' Five, we bros have had enough dog food. This time, let us bros give some dog food out, okay?"

"Fine, fine, I got it," Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly.

Since Ye Zichen woke up later, the others in the dorm didn't wait for him as they rushed to the classroom to grab some seats.

After Ye Zichen slowly got ready, Liu Qing flew over and teased with her hands behind her back, "Shouldn't you hurry up? You might miss the goddess later."

"Go stay in the corner."

“Tsk, you’re always mean to me!” The little ghost girl twitched her mouth in annoyance.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her, then rushed towards the teaching building.

“Hey...”

At this moment, a call sounded out behind Ye Zichen.

“Tall guy, you reincarnated.”

# Chapter 230 – Transfer Student

---

The girl smiled with her hands behind her back and tiptoed as she indicated towards Ye Zichen with her lips.

She wore short blue shorts, and a white T-shirt, while her hair was a flaming red, like fire.

“Tall guy, you reincarnated! I nearly didn’t recognize you. You’re shorter and whiter than before! But I like this look better!”

The girl wasn’t extremely tall, she was about 1.65 meters, so her calling Ye Zichen “tall guy” wasn’t too surprising. But what the hell was the thing she said afterwards...

Reincarnated!

Ye Zichen was very confused!

“Oh? Your memories haven’t awakened yet. Such a pity, I already came,” the girl indicated towards him. “Never mind, we’ll meet again. Bye bye.”

With that, she skipped away.

Ye Zichen scratched his head with a confused expression on his face.

What the hell!?

When Ye Zichen reached the classroom, it was the first time in two years that he had seen so many students in his faculty’s lesson.

The classroom of two hundred people was full, and even the corridor outside the classroom was full of people. Ye Zichen looked closely, and saw that it was all...

Guys!

“Is there really a need for this?”

“Ye-zi, hurry over here, we saved a spot for you,” Zhang Rui and his dorm mates waved towards him.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen walked over and raised his eyebrows, “The competition is huge!”

“Tsk, just them...” Zhang Rui’s expression was full of disdain. He looked at the people in the classroom, where everyone’s eyes

seemed to radiate a green light. “are nothing. But, I’m really curious about what that girl looks like...”

Ta ta ta.

Clear sounds of high heels sounded out from outside the classroom. The rowdy classroom instantly became so quiet that even a needle dropping could be heard...

The first to enter the classroom was the Kind Killer, Mu Jinglei. When she saw the people in the classroom...

A mocking smile surfaced on her pretty face, “Is our faculty that popular now?”

Everyone in the classroom laughed dryly, while Mu Jinglei also said towards the entrance, “Come in and feel the fire-like passion

of the male students of our Polytechnic University.”

Everyone's gazes shifted towards the classroom door. Not long later, a red-haired girl wearing short blue shorts and a white T-shirt walked in.

“Hi everyone!”

Ugh.

Ye Zichen, who sat in the middle of the room, nearly spat out.

Why is the transfer student this girl?

“Ye-zi, you already have School Beauty Su, so don’t get so excited, alright?” Zhang Rui rolled his eyes. “However, this girl is so cute, I like her!”

“Bro, how about we compete fairly?” Bai Yu added.

“Agreed!”

“Seconded!”

Ye Zichen looked at them speechlessly. Just when they were about to start competing fairly...

“Introduce yourself to everyone, the male students of our Polytechnic University are truly very passionate,” Mu Jinglei giggled.

Meanwhile, the girl also smiled, while her eyes turned into the shape of crescent moons, “Hello, everyone. My name is Lu Lu. The surname is the Lu of elks (麋鹿), my name is the Lu with a “wang” character (王) on the left hand side. I’m twenty years old, a Pisces, and single.”

“Girl, what kind of guy do you like?”

Someone shouted out in the classroom.

“Me? I like the type I like, this question isn’t cute at all.”

Wow.

“Wow, she’s got character!”

“So moe!”

“This girl is so cute!”

An intense discussion started in the classroom, while the eyes of Ye Zichen’s roommates became filled with hearts.”

“Lu Lu, so cute!”

“Enough, enough, quiet down!” Seeing that the classroom had turned into a mess, Mu Jinglei said with a frown. Then, the entire classroom instantly turned beyond quiet.

There was no helping it, the title of the Kind Killer was not just for show.

Mu Jinglei nodded in satisfaction when she saw the silenced classroom, then smiled towards Lu Lu, “Lu Lu, you can... Gentlemen, who is willing to give your seat to her?”

“Me...”

“Me...”

“Me...”

“No need, I found a spot that I like.”

Ignoring the calls of the male students in the classroom, Lu Lu walked towards Ye Zichen on her tip toes.

“Ye-zi!”

Ye Zichen’s roommates all revealed an excited expression and hoped that this girl would sit next to them.

Only Ye Zichen felt like the girl had come for him.

“This classmate...”

“Me?”

When he heard a cute voice beside his ear, Zhang Rui's entire was filled with unspeakable joy as if he hit jackpot.

“Yeah, can you give your seat to me?”

“No problem,” Zhang Rui stood up happily. Lu Lu nodded towards him with a smile, then sat down beside Ye Zichen.

“Hey, Tall Guy, we meet again.”

...

Zing zing zing!

Several tens of hostile gazes glared at Ye Zichen. The most hostile was clearly Zhang Rui's.

F\*ck!

The School Beauty Harvester did it again.

Zhang Rui had thought that he could gain a bit of favor with the girl by giving her his seat. F\*ck, I only helped someone else out!

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen's other roommates also looked at Ye Zichen as if they were going to eat him alive...

“Haha... Hello!” Ye Zichen nodded towards her with a dry smile.

Seriously...

“I told you that we’ll meet again, right?” Lu Lu’s eyes were like crescent mood as she said with a giggle. “Do you have a girlfriend right now? If you don’t, then what do you think about me? Can I be your girlfriend?”

When waves of dog food got mercilessly stuffed in the mouths of everyone in the classroom, a saying came true...

Wherever there is oppression, there is resistance!

“Laozi can’t stand it anymore!”

Since the Kind Killer just left, someone out shouted in the

classroom. Then, a hulk in a black vest walked over.

“Lu Lu, don’t be tricked by this guy.”

“How did he trick me?” Lu Lu tilted her head and muttered in confusion. “He didn’t say anything!”

“This brat... It’s this brat! He’s called Ye Zichen, he’s the famous School Beauty Harvester in Polytechnic University. All four school beauties are very close with him, and the top two even have an ambiguous relationship with him.”

“Grandson, did you come here to cause trouble?” At this moment, Kang Peng stood up.

Although they were angry with Ye Zichen, they did not find it right for someone not from their dorm to come over to point

fingers.

“What, laozi is wrong?” The hulk glared with his eyes wide open.

At this moment, Lu Lu pouted and said with a nod, “So it’s like that...”

“Yeah, Lu Lu, don’t fall into his demonic hands. The four school beauties are the examples!” The hulk continuously nodded, then showed off his biceps. “Lu Lu, if you feel like he tricked you, then I’ll help you teach him a lesson!”

However...

“Tall Guy, you’re living a pretty nice life!” Lu Lu smiled, while her eyes revealed no signs of unhappiness at all.

“Four school beauties, it seems like there was a thread when I came to this school that said that I’m the fifth school beauty? From the looks of it, I have to learn from my seniors. You don’t mind me joining, right?”

# Chapter 231 – Previous Life

---

The entire classroom was shocked.

No one expected that this new school beauty, who had just transferred to Polytechnic University, would be taken by the School Beauty Harvester so randomly.

Even Ye Zichen looked at the girl in confusion.

“Ye Zichen, I’m never going to be done with you!”

Someone shouted in the classroom, causing everyone else to shout the same. Not long later, only ten-odd students remained in the classroom that was once full.

“Ye-zi!”

Ye Zichen's roommates also smiled wryly.

Kang Peng even sighed, then patted Ye Zichen's shoulder, "Bless you."

With that, Ye Zichen's roommates left the classroom in depression. A hint of a smile surfaced on Lu Lu's face in secret, but she still tilted her head, "Why did they all leave?"

"... Girl, you truly kill without being detected!" Ye Zichen let out a long sigh towards Lu Lu, then stood up from his seat and left.

"Hey, Tall Guy, don't leave!"

Not long later, the rest of the students in the classroom also left in pairs and threes. When Mu Jinglei returned and saw the empty classroom...

“Where did they all go!?”

...

On the sports field of Polytechnic University.

Ye Zichen sat on the grass, while an undeniable helpless expression was on his face.

“Girl, just what’s with you?”

While they sat on the grass, male students would look over at Ye Zichen with a hostile look once in awhile.

Lu Lu, who sat beside him used her hand to block the sun, tilted her head and asked with a cute expression, “What’s with me, what do you mean?”

“You tell me what’s with you!” Ye Zichen turned and looked straight at her. “Why did you have to say that in class just now? Also, can you stop following me!?”

“Because that’s what I feel in my heart. I just want to follow you, is that not okay?”

“Seriously...” Ye Zichen stood up in annoyance. Since I can’t deal with her, I’ll just avoid her!

However, before he could even take a few steps, Lu Lu followed him once again like a shadow.

“What exactly do you want!?”

“Why are you being so mean!” Lu Lu frowned, while her bright eyes began to water. “You weren’t anything like this in your past life!”

“...”

“You loved to follow me in your past life! Even if I chased you away, you would still follow me. This time, I’m following you, but you’re actually so mean to me! If I knew this beforehand, then I wouldn’t have come to find you!” Lu Lu wrinkled her face as if she would cry at any moment.

Ye Zichen's expression stiffened as he looked meaningfully at Lu Lu.

“You...”

“You what?” Lu Lu frowned.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt like his brain was no longer enough.

Past life.

Do people really have a past life?

Ye Zichen looked at Lu Lu in confusion, then sat down on the grass and asked curiously, “Did I really have a past life?”

“Of course,” Lu Lu sat down right beside him. “I found you according to the smell of your past life, but you aren’t cute at all in this life.”

“Really?”

“You don’t remember anything at all?” Lu Lu raised her eyebrows. When she saw Ye Zichen’s confused look, she pouted. “I told you before that you can become a deity if you ate that inner core, but you just refused!”

“...”

Every single one of Lu Lu's sentences completely challenged Ye Zichen's understanding of the world.

Even though his heart kept on telling him not to continue asking since that might cause him unnecessary trouble.

He still couldn't help but to want to know everything.

"What kind of person was I in my previous life?"

"You?" Lu Lu smiled, then said with a faint blush. "You were very cute in your previous life, very smart, and very responsible. You were also very heroic."

"Is that so?" Ye Zichen was momentarily stunned. From the sound of it, my previous life was pretty amazing.

But why do I feel like I've lost to my previous life?

"But you had a lot of girl friends around you at the time. After you died, some of them did seem to have reincarnated with you, but I can't compare up to them in regards to that. However, actually, I wanted to reincarnate with you..." Lu Lu bit her lips and wanted to speak, but then stopped herself. After a long time, she suddenly stood up and stuck her nose next to Ye Zichen's and looked him straight in the eye. "You have to believe me, there is a reason why I didn't reincarnate with you."

Gulp.

Ye Zichen furiously gulped...

She was too close. He could even feel her breath and smell the faint fragrance of her body.

Ye Zichen's heart started to race. At that very moment...

“Ye Zichen!” A beyond furious roar sounded out.

Ye Zichen's body shuddered when he heard that.

Lu Lu also looked behind her, “Oh...?”

“Oh what?”

Xia Keke put her hands on her waist, while Su Yan, who was squinting as she hugged her shoulders, stood behind her.

“Don’t you know that Ye Zichen is Su Yan’s and my boyfriend? You aren’t learning the right stuff at such a young age and actually learnt to seduce someone else’s boyfriend!”

“You don’t recognize me anymore?” Lu Lu tilted her head and pointed at herself.

Hearing that, Xia Keke rolled her eyes, “Who wants to recognize you!”

With that, she grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm, “I look away for just a moment, and you’re flirting with others already. Hurry up and leave, have no more contact with this girl in the future.”

As Lu Lu saw that Ye Zichen and co. wanted to leave, Lu Lu frowned, then wanted to follow.

“Don’t follow us, don’t think that we can be pushed around. If you piss me off, I know how to fight too!” Xia Keke glared at Lu Lu fiercely.

Only then did Lu Lu stop, twitch her mouth and muttered, “Why are you so mean? You fought over him with me in your previous life, but I didn’t act like this either!”

A hint of sadness suddenly surfaced on her face, while an unforgettable scene appeared in her mind.

“Su Yan, Xia Liuli, stop!”

A woman that wore expensive clothing ran forward as she lifted her skirt with her right hand. Two women stood in front of her, both of them were so dazzling that she was unable to compare up to them.

“Lu Lu? What did you come here for? Didn’t you decide not to be with him anymore?” Xia Liuli frowned, meanwhile, a black door stood behind her and Su Yan.

“I... Are you two really going to reincarnate with him?”

“What?” Su Yan answered with a slightly cold tone, while she looked at Lu Lu with cat-like eyes and an unexplainable smile. “Can’t we?”

“No, why must you reincarnate over and over again with a mortal? What do you two get out of it? He won’t have his memories of his previous life after reincarnation. Didn’t you two tell me yourselves that staying by him, who doesn’t remember you, is extremely painful?” Lu Lu shouted with a frown.

Su Yan and Xia Keke both smiled.

“However, if we don’t follow him, we’ll be in even more pain! Indeed, he didn’t recognize us these few lives, but there will be a day that he remembers us... How special is he... You, who was lucky in this life, should understand this more clearly than us. The future you will truly regret it!”

Su Yan and Xia Keke looked at each other with a smile, then stepped into that black gate together.

“I really should have chosen to reincarnate. I clearly had the upper hand during his previous life, but during this life, the two of you got to his side first! To be honest, I am regretting it!”

## Chapter 232 – Spiritual Soul Found

---

“Ye Zichen, you truly are amazing! A new transfer student that didn’t even recognize all the classmates in her class has been already done in by you,” Xia Keke frowned, while her face revealed her displeasure.

Ye Zichen scratched his head, “How did you two know about this?”

Everything had happened in less than half an hour, even the school’s gossip writers didn’t manage to draft anything up yet. The two of them weren’t even students in my faculty, so how did they find out?

Also, Polytechnic University is huge, how did they find me?

“Hmph, Susu and I have more fans in Polytechnic than you can imagine. We know about every single one of your actions. I’ll tell you the truth, a sports student wearing a black vest told us.”

A figure instantly surfaced in Ye Zichen's mind.

“This grandson knows how to plot quite well!”

“What? You are pissed that you got reported?” Xia Keke pouted and said to Su Yan. “Susu, how do you think we should deal with him?”

“Him?” An emotionless look arose in Su Yan’s eyes. “Let him fend for himself!”

With that, the two of them ignored Ye Zichen and left.

“As a man, you should chase after them in this sort of situation. What if they get angry?” Liu Qing pouted as she looked at the two fleeting images.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, “It seems like you don’t know them well enough. They’re going shopping...”

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone in his pocket rang. He took the phone out...

Xie Lei: The one you wanted me to find is Zhang Lingling, right?

Xie Lei: I found that spiritual soul.

Ye Zichen was stunned when he saw the news.

Knowing people in power is truly great. He found her so easily?

“You sure you found the right one and aren’t tricking me, right!?”

“Why would I trick you!?”

Xie Lei sat beside a stone table in the garden, while a weird girl, who always carried a smile on her face, stood beside him.

The girl would pat and hit Xie Lei at times, but no one in the garden would dare to stop her...

“Hurry up and bring the Transformer and puzzle over, then bring this girl away. I’m about to be tortured to death.”

“...”

What’s going on?

Zhang Lingling’s spiritual soul could actually torture Xie Lei. Isn’t that brat the most suitable for dealing with ghosts?

“You can’t be tricking me, right?”

“Big Bro, I’m not lying. I’m begging you, hurry over to bring this female ghost away. I’m truly scared.”

“Alright, then I’ll go and buy the stuff for the exchange. How do I get over to your place?”

“Just tell me after you finish buying it, I’ll open the door for you!”

“Sure!”

When Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket, Liu Qing asked curiously, “Xie Bian’s grandson actually got dealt with by a ghost?”

“Who knows...” Ye Zichen shrugged. “That brat might me

tricking me. How about not following me there?”

“I refuse!” Liu Qing replied forcefully.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but smile when he saw her pouting. He rubbed her head, “Fine, then follow me, but remember to hide in the Dragon Eye if there is danger.”

At the same time, at Xie Lei’s manor.

“Hey, Lil’ Lei-zi, you want to send me away again so much!?” The girl instantly glared at Xie Lei when she saw the news, and placed her hands on her waist.

“Mistress, I’m begging you, can you calm down? Someone will be picking you up later. It’s better if we never meet again!” Xie Lei’s face frowned like an old eggplant!

It truly is weird!

I, Xie Lei, is Xie Bian's grandson. No other person of my generation had a higher official position than me.

Level 1 Ghost Messenger. That was a status that many ghosts will never be able to reach in their entire life.

However, after he invited this mistress back, he noticed that...

This mistress had a higher official position than him. Not only could he not control her, he had to be bullied by her.

“Lil’ Lei-zi, doing that is wrong. Are you not happy when you play with me?” The girl pouted unhappily.

Xie Lei smiled coyly and did not reply.

Not long later, the girl twitched her mouth, then floated beside Bu Er...

Zoom.

Bu Er shrunk his neck and instantly hid behind Xie Lei, while his lifeless eyes were filled with fear and respect towards the girl...

“You guys aren’t fun at all!” The little ghost girl pouted. “Why did you guys bring me over if you aren’t going to play with me? I was rather happy at the Ten Yama King’s place.”

“Do you think I would have brought you over if I knew this would happen?” Xie Lei muttered quietly.

Zhang Lingling raised her eyebrows, “Lil’ Lei-zi, what did you say?”

“Nothing... I didn’t say anything,” Xie Lei quickly shook his hands.

However, a devilish smile surfaced on Zhang Lingling’s face. “No, I clearly heard you say bad things about me just now. I’m going to punish you!”

Not long later, pitiful and terrible screams rang out in the back garden...

“What’s going on with Xie Lei? Why has he still not replied?”

Ye Zichen stood at the entrance to a mall, and frowned as he looked at his chat with Xie Lei that had no reply.

Was this grandson messing with me?

Thinking that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but send ten-odd messages more.

“I opened the gate for you. Come in!”

A reply suddenly popped up on Ye Zichen’s screen. He turned around, and saw a huge black gate standing behind him.

He looked at the reaction of the bystanders. It seems like they can't see this gate.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then walked towards it.

“Mistress...”

The moment he entered the gate, Ye Zichen heard Xie Lei's endless screams. Meanwhile, a ghost girl chased after Xie Lei to hit him, while giggling like a silver bell.

What's going on?

Ye Zichen swept his gaze over the guards in the garden. They acted like they didn't see anything, and didn't make any moves to

stop the ghost girl.

Suddenly, a chilling wind blew by Ye Zichen. He looked to the side, and saw Bu Er reach out his hand and tilt his head, “Puzzle!”

“What’s going on? Xie Lei’s getting beaten up, shouldn’t you guys go and help?” Ye Zichen did not immediately hand it to him, and instead indicated towards Xie Lei and the ghost girl, who were running around the garden, with his mouth.

“She, strong. Can’t hit!”

“Oh?” At that moment, the ghost girl, who had been chasing after Xie Lei stopped, tilted her head, then neared Ye Zichen.

Bu Er, who stood beside him, quickly ran away. Ye Zichen also gulped, and waved his hand with a dry smile.

Just how strong is this girl? She could actually beat up Xie Lei to the point that he was unable to fight back.

Then, Ye Zichen thought about how he was actually a mortal, and that he had a proper reason to come looking for the ghost girl...

“Girl, you’re Zhang Lingling, right?”

The ghost girl didn’t reply, and instead walked around him in circles with her head tilted. Meanwhile, she also kept on sniffing the smell on his body.

...

Ye Zichen was beyond awkward. Getting smelled by a ghost...

Was truly a new experience.

Just as he was about to bring up Yu, the ghost girl leaped onto him with a joyous expression.

“It really is you! Did you come to get me?”

# Chapter 233 – Gongsheng, You Changed

---

The ghost girl's face was full of joy. She hugged Ye Zichen's arm closely, and leaned her cheek against his shoulder, while an indescribable happiness could be seen from her expression.

“I missed you so much, and waited you for so long.”

Ye Zichen stiffened!

He stood on the spot, completely shocked.

What the hell!?

Why do I keep bumping into these sort of strange situations recently?

Ugh....

Liu Qing, who was at the side, frowned and pouted.

“Boss Ye, you finally came,” Xie Lei had a sluggish expression and messy hair like a chicken nest, when he replied lethargically. “I helped you find this mistress, hurry up and take her away.”

“Lil’ Lei-zi!” The moment the ghost girl spoke up, Xie Lei immediately smiled coyly, but he kept on passing a silent message towards Ye Zichen with his expression.

Hurry up and take this mistress away.

“Here. The Transformer and puzzle for you two,” Ye Zichen

handed over the items, then turned his head to look at the ghost girl that was hugging his arm. “Are you Zhang Lingling?”

“Zhang Lingling?” The ghost tilted her head, then muttered as she rolled her eyes. “It seems like I am called Zhang Lingling!”

“...”

What the hell? Did she lose her memories with the spiritual soul?

“Give me an actual answer. This is rather important to me,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance.

The ghost girl placed the tip of her index finger on her lips, “Sure, I am indeed called Zhang Lingling in this life.... But why do you have to find the me of this life?”

The people I've bumped into recently are all strange people.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Zhang Lingling's spiritual soul,  
“What? Am I supposed to be looking for your previous life?”

When they finally left Xie Lei's rear garden, Ye Zichen was truly speechless towards Zhang Lingling's spiritual soul.

She's so clingy!

“Gongsheng. did you go to the Underworld just to find me?”

Ji Gongsheng (姬宮涅) is the name of King You, the 12th emperor of the Zhou Dynasty. He is known as a foolish emperor that lit the warning beacons in order to make his queen, Bao Si (褒姒), laugh.

“You got the right person, right?” Ye Zichen looked at her

speechlessly. “I’m not Gongsheng or whatever. I’m Yu’s friend, he told me to come and find you.”

“Oh him!” Zhang Lingling’s tone carried a faint hint of disdain. “I’m truly pitiful in this life, my dad died early, my uncle’s also a retard. When I think about it, Gongsheng truly treats me the best...”

With that, the ghost girl leaned her head against Ye Zichen’s shoulder once again.

“This is pissing me off!” Liu Qing stomped her foot, bit her lips and snorted towards Ye Zichen before flying back into the Dragon Eye.

Zhang Lingling muttered when she saw Liu Qing, who disappeared, “Gongsheng, who is that woman... Why is she always by your side!”

“Beauty, did you make a mistake? I’ve already told you so many times that I’m not Gongsheng! Do you not understand what I’m saying?”

“Gongsheng, I’m [Bao Si](#), don’t you remember me?”

Bao Si (褒姒) is the queen that King You wanted to please by lighting the warning beacons

“I’ll just treat this as your soul being incomplete, so you’re just spouting nonsense.”

Bao Si!

Why is this girl even more delusional than me? It was whatever that she thought that she’s Bao Si, she even said that I’m King You of the Zhou Dynasty!

Isn't there something wrong with her?

King You of the Zhou Dynasty. That's a story from several thousand years ago!

I seriously don't know why Yu cares about this girl so much...

“Gongsheng...” Zhang Lingling frowned unhappily. “Gongsheng, is that girl your new love? Back then, you lit the warning beacons and messed with the nobles in order to get me to laugh, did you forget about all of that?”

“How could I forget!” A hint of kindness surfaced on Ye Zichen’s face. He used his hand to caress Zhang Lingling’s hair, then immediately rolled his eyes. “Even our primary school textbooks have the story of King You messing with the nobles by lighting the warning beacons. Also, it’s fine if you want to cosplay as Bao Si! Then can you act more realistically? Why did King You have to do that to get Bao Si to laugh? It’s because Bao Si didn’t want to react to him! If you truly want to be Bao Si and think that I’m King You, then don’t be nice to me!”

“Gongsheng, you’ve changed...” Zhang Lingling shook her head sadly, while an indescribable loneliness could be heard from her voice. “Back then, you lit the warning beacons and messed with the nobles for me, causing them to lose their trust in you, making you lose the war and getting me captured. Only when that had happened, did I finally know how important I was to you, and was extremely moved... You...”

“Stop blabbering, I’m going to call the police!”

...

Within an apartment, Ye Zichen sat on the sofa in the living room, while Zhang Lingling sat beside him with an unhappy expression.

“I found the spiritual soul for you...”

“I can see that,” Yu nodded. “But this spiritual soul is a bit strange.”

“Strange? I’m nearly got tortured to death by her along the way,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes furiously.

Zhang Lingling bit her lips and twitched her mouth, “Ji...”

Here we go again!

Ye Zichen raised his hand to cover Zhang Lingling’s mouth, then squinted his eyes, “Which room is Zhang Lingling in?”

Yu pointed it out with his fingers. Ye Zichen covered Zhang Lingling's mouth and brought her to her room.

Zhang Lingling laid on the bed with a pale look, while her frowning brows causing people to can't help but feel pity.

“Hurry up and go back in, your body is suffering.”

“I don't want to go back,” The spiritual body Zhang Lingling twitched her mouth. “This chick's an idiot, she's stupid and dumb, totally lacking in my elegance from back then...”

“Just go in if you want!” Ye Zichen shouted, then turned around to leave.

The spiritual body Zhang Lingling pouted and stopped him. Then she bit her lips, “Alright, stop getting angry, I'll just go back. But I

might not remember you, Gongsheng..."

"If you're going back in, then hurry!"

"I'm going, I'm going, but you have to remember me. I'm Bao Si!"

With that, the spiritual body Zhang Lingling went into Zhang Lingling's original body from the center of her brows.

Within a chaotic ocean, a girl squatted in the center as she covered her eyes and sobbed.

"Hey, pitiful little girl," Bao Si hugged her shoulders as she stood at a close distance from the girl.

Hearing her voice, the girl looked up in confusion.

“Seriously, why did I reincarnate into your body?” Bao Si’s expression carried indescribable impatience.

The girl looked up, then walked over, and in doing so, she even fell over once.

“You’re asking me who I am? I’m you!” Bao Si’s face was full of annoyance. “Say, aside from inheriting my face, why else did you inherit? How can a person be as dumb as you!”

“I’m not dumb, my daddy and uncle said that this is cute,” Zhang Lingling bit her lips and pouted. “I don’t like you, go away.”

“Hey... Do you really think that I wanted to come in?” Bao Si

replied speechlessly. “If Gongsheng-gege didn’t tell me to come in, do you think I would want to be with a stupid person like you?”

“I said it already, I’m not stupid!” Zhang Lingling shouted.

Bao Si smiled, then twitched her mouth, “Hehe, only your daddy thinks that you’re not dumb, but how did he end up...?”

“Daddy was... by bad guys...” Zhang Lingling muttered, then started to cry.

“Such a pitiful child,” A hint of softness flashed across Bao Si’s eyes. She squatted beside Zhang Lingling’s body and hugged her. “In the future, older sister will accompany you. As for those bad guys, older sister will help you take revenge.”

Original Chapter Teaser:

Ghost Girl: Gongsheng! (snuggles up to Ye Zichen)

Ye Zichen: What's going on?

Xie Lei: Give me the puzzle and Transformer quickly, then take her away!

(The ghost girl glares at Xie Lei)

Xie Lei: Uhm... Never mind. I didn't say anything.

Liu Qing: Let go of him!

Ghost Girl: Who are you? He's my Gongsheng! Go away!

Liu Qing: No, you go away! Stop stealing my niche! I'm the cute ghost girl, not you!

Ye Zichen: Wait a mo' you two! Stop fighting right now. Or rather, before you start fighting, can someone please tell me what the heck is going on!

# **Chapter 234 – The God Of Fortune Borrowing Cultivation Experience**

---

The world instantly turned a lot more peaceful.

Ye Zichen stretched lazily and left the bedroom with a satisfied look, when he saw that Yu had already kneeled down in the doorway.

“Stand up and speak.”

“Thank you so much. I owe you for this favor.”

Yu’s gaze was full of sincerity. Ye Zichen side and helped him up from the floor, then exchanged cultivation experience for two Spring-Returning Pills, which he chucked into Yu’s hands.

“These are for you. It might help Zhang Lingling when she wakes up.”

“These... Are too valuable,” Yu hesitated and did not accept the pills.

Ye Zichen acted like he was angry, “Just take it if I tell you to! Why are you so troublesome?!”

“Then, I thank you,” Yu nodded thankfully.

Towards this, Ye Zichen smiled. Then he crossed his legs and took out a cigarette, which he lit for himself before raising his eyebrows, “How is it? What has Huo Da done recently?”

“He...” Yu squinted his eyes. “He doesn’t seem to have done anything recently, but I did hear some news about you outside his

door last time.”

“About me?” Ye Zichen was stunned, then asked curiously.  
“What did you hear?”

When Ye Zichen returned home from Yu’s place, his face was full of a faint mocking smile.

That brat, Huo Da, is truly rather capable. I had thought that it was just the Drug Administration being insatiable, but in the end, he was acting that way because of Huo Da.

He wants Xiao Yumei to go and beg him...

Haha!

He probably never dreamed that the number one young master in Bingcheng invested in Xiao Yumei's medical company.

“Boss Ye,” Third Fatty Jin ran over flatteringly with a plate of fruits. Ye Zichen glanced at him...

He seems to have gotten fatter.

“Say, Fatty, it’s not good that you stay at my place every day like a lord,” Ye Zichen picked up an apple from the fruit plate and took a bite. “I’m not criticizing you, but look at your fat...”

“Boss, what do you think I should do?”

“You...”

Dingdong.

The phone on the tea table vibrated. Third Fatty Jin picked up it to have a look.

“Boss, the God of Fortune mentioned you in the group!”

God of Fortune?

“Give me the phone!”

Ye Zichen received the phone Third Fatty Jin handed over and clicked open WeChat...

It wasn't in the Heavenly Court's group.

It was in the Red Packet Server he had created.

God of Fortune: @Only Idealism!

God of Fortune: @Only Idealism!

God of Fortune: @Only Idealism!

Canopy Marshal: God of Fortune, even if you ask Sky Sovereign, he wouldn't lend it to you.

Erlang Shen: Yeah, what's more, you're a rich person, why do you need to borrow from my bro?

God of Fortune: You guys don't get it. I used all my cultivation experience for directional investment, which is in its key moments now, so I can't withdraw it.

Yue Lao: Come to me. 3% Interest!

Ye Zichen was confused as he looked at the messages in the group. Why did the chat sound like the God of Fortune wanted to get a usurious loan?

The God of Fortune getting a usurious loan!

How's that possible!

No matter the times, there were always plenty of people worshipping the God of Fortune. It could be said that the God of Fortune was an evergreen tree in the Heavenly Court...

What's more, since he was the god in charge of wealth, he did not seem like someone that lacked money!

“Cough, cough, God of Fortune came to my group as well. Have a look at the chat name. This is the Red Packet Server, you must give our red packets when you enter!”

Canopy Marshal: Sky Sovereign, how is it going with you and Chang'e?

Erlang Shen: Chang'e announced the relationship! Bro, amazing!

Old Lord Taishang: Hmph!

F\*ck, when did Old Lord Taishang enter the group?

“@Old Lord Taishang, don’t snort here. Send red packets when you enter the group!”

Dingdong.

At this moment, a large red packet appeared on the screen.

Ye Zichen quickly clicked on it.

You received the God of Fortune's Red Packet.

You gained the title: Flowing Profits x1.

Flowing Profits (Title): Wearer's fortune of wealth +1.

It didn't say anything useful, but +1 Fortune of Wealth is better than nothing.

Withdraw.

Do you want to equip the Flowing Profits (Title)?

Yes.

Dingdong.

You have equipped Flowing Profits (Title).

The moment the system notified Ye Zichen of the title being equipped, Ye Zichen subconsciously looked above him...

It seems like it wasn't like games where the title was shown above his head.

Canopy Marshal: God of Fortune really is failing.

Erlang Shen: Three gold ingots, God of Fortune is truly shameful!

God of Fortune: @Only Idealism, Sky Sovereign, I have some matters that I would like to discuss with you.

Not long later, the God of Fortune's friend request was shown in Ye Zichen's contact list. Ye Zichen immediately clicked accept without thinking.

“Sky Sovereign.”

God of Fortune's profile pic looked rather similar to the pictures of the God of Fortune that would be stuck on the walls during Chinese New Year. He wore a large red robe, while gold ingots flew around him.

Ye Zichen habitually looked at the intimacy level.

200.

Trusted.

This was the first time Ye Zichen had seen a starting intimacy level be so high.

“What business does the God of Fortune have with this sovereign?”

“Sky Sovereign, I’m going to say it directly, I want to borrow some cultivation experience from you.”

God of Fortune borrowing cultivation experience. This would definitely cause a huge shock to the entirety of the Heavenly Court if others found out about it.

Even Ye Zichen was stunned for a long time before he finally replied.

“You said that you want to borrow cultivation experience from me?”

“Yes,” Although it was a bit shameful for the God of Fortune to borrow cultivation experience from others, the God of Fortune continued to reply. “Recently, the Sky Sovereign’s business in our Heavenly Court is great. You definitely have quite a bit of cultivation experience on hand. If you aren’t using the cultivation experience, it is a waste for you to keep it lying around. You might as well entrust it to this little deity, and allow this little deity to help celestial sovereign to do some investments?”

“...”

Why did he sound like a bank clerk?

But when I think about it, the God of Fortune is actually right, the cheapest secret scripture in the Treasure Shop cost a million cultivation experience.

Recently, Xiao Yumei's company had not yet gone on track, and even if she needed pills, several tens of thousands of cultivation experience was enough to support it.

Then I'll still have several hundred thousand cultivation experience on hand!

"I can lend two hundred thousand cultivation experience to you, but I want to know what I can get."

Two hundred thousand!

The God of Fortune, who gripped his phone frowned. He thought that the Sky Sovereign would start from at least a million.

But due to the mindset that even something tiny was still something...

“Sky Sovereign, I can help you manage your finances and double your cultivation experience!”

He is seriously bank clerk!

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly, then smiled.

“I don’t need my cultivation experience to be doubled.”

“Then you...”

“Cultivation experience isn’t that important to this sovereign, so it’s not impossible for me to gift this cultivation experience to you!”

“Are you for real!” Then very quickly, the God of Fortune added.  
“What do I need to give up?”

“Smart!”

Ye Zichen snapped and smiled.

“As the God of Fortune, you should be in charge of the fortune of mortal families, right?”

“Naturally!” The God of Fortune nodded in certainty. “The prospering of mortal families all rely on a single one of my thoughts.”

“Good!”

Ye Zichen licked his lips and smiled.

“Then I want you to help me deal with a mortal family. That is the capital’s Huo family, one of their children is Huo Da. I don’t know anything else. I want this family to fall!”

# Chapter 235 – Three-Striped Soul-Clearing Heaven-Returning Pill GET!

---

“Uhm...”

The God of Fortune showed a bit of hesitation when he saw the message. He did have some impression of the Huo family.

It was a rather large family-run financial group. It was one that did worship him. If he were to intentionally destroy this Huo family's fortune, then it really would disappoint his worshippers.

“Why is Sky Sovereign making me make a move on the Huo family?”

“The Huo family has a grudge with me, is that enough explanation?” Ye Zichen sent the message over, then followed it up with another. “You might not know, just because the Huo family has a bit of money, they have been committing all sorts of evil, and even hired an assassin to kill me...”

“This actually happened!?”

The God of Fortune was stunned. The people from this Huo family were truly daring, they actually dared to make a move on the Sky Sovereign.

“Sky Sovereign, don’t worry about what you asked. I definitely will make the Huo family pay the corresponding price.”

Actually, the God of Fortune merely said it to give himself a psychological hint and to give himself an excuse.

Between his worshippers and two hundred thousand cultivation experience, he chose two hundred thousand cultivation experience.

“Then I’ll be counting on you.”

The moment Ye Zichen sent the message out, he saw the God of Fortune speak up in the group.

God of Fortune: @Old Lord Taishang @Erlang Shen @Canopy Marshal @Yue Lao, fight me if you dare!

Erlang Shen: Oh wow, you still dare to play? @Only Idealism, bro, you lent him money?

Canopy Marshal: This marshal is ready any time.

Old Lord Taishang: If Yue Lao is joining, then this old man will play with you youngsters.

Ye Zichen: @Old Lord Taishang, play after you send the red packet. Didn't you see that the God of Fortune has already sent one? Why didn't I see yours?"

Old Lord Taishang: Why should I send it just because you told me to? The heck are you!?

This stubborn old man was clearly still salty about Ye Zichen kicking him out of the group. What's more, he had entered the group to make new friends to play cards with, and he didn't know who the owner of the group was.

"Hehe, why? Who am I? I'm the admin! You tell me why! You tell me who I am!"

This stubborn geezer, he's got a temper.

When Old Lord Taishang saw the message within the group, he put away his phone and raised his eyebrows at Yue Lao, who was sitting rather close to him.

“Why didn’t you tell me that this is that brat, Nameless’s, group? Didn’t you say that it was a card game group?

“That is what it is, I didn’t lie to you,” Yue Lao stroked his beard. “Don’t all of the people in the group play Landlord? However, this group was indeed created by Sky Sovereign Nameless.”

“Then let’s make a new group, I don’t want to be in the same group as him.”

“That’s going to be hard,” Yue Lao shook his head. “Both Canopy Marshal and Erlang Sheng, who are in the group, are on good terms with Sky Sovereign Nameless. The God of Fortune also just

borrowed some cultivation experience from Sky Sovereign, while I'm Sky Sovereign's spokesperson. Do you think..."

"..."

Old Lord Taishang's expression stiffened, but it was obvious from his appearance that...

He was in a terrible mood.

Yue Lao sighed, then reached out to pat his old friend, "You're just too stubborn. I also found out why Sky Sovereign kicked you out then. Sky Sovereign said that you took advantage of his situation and raised the price when he bought a pill from you?"

"... Ah! I did!" Old Lord Taishang nodded. "But it wasn't that much, I only asked him for a thousand cultivation experience for

my celestial graded pill!"

"Don't you know what Sky Sovereign is like? How could he not get angry when you took advantage of his situation? I think that if there really is no other way, just submit once. We're all comrades in the Heavenly Court, why do we need to make our relationship so tense?"

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Old Lord Taishang increased by 100.  
Current intimacy level: Friendly.

Dingdong.

Old Lord Taishang has sent you a friend request.

Friend request message: Give each other a way out and treat it as nothing happened.

Ye Zichen was stunned when he saw that.

This was definitely a great thing for him. He was just struggling to find a way to get back on good terms with Old Lord Taishang when this geezer actually took the initiative to make peace.

Dingdong.

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign, I just had a chat with Old Lord Taishang, I think that you guys can bury the hatchet.

So Yue Lao was the one behind it.

Not bad, it was a good move!

“Since Yue Lao said that, then I’ll give you face.”

The moment he sent the reply to Yue Lao, Ye Zichen instantly agreed to Old Lord Taishang’s friend request.

Dingdong.

The moment he accepted the friends request, Old Lord Taishang sent him a red packet.

Old Lord Taishang: This old man has not yet congratulated Sky

Sovereign for Sky Sovereign's good news with Chang'e. Please accept this simple gift.

He even sent a red packet!

Ye Zichen quickly clicked on the red packet.

You received Old Lord Taishang's red packet.

Three-striped Soul-Clearing Heaven-Returning Pill x1.

Ye Zichen's hand shuddered.

He nearly chucked out the phone in his hands.

This...

Isn't this the last pill requested to revive Liu Qing!?

Three-striped Soul-Clearing Heaven-Returning Pill: The product of Old Lord Taishang's hard work. It is produced by taking the essences of the world, then refined by a cauldron that Old Lord Taishang controlled for forty nine days.

Effect: A necessary item to form a celestial spirit's body.

“Thank you, Old Lord Taishang!”

At that moment, Ye Zichen didn't know what words he should use to describe his thanks either. He didn't expect Old Lord Taishang to actually send the pill to him. My luck is too great!

“Sky Sovereign is too courteous. A few days ago, True Lord Erlang suddenly told me that he wanted to win this pill from me. I thought about it, and thought that only Sky Sovereign needs the pill.”

People were truly smarter the older they got. He actually guessed it just like that!

But, why did he suck so much at Landlord!

“Old Lord, thank you so much!”

“Haha, Sky Sovereign is too courteous. Not going to reply

anymore, the God of Fortune told me to go and play Landlord again, let's chat again when we have time.

“Sure.”

Ye Zichen left the chat, then hurriedly ran to his bedroom.

Back then, King Chujiang said that reviving Ling Qing requires a thousand-years dragon eye, a Three-Striped Soul-Clearing Heaven-Returning Pill, Nine Heart lotus roots, as well as rootless water that Soul Pearl Yiyuan had soaked in for forty nine days.

Not that everything is assembled, the only thing left was the rootless water, which Soul Pearl Yiyuan did not soak in for long enough.

“King Chujiang!”

Dingdong.

The phone of King Chujiang, who was sitting within a hall of the underworld as he looked over the new files that were given to him, vibrated. He placed the writing brush to the side and picked up the phone...

Why did the person I didn't want to see the most seek me out?

It could be said that Ye Zichen was the person the Ten Yama Kings didn't want to see the most after the monkey.

“Master, I’m here!”

“Let me ask you, for the method of revival, if Soul Pearl Yiyuan did not soak in the rootless water long enough, would it affect the success rate of revival?”

“Of course it would,” King Chujiang answered patiently. “None of those treasures can be lacking, nor can the time be any less, otherwise...”

Wait!

What did that master say just now...?

King Chujiang quickly scrolled up the chat history to read the information.

At the same time, Ye Zichen was getting troubled as he looked at King Chujiang’s message. It seems like Soul Pearl Yiyuan has to

soak in rootless water for two more days in order to revive Liu Qing.

At that very moment, King Chujiang sent another message over.

“Master, you-you collected all the fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan?”

“No shit, what would I seek you out for if I hadn’t!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “Alright, when it’s soaked in rootless water for long enough, then I’ll contact you.”

Zoom.

King Chujiang felt a chill down his back!

Impossible, a normal person cannot possibly collect all the fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan. Back then, Ksitigarbha has already said it...

Unless...

When King Chujiang thought of the possibility, he started to tremble as if he had malaria.

## Chapter 236 – Zhang Junbao And Guo Xiang

---

Zhang Junbao (张君宝) also known as Zhang Sanfeng (张三丰) is a character in Jin Yong's The Heaven Sword and Dragon Saber (倚天屠龙记). He is a side character that is a master of martial arts as well as the person who established the Wudang Sect (武当派). It is also hinted that he was in love with (or at least had an unforgettable crush on) Guo Xiang (郭襄), who went on to establish the Emei Sect (峨眉派). The latter also had a crush on the main character of The Giant Eagle and Its Companion (神雕侠女) when she was younger.

The Ten Yama Kings of the Underworld sat in a circle, while their expressions all looked solemn.

“King Chujiang, are you sure about that master collecting all fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan, and that Soul Pearl Yiyuan has remained in his hands?” The big brother of the Ten Yama Kings, King Qinguang, asked.

“Yes, I’m sure,” King Chujiang nodded with certainty.

“About this... Ksitigarbha had said before that Soul Pearl Yiyuan is already a spiritual item, and no one other than the Yellow Emperor can gather all of the fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

Wouldn't that mean that the person that had been dealing with us is the Yellow Emperor!?"

"I called everyone over because I had thought of that possibility," King Chujiang's expression was solemn. "Big Bro, what should we do!?"

"I went to find Ksitigarbha, as for the identity of that master, don't mention it to others. The Rogue Immortals have no huge grudge with us, the Underworld. If that master is truly the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, then if we can get on good terms with him beforehand, and possibly get the Rogue Immortals to come to our side!"

"Understood!"

...

The medical company that Xiao Yumei established finally got all the papers through using Su Yiyun's influence, thus officially establishing the company.

The day that the company was officially established, they did not go around to invite people from all sorts of industries, since this medical company was using a marketing plan that wasn't going to see the light of day.

"Since I need some extra time in advance to exchange the pills, so I can only exchange for two hundred right now. Is that enough to start with?" Ye Zichen had used two hundred pills to cover the entire desk.

Xiao Yumei smiled, "It's definitely enough. Don't underestimate these two hundred pills."

Xiao Yumei picked up a jade bottle and cradled it in her hands, "Do you know how much medicine we sell to the outside that can be diluted from a single pill?"

“How much?”

“A thousand,” Xiao Yumei lifted a finger with a smile. “And this is the level of dilution with a speedy recovery. Otherwise, it’s possible to actually dilute it to ten thousand pills...”

“...” Ye Zichen was stunned, he didn’t have any idea about that at all, but from how Xiao Yumei talked, it seemed rather amazing.

Ye Zichen sat down on the office sofa and raised his eyebrows, “That Huo Da hasn’t come to harass you recently, right?”

“Huo Da?” Xiao Yumei blanked out for a moment, then shook her head. “Ever since that one time, I haven’t seen him again.”

“That’s good...” Ye Zichen smiled.

What they didn’t know was that...

Within a smoky and messy living room, which had an unexplainable feeling of oppression, that had its blinds shut so tightly that not even a sliver of light passed through...

Crack.

An expensive phone was thrown onto the floor and was smashed into smithereens. At the same time, the door of the room was pushed open, letting a hint of light in.

“Young Master, you can’t be like this!”

An old man in a butler uniform walked in front the outside while holding a walking stick. The eyes of Huo Da, who sat on the sofa, were bright red. He forcefully put out a cigarette in the ashtray and frowned, “How was it?”

“I just came to tell you that the medical company belonging to the third young mistress of the Xiao family has been established. The drug administration was not able to stop it!”

“The heck is Fu doing? He can’t even do something so simple!”  
Huo Da howled like a wild beast.

The old butler frowned slightly, then continued to answer calmly, “Someone from Bingcheng’s Su family spoke up...”

Bang.

Huo Da smacked the sofa with his fist, then stood up with his clenched teeth.

“The Su family! That woman, Xiao Yumei, even after she left the Xiao family, she still would get so many helpers!”

“Young Master, one more thing...”

“I understand,” Huo Da used his finger to swipe his dark purple lips. “Ignore Xiao Yumei’s medical company for now, let’s go back to the capital first!”

“Okay, then I’ll go and prepare the return tickets.”

Not long after the old butler left the room, he heard another

period of things being smashed.

He slowly lifted the corner of his lips, while a hint of disdain surfaced on his smiling face, “Retard!”

Dong dong dong.

The sound of knocking sounded out outside the office.

Xiao Yumei, who was getting intimate with Ye Zichen, quickly separated from him and coughed, “Come in!”

Li Shuang walked in from the outside. When she saw Ye Zichen, whose clothes were unorganized, and Xiao Yumei, whose face was slightly flushed...

“Mei... jie...”

When Xiao Yumei noticed the awkwardness on Li Shuang's face, she glared at Ye Zichen fiercely, then replied, “What is it?”

“It's like this. There's a girl calling herself Director Ye's classmate outside. She said she's called Lu Lu.”

Ye Zichen was instantly stunned.

Why did she come here?

“Hurry up and see. Lu Lu, that seems like a new name!” Xiao Yumei looked at him meaningfully.

Ye Zichen laughed dryly, then stood up from the sofa, “I’m going to go and take a look.”

Just as Li Shuang, who was standing at the room entrance, was about to take him over, Xiao Yumei, who was in the office, twitched her mouth and smiled, “Shuang’er, don’t go over, isn’t that going to stop our Director Ye from doing proper business?”

Xiao Yumei placed a lot of emphasis on “proper business”, causing Ye Zichen, who was walking outside, to instantly run towards the entrance of the medical company’s office.

In the lobby of the medical company, Lu Lu wore a rather vintage baby blue dress, with a ribbon tied at her waist, causing her body to seem extremely beautiful. What’s more, her eye-catching red hair, had also turned into a normal black.

“Hey, Tall Guy,” Lu Lu smiled.

Ye Zichen, who had wanted to ask her why she came to this place with a look of speechlessness, froze on the spot.

This scene is strangely familiar.

...

“Guo Xiang, wait for me,” a young man wearing a blue shirt and holding a blue-covered book ran out of the Shaolin Temple.

“What?” The girl frowned while she held the reins to a white horse.

“Look!” The young man opened the secret scripture in his hands, while the words “In-Room Techniques” were extremely eye-catching. “I stole this from Eldest Senior Brother, do you want to practice it with me?”

Zoom.

The girl flushed, then hit the young man on the head with her fist.

“Zhang Junbao, you’re shameless!”

“Why did you hit me? If you don’t want to, then just don’t!” The young man twitched his mouth as he caressed his pained head. Then he stuffed the booklet into his clothes.

Not long later, a happy expression surfaced on the young man’s

face again, and walked next to the girl, “Xiang’er, I really like you.”

Ugh...

The girl’s fist clenched even tighter.

“Go die!”

Pa.

The girl punched the guy, causing him to gain a panda eye, while she leaped on the white horse.

“Zhang Junbao, if you have that kind of time, learn things from

the abbot properly. Right now, the world is rather chaotic, you can only go through it if you have some actual ability. For someone like you... Heh, I don't care about you!"

With that, the girl slowly rode the white horse away. The young man stood blankly on stop for a long time, then displayed a joyous expression on his face.

"Guo Xiang, I just asked my shifu. He said that I'm a disciple of the mundane world, so I can marry. After I get famous, how about you marry me to be my wife?"

"We'll talk about it when you get famous!"

...

Famous.

Ye Zichen looked at Lu Lu, who was standing in front of him, blankly, while a smile appeared in his eyes like one that the young man in his memory has.

“Guo Xiang!”

# Chapter 237 – Didn’t Only Reincarnate Once

---

“Oh? Tall Guy, you remembered some stuff!” Lu Lu’s face was full of joy as she grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm with both hands and exclaimed. “Then do you remember after that...”

I daydreamed again.

Ye Zichen rubbed his hand, and subconsciously looked down at his arm...

F\*ck this!

What the hell!

What the hell is this sika deer beside me?

Ye Zichen quickly took his hand away and took a few steps back.

“What-What sort of monster are you! I’m telling you, the Great Sage Equaling Heaven is my bro, he’s a master at monster-slaying.

While he spoke, the sika deer continued to walk towards him.

“Stand there and don’t move, if you take another step forward, then I’m calling my bro. Have you heard about the story of hitting the white bone demon thrice? My bro won’t let you off.”

“Ye Zichen, what are you saying? I’m Lu Lu<sup>1</sup>. ”

“I know you’re a deer, you don’t need to emphasize it...”

Ai, what, she said she's Lu Lu?

Ye Zichen blinked. No matter how I look at it, it's a sika deer, isn't Lu Lu supposed to be human?

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked around the lobby...

Underwear of all colors were shown.

F\*ck, the Fiery Eyes of Truth has been activated.

Ye Zichen quickly deactivated the Fiery Eyes of Truth, then looked towards the sika deer. It really is Lu Lu.

“You just called me a monster, I’m so sad!” Lu Lu frowned.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and slowly moved towards her and asked with a testing tone just at the same time, “You’re a Yaoguai?”

“Why do you ask?” Lu Lu tilted her head curiously.

After quite a while, Ye Zichen replied, “I just saw you as a sika deer.”

“Ah! You can see my true form!” Lu Lu’s exclamation was rather loud, causing many employees of the company to subconsciously look over.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen hurriedly ran over, covered her mouth and dragged her out of the building.

“Ummmm...” Lu Lu, who’s mouth was covered, yelped.

In order to prevent the surrounding bystanders from thinking that he was a criminal, Ye Zichen let go of his hand, then lifted his finger to his mouth. “Be quieter, those who live here are all mortal. Stuff like true form...”

“I understand,” Lu Lu giggled, then hugged Ye Zichen’s arm curiously. “Why can you see my true form? Isn’t your reincarnation in this life supposed to be a normal person?”

“I might have been a normal person a bit more than a month ago, and now, I don’t even know if I am human...” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance, then glanced at Lu Lu. “What did you come here for? Don’t tell me that you came to find me. Even Su Yan and them doesn’t know about this place.”

Lu Lu revealed a hint of pride when she heard that, and pointed at her own nose, “I came according to your smell.”

“... Are you a dog? Your nose is actually so sensitive!” Ye Zichen revealed a look of speechlessness. Found me according to my smell? Even my family’s Lil’ White can’t find me according to my scent!

“Don’t care about it so much. Just know that I can find you,” Lu Lu smiled while her eyes turned the shape of a crescent moon. “Oh yeah, did you remember something just now?”

“Think of what? I was just daydreaming. Now that I think about it, it’s rather weird, I’ve been having these weird dreams lately, “Ye Zichen smiled in self-mockery. “When I have time, I should go and have myself looked at in the hospital.”

Recently, Ye Zichen felt like these weird dreams got more and

more frequent. Previously, he would only have them when he slept at night, then he gradually started to have those dreams during daytime, and now, he pretty much gets those dreams every single day...

The dreams were always weird. He had seemingly been all sorts of characters in his dreams, like [King Zhou of the Shang Dynasty](#) or [Xiang Yu](#).

King Zhou of the Shang Dynasty (商纣王), also called Zhou Yin (紂辛) was the final emperor of the Shang Dynasty. He was famous for his decadence, often represented by the Wine Pool and Meat Forest, as well as doing all sorts of things to please Daji (妲己), who is often portrayed as fox spirit/kitsune in myths and legends. The things he did to please Daji includes the invention of one particular punishment where the prisoner would have to hug a heated bronze cannon to their deaths.

Xiang Yu (项羽) is a famous warlord in Chinese history. He was the “Overlord of West Chu” and a powerful warrior. He also has a concubine by the name of Yu Miaoyi (虞妙弋) or Lady Yu (虞姬), who committed suicide with Xiang Yu’s sword in order to prevent her existence from affecting Xiang Yu’s upcoming battles when the Han army had pushed them into a corner.

Lu Lu smiled, while her eyes revealed a meaningful look, “You weren’t dreaming. All of these were things you have experienced personally.”

“What?”

Ye Zichen furiously raised his eyebrows and looked at the smiling Lu Lu in shock.

“Actually, you can pretty much guess it yourself, it’s just that you can’t explain it, nor can you say it to others, so you can only tell yourself that those are just dreams, right?” Lu Lu’s words resonated with Ye Zichen’s heart.

It wasn’t anything if random scenes appeared in his mind once or twice, but quite a few times was a bit different.

However, since Ye Zichen was unable to explain it, he could only keep telling himself that those were just daydreams or delusions.

“Just why did all this happen?” Ye Zichen let out a long sigh.

Lu Lu pursed her lips and smiled, “Didn’t I tell you just now? You experienced all of this in person,” With that, she looked up at Ye Zichen’s stiffening face with a smile. “You asked me yesterday if people really have a previous life, right? Of course they do!”

“Then why have I never had those dreams before?” Worry and panic filled Ye Zichen’s eyes due to his lack of understanding.

However, Lu Lu answered irresponsibly towards this question, “How would I know? Normally speaking, a person would not gain their memories of their previous life, however, it’s not that they won’t remember anything. For example, important people from their previous life or important scenes might trigger some of their memories of their previous life. For example, you called me Guo Xiang earlier, so it seems like your memories are slowly awakening!”

“...”

Ye Zichen was stunned.

This is too strange.

If the scene in my mind was something that I personally experienced, then that mean that I was Zhang Junbao in my previous life!?

Just who was Zhang Junbao? He is Zhang Sanfeng, Great Immortal Zhang, who established the Wudang Sect!

Ha!

Ye Zichen, who had a stunned look, suddenly laughed, then looked towards Lu Lu, “I’m Zhang Sanfeng’s reincarnation? F\*ck, that’s too awesome!”

Slap.

Lu Lu couldn’t help but facepalm when she saw Ye Zichen’s idiotic look. They truly are the same person, he’s exactly the same as he was in my previous life.

“Wait, that’s not right!” Ye Zichen, who was emerged in him being Zhang Sanfeng’s reincarnation, suddenly reacted. “Guo Xiang is human, right? You... don’t seem to be human.”

“None of your business,” Lu Lu rolled her eyes at Ye Zichen, then shouted. “Daddy Zhi Xin, this guy keeps on asking me some questions that can’t be answered!”

Zhi Xin: Ye Zichen, you ask too many questions, it seems like you don't want your lunch box anymore.

Ye Zichen: Daddy, I know my wrongs. I'll act properly.

Zhi Xin: Okay. Gaffer, get ready for the next shot.

“I could never have imagined that I’m actually Zhang Sanfeng’s reincarnation,” A flower bloomed on Ye Zichen’s face. Although he was still unable to accept it all, it was better to be optimistic.

He wasn’t someone that liked to split hairs, going by the flow was the best.

“Actually, I know another secret about you,” Lu Lu suddenly spoke up mysteriously.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “What secret?”

He gave in. I’ll just find out today everything I should know.

So I don’t need to be stunned in the future.

“Actually, you didn’t only reincarnate once!”

Original Chapter Teaser:

“Oh? Tall Guy, you remembered some stuff!” Lu Lu’s face was full of joy as she grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm with both hands and exclaimed. “Then do you remember after that...”

I daydreamed again.

Ye Zichen rubbed his hand, and subconsciously looked down at his arm...

F\*ck this!

What the hell!

What the hell is this sika deer beside me?

Ye Zichen quickly took his hand away and took a few steps back.

“What-What sort of monster are you! I’m telling you, the Great

Sage Equaling Heaven is my bro, he's a master at monster-slaying.

While he spoke, the sika deer continued to walk towards him.

“Stand there and don’t move, if you take another step forward, then I’m calling my bro. Have you heard about the story of hitting the white bone demon thrice? I bro won’t let you off.”

“Ye Zichen, what are you saying? I’m Lu Lu. ”

The surname of Lu Lu (鹿璐) – 鹿, means deer

“I know you’re a deer, you don’t need to emphasize it...”

# Chapter 238 – Had Enough

---

Did not reincarnate just once!

Ye Zichen looked at Lu Lu in shock.

However, she merely shrugged, “Why are you looking at me like that? I’m just speaking the truth. Back when you reincarnated into Zhang Junbao, there were two girls by your side who reincarnated with you, but all your attention was on me back then, so you ignored their very existence.”

“...”

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

Although Ye Zichen was quick shocked initially, when he heard

Lu Lu's words later, he laughed.

“Be simpler, chat up strategies should be simpler...”

“Who’s using a pickup strategy on you? I’m telling the truth,” Lu Lu bit her lower lip.

However, Ye Zichen maintained that expression of twitching his mouth, “Then tell me this, are the two girls that reincarnated with me pretty?”

“Although I don’t want to admit it, but they are indeed prettier than me. Especially that fox...” When Lu Lu replied, she clenched her fist tightly.

Towards this, Ye Zichen only...

Huehue!

“Make it up, continue making it up!”

“Who’s making it up!” Lu Lu glared at him with a troubled look.

“You want to tell me that I chose to ignore two beauties and was so intent on following your ass around for suffering?”

“That was the case.”

“Do you think that I’m retarded? Or do you want to say that your charm is too great! Girl, I can believe that I am truly Zhang Sanfeng’s reincarnation and I admit that you’re Guo Xiang... But don’t treat me as an idiot, okay!” With that, Ye Zichen sighed

helplessly. “It’s not my fault that the heavens gave me such a great aura that all sorts of beauties needs to use chat up strategies to catch my attention...”

“Go and die!”

Bang.

Lu Lu bit her lips and punched Ye Zichen, giving him a panda eye.

History was always shockingly familiar...

Ye Zichen leaned back on the sofa as he used an egg to rub his eye.

“Boss Ye, who beat you up like this? Tell me, I, Fatty, will go and take revenge for you!”

Third Fatty Jin rolled up his sleeves and held a kitchen knife as if he was going to take revenge for Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance and kicked Fatty on his butt, “You? Go, there might be new meat at the butcher’s tomorrow morning. As for your kitchen knife, you’re just bringing a murder weapon for them!”

“Hehe, I’m just expressing my loyalty!” Third Fatty Jin smiled, then ran to the kitchen to put the kitchen knife back in its place.

“Oh yeah, why haven’t I seen Di Tian these few days?” Ye Zichen looked around the living room and frowned.

Third Fatty Jin, who had returned from placing the kitchen knife, smiled, “Him?”

With that, he shouted loudly, “Di Tian!”

Zoom!

The door to the bathroom was instantly pushed open. Di Tian walked out with a towel across his shoulder and a bottle of toilet cleaner in his hands.

“Lord Fatty, you called?”

When Ye Zichen saw Di Tian’s grandson-like look and the bruises on his face...

It seems like he got beaten up quite a bit recently.

“It’s not your Lord Fatty looking for you, the one looking for you is Boss Ye,” Third Fatty Jin shouted.

Di Tian hurried ran over, “Boss Ye!”

“Are you used to living here recently?”

“Yes, the brothers here are especially friendly with me,” Di Tian immediately nodded.

“... Your words betray your heart as much as it is possible,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “I’m going to ask you something, if you can answer clearly, then you don’t need to do

these tasks anymore.”

“Boss Ye, please sure!” Di Tian’s face instantly lit up. Recently, he had been tortured to no end by the fatty and the Hou brothers.

“Do you know about reincarnation and rebirth?”

Di Tian revealed a confused look.

When Ye Zichen saw Di Tian’s expression, he knew that he asked the wrong person, “Go do what you should be doing.”

“Boss Ye, I haven’t heard about reincarnation and rebirth. How about you ask me something else? So things like how many families are among the hidden families or the internal situation of their families...”

“Hurry up and go back, stop bothering me.”

“Boss Ye, aren’t those stuff what you want to know the most!?”

“I don’t want to know about those now.”

Di Tian seemed to want to try and gain another opportunity for himself, but Third Fatty Jin stood up from the sofa and glared...

“Screw off!”

Third Fatty Jin sat opposite Ye Zichen as Di Tian returned to the bathroom bitterly, “Boss, you want to know about reincarnation and rebirth?”

“You know?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Third Fatty Jin immediately revealed a proud expression, “Naturally, no matter what, I am Great Emperor Qingming’s inner disciple!”

“Then do tell!” Ye Zichen smiled with interest.

Third Fatty Jin cleared his throat and begun, “About reincarnation, it is mostly only achievable by some great people! For example you. You are...”

To be more specific, the use of the word reincarnation previous and here (转世), is different from that of the reincarnation that is referred to normally (投胎). In terms of the latter, it refers to people dying and then being reborn through the cycle of rebirth. Despite the former meaning the same thing, it often carries the implication of the person/being choosing to reincarnate, as opposed to it being just something that a soul naturally goes through.

Third Fatty Jin, who had a proud expression, was suddenly unable to speak. Not long later, his expression worsened as he kneeled down on the floor and continuously kowtowed, while muttering some undecipherable things.

Just when Ye Zichen felt curious...

“Let things about reincarnation run its course. If you ask anymore, die!”

F\*ck!

If there's no surprise, then it's that Great Emperor Qingming again!

“There’s something wrong with you, right? Laozi can’t say anything, nor ask anything, do I f\*cking live for you? Come out if you can, stop hiding there. See if I beat your teeth out!”

“Is that so? Then I’ll come.”

The space in the room suddenly distorted. Not long later, a black gate opened from the ceiling, and a man with an average body, about 1.7 meters tall, wearing traditional Chinese clothing and a mask appeared in the room.

“I heard that you wanted to see me.”

The space around him went still. Even Third Fatty Jin, who was kowtowing maintained his position and did not move at all.

“You’re that Great Emperor Qingming!”

Unlike before, this time Ye Zichen did submit.

He truly was sick of submitting.

The world that he knew got more and more mysterious, while more and more questions surfaced in his mind. At that moment, it was as if he was playing a game without any guides. The game continuously updated, and more new NPCs appeared alongside new main quests and side quests...

The only difference was that a dead game character can revive and start over.

But for this game of his, death is death. Thus, he couldn't help but be cautious in order to pass the levels.

But he had had enough!

“You’re in control of all this, right? I’m the lucky child you chose, right? Then I’ll tell you right now, I don’t want to play anymore, please go and find another lucky child, okay?”

“You can’t endure it anymore already?”

The mask man smiled. Hearing his playful laughter, Ye Zichen slapped the sofa and stood up, then stood fiercely opposite the masked man.

“Yes, laozi has had enough! Laozi wants to live the life of a normal person, laozi doesn’t want to play anymore!”

“Hehe, I can feel that you’re furious,” the masked man laughed faintly.

“Only an idiot wouldn’t be furious. I’m telling you, I’m a f\*cking normal person. I admit, when I got in contact with all this, I wanted to get rich silently. Now I’ll apologize to you. I was wrong, take everything from me, laozi doesn’t want them anymore!”

“But this isn’t up to you, nor is it up to me,” the masked man smiled. “This is all by your own choice, is it not? Yellow Emperor!”

# **Chapter 239 – Chang'e, Who Got Pimples From Eating Spicy Gluten**

---

Yellow Emperor!

He seems to have said that I am the Yellow Emperor.

Ye Zichen frowned at the masked man, then licked his lips.

“You just said that I’m the Yellow Emperor!

“Mhmm!” The masked man nodded in confirmation. Then he held his hand out towards the tea table and used a vacuum force to pull the packet of cigarettes on it over, while he took his mask off.

It’s an unexpectedly normal square face.

He lit a cigarette for himself and sucked, then breathed out a mouthful of smoke proficiently, “I really haven’t tasted tobacco for so long.”

The square-faced man smoke a bit more greedily before walking to the sofa and sitting down, “It seems like you really understand yourself. Back then, before you reincarnated, you told me that if there comes a day that you can’t take it all anymore, then I was to tell everything to you. It seems like now is the time...”

“What are you saying? You sound so weird,” Ye Zichen sat down opposite and glared at him fiercely. “I said that I don’t want to play anymore...”

“I also told you that you can’t not continue!” Great Emperor Qingming finished the cigarette in his hand, then squelched the embers in the ashtray. “This is the path you chose for yourself back then.”

“What?”

“Back then, you chose to go through the cycle of reincarnation in order to help the Immortal Region gain an Immortal King. Originally, I wanted to let nature follow its course, but since I’ve already said all this, then I’ll tell you. You were the Yellow Emperor in your first life!”

What the hell!?

“You’ve got to be kidding me! Someone just told me that I’m the reincarnation of Zhang Sanfeng, how am I the Yellow Emperor now? Just how many characters have I acted? Just how much money am I getting in return?”

Ye Zichen had made a huge decision when he accepted himself as Zhang Sanfeng’s reincarnation, and now the fact that he was the Yellow Emperor popped out of nowhere...

Just how long ago was the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors...

“Zhang Sanfeng was your eighth life...”

“And since my first life is the Yellow Emperor, doesn’t that mean that I still have a seventh, sixth, fifth, fourth, third, and second life?” Ye Zichen smiled wryly. “Bro, you came to crack jokes, right? Me, a single person, has lived nine lives!”

“I know that you find it very hard to understand right now. But you should have unsealed some memories recently, right?” A light flashed across Great Emperor Qingming’s eyes. “These memories are all memories from your previous lives. You’ll know more in the future, that’s when you’ll come to understand everything.”

“I don’t want to understand. How about you just kill me! If you don’t kill me, then I’ll commit suicide later! I’ve had enough!”

“Ye Zichen!” Great Emperor Qingming leaped up from the sofa and spoke as if he was hating iron for not becoming steel. “Just what do you want? You’ve already been through eight lives, success is in sight. Are you going to make everything that was done before had been in vain?”

Great Emperor Qingming did not notice the corner of Ye Zichen’s mouth raise in his rage.

When he finished, Ye Zichen twitched his mouth, “It seems like I’m very important to you, right!”

“Of course, the presence of an Immortal King has an indescribable importance for the Immortal Region,” Great Emperor Qingming nodded seriously.

“You guys are very scared of me dying, right?”

“Yes!”

“Then let’s talk about conditions!”

Only then did Ye Zichen reveal a fox-like smile, as if his ploy had succeeded.

An hour had passed.

“You already know what you want to know, and I’ve said what I should say...”

“Understood, go back to your Three Realms and leave here to me.

I'll stay alive properly," Ye Zichen looked over with a satisfied gaze.

However, Great Emperor Qingming stopped and frowned, "I actually shouldn't have said all this. What I said to you might actually affect you in this life. Your tribulations near, please be extra careful."

Hearing Great Emperor Qingming's blabber, Ye Zichen revealed an annoyed look, "Just hurry back, I won't treat my life as a joke."

"Then... See you in the Three Realms!"

With that, the space in the room distorted once again. A black door appeared on the ceiling of the room, and Great Emperor Qingming also disappeared at the same time.

Dong.

Ye Zichen, who had maintained a strong and proud look, collapsed on the sofa the moment Great Emperor Qingming left.

Phew.

The still space started moving once again. Third Fatty Jin habitually kowtowed once again before he got up quickly and smiled wryly, “Boss Ye!”

“Alright, you don’t need to say it to me. I don’t want to know anymore. I’m a bit tired, so I’m going back to my room to rest.”

With that, Ye Zichen dragged his tired body back to his bedroom.

Bang.

Ye Zichen laid down on the bed and blanked out as he looked at the ceiling.

F\*cking hell!

I'm actually the Yellow Emperor. This is so damn awesome!

Ye Zichen, who had looked tired just moments earlier, jumped up from the bed while his face carried even more excitement than when he found out that he was Zhang Sanfeng.

Ye Zichen had always had a slightly self-comforting mindset, as opposed to complaining and getting troubled over things, it was better to slowly accept it...

“Too strong, I’ve known I wasn’t a normal person since I was young...”

Ye Zichen muttered to himself and laughed. At the same time, Liu Qing came out of the dragon eye.

When she saw his idiotic smile, she immediately asked, “What made you so happy?”

“Lil’ Liu Qing, do you know who this lord is?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows cockily.

Liu Qing looked at him as if he was an idiot and twitched his mouth, “You’re sick in the head!”

“I’m the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation!”

“Then I’m the reincarnation of [Nüwa](#)! You’re insane!”

Nüwa (女媧) is the goddess who created humans in Chinese legends. She’s also the sister and sometimes wife of Fuxi in some myths.

“Don’t not believe it!” Ye Zichen licked his lips and smiled.

Liu Qing rolled her eyes at him, then reached into his pocket to take out his phone before flowing to the side to read doujinshis.

Since nobody was able to share his joy, Ye Zichen began to feel slightly unhappy.

At that moment...

“Nameless, are you there?”

A voice suddenly rang out in Ye Zichen’s mind. Ye Zichen was stunned for a moment, then immediately realized that it was a voice transmission from Chang’e.

“Yeah, Fairy, what is it!”

“I...”

Chang’e’s voice hesitated, then stopped.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “You finished the spicy gluten?”

“No...” Chang'e instantly replied.

Within the Moon Palace.

Chang'e covered her face with a white veil. However, her worries could be seen through the view.

She bit her lips. As she held a bronze mirror and looked at herself, she sighed for some reason.

“Then what happened?”

When Ye Zichen's query sounded out in Chang'e's mind, she frowned even more.

After a long while, she took out her phone as if she made a hard decision, took out her phone to take a selfie, which she sent to Ye Zichen on WeChat.

Dingdong.

“Why is someone always finding you on this shitty phone?”

Liu Qing, who was reading a doujinshi chucked the phone over angrily. Ye Zichen caught the phone, then saw that Chang'e had sent him a photo on WeChat.

She definitely wasn't called the number one beauty in the Heavenly Court for nothing. She had a face that mesmerized people without any make-up and features were clearly natural. This should be Chang'e.

However, Ye Zichen saw that...

Two pimples grew near Chang'e's upper lip.

F\*ck, what's going on? Did she get pimples from eating spicy gluten?

# Chapter 240 – Getting Food Poisoning From Eating Crap

---

Chang'e, who lived in the Moon Palace, got pimples!

This was definitely a rather surprising thing for Ye Zichen. In his mind, deities should be able to get rid of the impurities in their body during the process of cultivation...

I didn't think that eating spicy gluten would result in pimples. This was something that Ye Zichen did not expect.

At that moment, Chang'e's voice transmission also rang out in Ye Zichen's mind.

"You should have seen it right? Buds like this keeps on popping up on my face. When one is finally gone, others will grow. I don't want to hide it from you. Do you still like me like this?"

...

Ye Zichen was beyond moved.

I really didn't think that Chang'e would actually get troubled over this sort of thing.

Ye Zichen chuckled, "Fairy is still very pretty now. What's more, I can deal with those pimples."

"How?"

Everyone had an interest in beauty. When Ye Zichen replied, he felt that Chang'e's mood improved greatly.

“Fairy, don’t fret. I’ll send you two treasures a while later to deal with the two pimples on your face.”

“Can’t you do it now?”

Having the two pimples on her face all the time affected my image in the Heavenly Court far too much.

“It seems like it isn’t possible now.”

The sky outside had already darkened. Even if Ye Zichen wanted to go out to buy skin care products, he wouldn’t be able to.

“Then... Alright!”

On the next day, after Ye Zichen finished his morning of lessons, he immediately ran towards the outside. When he passed by the woods on the school grounds...

“School Beauty Sun, our big bro sends his invitation,” Sun Yige was blocked off in the woods by two students.

She frowned at the two students in front of her, then replied softly, “I don’t know your big bro, please excuse me.”

During so, Sun Yige reached out her hand to push the two students away. One of the students, who had slightly long hair, smiled, then reached out subconsciously to grab that hand.

“School Beauty Sun, our boss...”

“Who’s your boss?” Ye Zichen chuckled as he patted the young man’s shoulders before he stood in front of Sun Yige and looked at the two students with a tilted head.

“Who are you!” The long haired student yelled loudly.

Right now, there wasn’t anyone in Polytechnic University that didn’t know me. Ye Zichen couldn’t help but sigh when he saw how ignorant the long-haired student was.

“Ye Zichen.”

“You can Chen whatever you want. Brat, this isn’t a reason for you to...” Just as the long-haired young man was going to keep cursing, the buzz cut young man yanked him and muttered in his ear.

Roughly half an hour later, the long-haired young man looked up again and glanced at Ye Zichen.

“Brat, it seems like you’re a celebrity in your school, but our boss’s reputation at our school is no worse than yours here...”

...

Ye Zichen was speechless.

I didn’t come to compete in reputation.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and eyed the two students in front

of him.

“You’re from another school, then there’s nothing much to be said. I’ll give you guys two choices, either screw off or get beaten. Choose!”

“I...” The long haired student glared at him.

Ye Zichen did not have the patience to wait for them to finish talking, so he directly made the choice for them, “It seems like you guys choose to get beaten. Fine, I’ll satisfy you guys...”

Ding dang dong...

Ye Zichen easily beat up the two students from another school, and the sound of it also attracted the school’s security over.

“What happened?”

“Big Brother Security, these two grandsons from another school came over to harass one of our school’s school beauty. Due to the justice my mother taught me while I was a child and the policy of taking caring of my fellow classmates, I beat up these two grandsons.”

“From another school?” The guard frowned, then ignored the two’s blabbers and yanked them up from the ground. “Kids from another school coming to Polytechnic University to cause trouble... Come with me to the security office.”

“Ye Zichen, thank you!” Sun Yige blushed as she held her textbooks.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen chuckled, then replied in a teasing manner, “Welcome. Wow, our School Beauty Sun is truly famous!

Even those from another school is unable to resist reaching out their evil hands for our School Beauty Sun.”

“What are you saying!” Sun Yige hit Ye Zichen’s chest with her fist softly.

After Ye Zichen sent Sun Yige back to her dormitory, he continued with his plan of going to buy skin care products for Chang’e.

However, just after he left the school grounds, he saw a group of people standing opposite him. The two students that he only beat up earlier were among them.

“Boss, it’s this grandson!”

Ye Zichen sighed softly, then took out his phone to look at the

time...

“Excuse me, I’m in a hurry!” Ye Zichen walked towards the group of people.

The long haired teenager, who got beaten up, cursed, “Grandson, are you blind? Can’t you see our boss?”

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped the long haired teenager’s face with a huge enough force that caused him to spin around.

“It seems like you don’t remember getting beaten up, right?”

“Are all Polytechnic U students so cocky?” At this moment, the young man in the very center of the group of people walked out.

The young man was 1.8 meters. He had a buzz cut, and a body that wasn’t very buff. However, from his skinny body, one could tell that...

I don’t seem to be able to tell anything!

Although, from the dark circles around his eyes and his two saggy eye bags, it was obvious that his health was rather poor.

“I thought that only the person from Polytechnic U who is someone capable was that dandy, Fu Chengming, but even he doesn’t dare to hit my people in front of me.”

What the hell!

Ye Zichen looked speechlessly at the young man with a buzz cut. Does he really think that he's really some mob boss?

"I think that you just got food poisoning from eating crap, who gave you the self confidence to do all this? You watched too much Young and Dangerous when you were younger right? Do you think that you're [Chicken Bro](#)! Just f\*ck off, laozi is in a hurry."

Chicken Bro refers to Chicken Chiu in the Young and Dangerous film series.

"Hehe..." The young man instantly revealed a sinister smile that showed off his creepily white teeth as he stared at Ye Zichen...

"I wonder if your power is as strong as your words!"

With that, the buzz cut young man formed claws with his hands

with an imposing aura.

All of his subordinates on the side gasped, while the long haired young man, who Ye Zichen slapped, exclaimed, “Grandson, you’re done for. My boss’s [Tiger Fist](#)...”

Tiger Fist (虎形拳, literally translated as “tiger-shaped punch”) is a style of martial arts that is traditionally from the Fujian province. Like its name, it is a style that imitates the ferociousness of a tiger and overpowers an enemy. It is also said to be one of the styles that Karate took influence from.

Bang.

Before the long-haired young man finished, the group of people saw that the buzz cut young man, who was still getting into position, got kicked to the wall by Ye Zichen. Furthermore, the footprint on his stomach was very clear, as was the handprint on his face.

“Retard!”

With that, Ye Zichen calmly stopped a taxi by the side of the road and left.

Only then did the buzz cut young man's subordinates hurry over.

“Boss!”

“F\*ck, this grandson doesn't do things logically,” The buzz cut young man covered his face with his hands as he wiped tears from his eyes. “I didn't f\*cking get my stance ready when he came over to hit me.”

“Then what do you think should be done...”

Slap.

The buzz cut young man slapped the long-haired young man's head, "You tell me what! Send me to the hospital! Can't you see that my nose is bleeding!?"

# Chapter 241 – The Dazzling Lollipop

---

After Ye Zichen bought a set of skin care products, he immediately rushed back to his supermarket.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but sigh as he looked at the floor covered in dust. If Zhuge Kongming was here, the supermarket should be spotless right now.

I wonder how he is. I really do miss him a bit after not contacting him for so long.

After Ye Zichen cleaned up the supermarket, his phone, which he placed at the cashier counter, rang.

Dingdong.

Chang'e received your red packet.

"Nameless, what are these things you just sent me?" Chang's soft voice rang out in Ye Zichen's mind.

He sat down on the chair at the cashier counter, and crossed his legs as he lit a cigarette for himself, "These are skin care products for you to remove the pimples!"

"Skin care products?" Chang'e was confused. This was the first time she had ever heard of something like that.

"Yeah, the green bottle of Anti-Acne Plant Essence for you to remove the things on your face. The rest of the rest like the Facial Cleansers are to wash your face and shrink pores. Didn't I send you an instruction booklet as well? Just do as it says."

“Okay.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Chang'e increased by 30, current intimacy level: 630.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Chang'e increased by 100. Current affability level: 2115.

“Uhm, recently, Bunny... her spicy gluten...” Chang'e's slightly hesitant sound transmission rang out in Ye Zichen's mind. He scratched his head...

No wonder, how is it possible to not get pimples when she eats spicy gluten like this!

Back then, he had sent enough portions to Chang'e for normal people to eat for an entire two months. It was finished in a mere few days.

“Fairy, although spicy gluten is delicious, you can’t eat too much. What’s more, since you got pimples now, if you eat even more, then you will only get more pimples.”

“It’s not me, it’s Bunny...”

“Alright, alright, I get it.”

With that, Ye Zichen took his phone with him and ran down to

the basement storage to sent her all of the spicy gluten.

Dingdong.

Chang'e received your red packet.

“I thank you in place of Bunny.”

Jade Bunny is truly great to take the blame. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled. Just as he was about to start looking at his Moments...

“Shopkeeper, give me a lollipop...”

“We don’t sell stuff here.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. When he met the gaze of the customer... “Why is it you, brat!”

“You... Ghost... You...”

The person in front of Ye Zichen was the very young man that said that he had seen Ye Zichen die outside Jing Wan’s team’s base.

“I was looking for you!” The young man glared, then lifted his leg up and stepped on the cashier counter. “Look at my leg! When I got bitten by your dog, I had to spend two hundred something yuan for rabies vaccination! Compensate me with money!”

Ye Zichen glanced at the young man. Although this brat had an otaku look, his leg hair is seriously...

Comparable to a porcupine.

What's more, there are no bite marks on his leg either.

“Dude, are you kidding me? Look at your leg hair. If my Lil' White bites down on you, wouldn't his mouth be pierced through? What's more, do you have teeth marks on your leg? Or perhaps, where is your receipt for rabies vaccination, if you give it to me, then I'll let you claim it.”

“Do you think that I'm a porcupine!” The young man glared, then revealed a dark smile. “Don't care about whether he bit me or not. Even if he didn't, then the compensation for mental damage would be two hundred yuan. Hurry up and give it to me, if you don't...”

“What if I don't give it!”

“Then...” The young man’s dark expression instantly gazed upon the lollipop on the cashier counter with a heated gaze. “Give me a lollipop!”

“...”

What the hell...

Ye Zichen took one and held it out speechlessly, “You just want one?”

“Too dazzling...” The young man was fixated on that lollipop, as he continuously gulped and revealed signs of a struggle on his face. “If you give me the lollipop, then I won’t cause you any trouble!”

“...”

Dazzling?

Ye Zichen looked at that young man with a look of speechlessness, while the young man's gaze was so heated that it felt like it was going to melt the lollipop in his hand.

Is there a need to do so!?

When Ye Zichen felt the young man's obsession for the lollipop, he really felt reluctant to tease him anymore, and thus, subconsciously handed the lollipop over.

“Sir, you're such a great person,” the young man quickly snatched the lollipop over, unwrapped it, then stuffed it in his

mouth. At the same time, he carefully returned the one yuan that he held tightly in his hand back into his pocket as he muttered vaguely. “I saved a huge amount again. I will be able to eat Xiao Ming Bun Store’s stuffed bun tomorrow morning.”

“...”

What's up with this bro? Is he in that much poverty?

When he saw the young man suck on the lollipop with a look of bliss on his face, asked, “Bro, what are you called!”

“Me?” The young man was unwilling to take the lollipop out of his mouth even when speaking, causing him to reply blurrily. “I’m called Gou Yuzhan!”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but stick out another lollipop when he

felt the young man's love for them, "Here's another one for you!"

"Sir..." Gou Yuzhan looked at the lollipop Ye Zichen handed over in shock. All of a sudden, he felt like Ye Zichen was wrapped in a sacred light... "How could I accept!"

"Then, you don't want..." Before Ye Zichen finished, he saw the lollipop in his hand appear in Gou Yuzhan's hand.

When he looked up, he saw the coy smile on Gou Yuzhan's face...

"I couldn't control my hand!"

Then, Gou Yuzhan acted as if he wanted to return the lollipop, but his hand acted as if they truly refused to act as he commanded...

“It’s fine, keep it.”

“Sir, you’re truly...”

Gou Yuzhan looked at Ye Zichen with stars in his eyes. At that moment, little ghost girl Liu Qing stretched lazily as she came out of the dragon eye...

Zoom.

The lollipop in Gou Yuzhan’s hand slid down. Immediately after, he dived down to the floor and caught the lollipop before retreating quickly to the entrance.

“Ghost... There’s a ghost...” Gou Yuzhan took out a silver cross

from his pocket with a stutter and poked forward with it. At the same time, he shouted towards Ye Zichen. “Sir, hurry and run, there’s a ghost beside you!”

Ye Zichen was shocked.

He raised his eyebrows and stood up from the cashier counter. Meanwhile, Liu Qing, who was beside him, writhed painfully as if she was dealt some major damage.

“Put the silver cross away. Liu Qing, get in the dragon eye.”

Zoom.

Liu Qing instantly returned to the dragon eye.

Gou Yuzhan raised his eyebrows at Ye Zichen as if he was looking at a monster, “Sir, you...

Ye Zichen snatched the cross over, then activated the Fiery Eyes of Truth to examine it. After he noticed that there wasn’t anything strange to it, he chucked the cross back into Gou Yuzhan’s hands.

Then, he scanned Gou Yuzhan.

Only when the gold light faded did Ye Zichen slowly squat down, and raise his eyebrows at Gou Yuzhan, who revealed a look of terror and unease, but was still unwilling to let go of the lollipop in his hand.

“Kid, I’m kind of curious about you now.”

# Chapter 242 – Xie Lei’s Display Of Humility

---

“If there’s stuff to talk about, then let’s talk about it. If you want to try and take my lollipop... No way!”

Gou Yuzhan guarded the lollipop in his hand fiercely, while he did not give up on the one in his mouth either.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but smile helplessly, “Did you forget who gave you that lollipop?”

Hearing that, Gou Yuzhan blinked, then pushed his glasses up...

“If you don’t want the lollipops, then anything can be negotiated.”

“I just want to ask you a few questions, if you answer properly,

then not only would I not take your lollipop, I would..."

Zoom.

Ye Zichen picked up the entire box of lollipops from the cashier counter.

Gulp.

"Too dazzling!" Gou Yuzhan continuously licked his lips. He wanted to move his gaze away, but his head just refused to budge.  
"Ask away!"

"You can see the ghost girl beside me? Also, where did you get your cross from?"

“I can’t see her, but I can feel her,” Gou Yuzhan licked his lollipop and answered blurrily. “As for the cross, my family has rules that I can’t tell others...”

Ye Zichen immediately held out the box of lollipops in front of him...

“Too dazzling!” Gou Yuzhan gulped fiercely as he clenched his fist tightly and revealed a struggling expression on his face.

In the end, he still lost to the dazzle of lollipops!

“That cross is a magical item that I refined.”

Pa.

Ye Zichen chucked a lollipop over. Gou Yuzhan accurately caught it.

“You really are giving it to me!” Gou Yuzhan was stunned. Then, he instantly discarded all of his morals and rules that he was supposed to follow. “Shopkeeper, do you need a magical item? I can sell it to you, it’ll only cost one lollipop!”

“I don’t need any magical items. You mentioned your family just now... What does your family do? Are they from the capital?”

“No, my family’s from Bingcheng, my dad opened a Daoist Temple...”

Ye Zichen chucked another lollipop over.

Thus, Ye Zichen asked and he answered. When Ye Zichen pretty much finished with his questions, all of the lollipops were more or less given away.

Meanwhile, Gou Yuzhan had a huge smile on his face.

“Sir, do you have any more questions?”

A lollipop for the answer to a question, this wasn’t a fortunate thing that one could find every day.

“Nope, you can leave now!”

“Sir, you truly are a great person!”

With that, Gou Yuzhan left the supermarket in satisfaction as he took a pile of lollipops with him.

“Liu Qing, how are you?” Ye Zichen asked towards the dragon eye after sending Gou Yuzhan off.

The dragon eye simmered, and Liu Qing flew out from within. From the looks of her, she seems to have completely recovered.

“I’m fine, the silver cross just now was so weird...”

“That is a magic item that is specifically used to fight ghosts. That brat is actually a young daoist,” Ye Zichen smiled. However, at the same time, he was speechless...

His family can open up a daoist temple, but why did he feel so poor?

“That little daoist isn’t simple.”

Ye Zichen decided and made up his mind that he must have a good chat with Gou Yuzhan the next time they meet. As for whether the latter will tell him the truth? Ye Zichen wasn’t worried at all.

He already knew Gou Yuzhan’s weakness. No matter what, he was someone that understood weaknesses are meant to be used.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone on the table rang. He took a look at the messages.

Xie Lei: You there?

This brat has recently come to find me very frequently!

“What is it now? Don’t tell me you broke the Transformer again. This time, I don’t have anything I want to exchange for.”

“No!” Xie Lei scratched his head, and revealed a troubled expression. “It’s my grandpa’s birthday in a few days, I want to give him a birthday present.”

“It’s Xie Bian’s birthday?”

“You actually dare to use my grandpa’s full name?”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but roll his eyes in disdain when he saw Xie Lei’s message.

I know my identity now. I’m the Yellow Emperor of the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors of the ancients times and one of the big shots of the Rogue Immortals. So what if I called Xie Bian directly by his name?

It’s just that I’m rather weak now, otherwise...

“Full name or what? What are you coming to me about Xie Bian’s birthday for? That is an issue for you descendants.”

Is this person an idiot!?

Xie Lei, who sat on a stone chair in his back garden frowned. Bu Er sat on his side as he tried to put a puzzle together on the table...

“Bu Er, say, do you think this person is playing dumb with me?”

“Bu Er doesn’t know,” Bu Er tilted his head in a moe manner. “Bu Er has never been human before, so doesn’t know their thoughts.”

“Never mind, just keep playing with the puzzle!”

“Oh!” Bu Er started to concentrate on the puzzle once again.

XIe Lei licked his lips and looked at the news on the screen.

“Big Bro, just stop messing with little brother. Little brother wants to get some treasures from the mortal realm.”

Ye Zichen, who was smoking within the supermarket, was stunned by Xie Lei’s message.

Big Bro!

This brat could actually lower himself down so much?

At that moment, Xie Lei sent another message over.

“Truth be told, although little brother is the Ghost Marshal’s descendent, there is a huge competition within the family. I’m one of those who are not very welcome. That is something you can tell

from my residence. The others in the family all usually live in the Ghost Capital, but I am living in the rural areas of the Ghost Region that overlaps with the Mortal Realm.”

Seriously...

There is competition within the family when people are alive, but it was no different when dead.

Ye Zichen sighed when he said the pitiful message.

“How about I send you two rows of cigarettes?”

“Cigarettes? My grandpa doesn’t seem to like that sort of thing.”

“Doesn’t like them?”

Cigarettes are things that sold very well in the male deity community. Even King Qinguang of the Underworld awarded White Impermanence with a lot of treasures because she gave him a row of cigarettes.

Xie Bian actually didn’t like this sort of thing!

“My grandpa likes tea from the Mortal Realm!”

This Ghost Marshal understands the need to keep himself in good health!

Ye Zichen walked around the supermarket, and remembered that he seemed to have ordered some jasmine tea that sold for two yuan

per packet a while ago.

After a while, Ye ZIchen managed to find the crushed jasmine tea with the help of the Fiery Eyes of Truth.

Scan.

Send.

Dingdong.

Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei received your red packet.

“This...”

Xie Lei looked at the packet of tea in his hands with his eyes wide open.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also replied.

“I don’t have great tea leaves here, so I’ll give this to you first. I’ll send you better ones if I find some.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei increased by 100. Current intimacy level: 200.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: 200.

“Big Bro, thank you so much.”

In recent years, Xie Lei had always been shunned by the younger generation in the family, while Xie Bian had been busy at work, so he didn't have time to worry about the competition between the youngsters.

The only day that Xie Lei could shine was on Xie Bian's birthday feast.

With this packet of tea, he had a chance.

When that happens...

“Bro, if you need little brother to do anything, then little brother will definitely help you do it if little brother is capable of that.”

The moment Ye Zichen saw this message, he squinted his eyes.

“Are you sure?”

“I’m sure!

“Then how about adding me to the Underworld’s group chat?”

# **Chapter 243 – Entering The Underworld’s Staff Chat**

---

I have already put off entering the Underworld’s WeChat group for far too long. Although that geezer, Taibai Jinxing, hasn’t been hurrying me, it still isn’t a reason for me to not get myself in.

Xie Lei was surprised by Ye Zichen’s message.

The Underworld does have an internal staff chat, but the only people that can get into the group have an official rank above a Level 3 Ghost Servant. Ye Zichen is just a mortal...

“Big Brother Ye, our Underworld’s chat can only be entered by Level 3 Ghost Servants and above.”

Level 3 Ghost Servant?

Ye Zichen quickly took a glance at his Yinyang Box.

Level 4 Ghost Servant!

“Invite me in, my rank is high enough.”

Xie Lei was stunned for nearly a minute after seeing Ye Zichen's message. Even ghosts that had stayed in the Underworld for one hundred years might not be able to get a rank of a Level 3 Ghost Servant...

While thinking that it might just be Ye Zichen saying things to make him to believe it...

You invited Only Idealism to the group chat.

I really got in.

Ye Zichen looked at the message of entering the group in shock, while his face was filled with excitement...

I finally made it into the Underworld's group chat. I don't need to be afraid the next time Taibai Jinxing talks to me anymore.

Ox-Head: New ghost, report your three sizes.

Horse-Face: Caught a moe new guy. He seems to have been brought in by Marshal Xie's third grandson.

Judge Cui: New person, what is your official rank? I'm going to make a record of it.

Judge Cui (崔判官) / Cui Jue (崔珏) is one of the judges of the Underworld, and is often perceived to be the leader of the rest of the judges.

Ox-Head: @Horse-Face, are you seeking death? You dare to say that Young Master Xie Lei is the third grandson?

Hua Tuo: Oh wow, another new person entered the group.

Hua Tuo (华佗) – One of the most famous, if not the most famous, doctor in Chinese History. He is often known as 神医, literally translated as God Doctor.

Ye Zichen looked at the messages in the Underworld group blankly. It's more or less the same, all of this bullshit is pretty familiar...

But who the hell is this Hua Tuo? Could he really be the Hua Tuo in history?

Ox-Head: Why haven't the new ghost spoken up yet?

Ox-Head brought up the case in the group once again, causing Ye Zichen to quickly send Xie Lei a private message.

“@ Me in the group and tell them I’m your subordinate.”

“Is that really good?” Xie Lei asked in hesitation. “I never treated you as a subordinate, I’m the little bro.”

Why is this brat so stubborn?

Wouldn’t I get ripped apart if you told the group that you’re my lackey?

“Strategy, this is a sort of strategy! It’ll be fine if you just say that.”

“Then alright.”

Not long later, Ye Zichen saw that Xie Lei mentioned him in the Underworld group chat.

Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei: @Only Idealism. This is my subordinate, I hope you guys will take care of him.

Ox-Head: We'll definitely take good care of Young Master Xie's subordinate.

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Judge Cui: Since it's like that, then I won't record down the official rank.

Ye Zichen finally decided to stop lurking in the group when he saw that most of the people had seen the messages.

Ye Zichen: Hello, everyone.

Ox-Head: Hihi, we're a family now, we should get more intimate.

Ye Zichen: Sure.

The ones in the chat talked a bit more about Ye Zichen, the new ghost in the group, before returning to their usual chit-chat.

Ye Zichen lurked in the group for a while...

So stingy.

They don't hand out red packets.

Could handing out red packets not be a trend in the Underworld's chat?

Ye Zichen, who refused to believe it, lurked in the group for another half an hour. Most of the time, the group chatted about interesting things they saw or heard while they went out to capture ghosts...

But there have been no red packets.

Ye Zichen decided to give up when he saw that there still weren't any red packets sent.

At that very moment...

Dingdong.

A red packet suddenly appeared on the screen.

Ye Zichen had lurked so long for that very moment.

Poke.

You received Level 3 Ghost Messenger Xie Qiang's red packet.

Azure Underworld Fruit x1.

Azure Underworld Fruit: Fruit from the Azure Underworld Vine in the coldest parts of the Underworld.

Effect: A huge increase to the cultivation of ghost servant leveled experts.

Dingdong.

The system has detected Azure Underworld Fruit, an item needed to level up Immortal Heart of Pure Yang.

Items for Immortal Heart of Pure Yang to level up to Level 4 activated.

Azure Underworld Fruit x1.

Hell's Lotus x1.

The series of system notifications was not the main point, the main important was...

Level 3 Ghost Messenger Xie Qiang: I had heard that my disappointing third younger brother invited his subordinate into the group. It seemed like he doesn't have anything nice to send red packets with, so I, the elder brother, will send it for him.

Ox-Head: Young Master Xie is generous.

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Hua Tuo: These brotherly feelings truly makes people envious. However, this old one did not manage to snatch any, these youngsters are way too quick.

Level 3 Ghost Messenger Xie Qiang: @ Hua Tuo, I'll send a private packet for Elder Hua later.

Hua Tuo: How could I accept...

Ye Zichen the professional lurker glanced at the scrolling messages. This person who sent red packets should be Xie Bian's grandson, and from the way these people addressed him, he

seemed to be the eldest one.

Level 3 Ghost Messenger Xie Qiang: @Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei, little brother, are you not going to come out and thank me? You couldn't have forgotten the Xie family's courtesy, right?

Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei: Thank you big brother for sending red packets in my place, but little brother merely forgot to send it.

Dingdong.

With that, another red packet appeared on the screen.

Poke.

## Wind and Thunder Fruit x1

Wind and Thunder Fruit: A fruit bore by the Wind and Thunder Tree on the walls of the Wailing Canyons on the thirteenth layer of Hell.

Effect: It can help temper the purity of one's celestial spiritual energy.

Ox-Head: Third Young Master Xie is generous.

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Hua Tuo: I didn't grab it again. <insert a row of regretful emojis>

Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei: If Elder Hua needs it, I'll send a private packet to you later!

Level 3 Ghost Messenger Xie Qiang: Third little brother, why force yourself so!

Level 1 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei: It is none of big brother's business.

With that, neither Xie Lei nor Xie Qiang spoke up again in the group. All of a sudden, the group's aura became a bit awkward. Even Ox-Head nor Horse-Face, who were both rather active, dared to speak.

It seems like the relationship between these brothers is truly very tense!

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and left the group. When he looked up, he saw Lu Lu glancing at him with a smile.

“Oh my f\*cking god!”

Ye ZIchen nearly fell down from his chair when he saw that someone had suddenly appeared in front of him.

Lu Lu blinked her cute eyes, and pouted her tender lips slightly, “Why are you so scared!?”

“Why did you come so secretively?” Ye Zichen coughed dryly.

Lu Lu outed, “I came so long ago, and only didn’t disturb you since I saw you messing with your phone.”

“Then you saw everything?”

“I saw a little, just stuff like Ox-Head and Horse-Face. Are you chatting with people from the Underworld?” Lu Lu blinked her larger watery eyes, which were filled with curiosity. “Also, why is there a ghost girl by your side? What does she do?”

“You have so many questions,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Lu Lu. Then he signaled Liu Qing to return back to the Dragon Eye first before lighting a cigarette for himself with a frown. “What did you come find me for?”

“To protect you!” Lu Lu smiled. “I just felt two people stare at you suspiciously, so I helped you deal with them on my way inside. Don’t thank me too much!”

“What?”

Ye Zichen shot up from the chair, and saw the two Hou brothers lying at the entrance of the supermarket with swollen faces, while they had been tied up...

“They’re from my side!”

# Chapter 244 – The Soul That Burns For Love

---

After Ye Zichen exchanged two pills for the two Hou brothers to eat, he looked at Lu Lu. She was standing there with her head lowered like a child that had made a mistake, Ye Zichen's face was covered with a look of speechlessness, "Say, you..."

Lu Lu pouted, then blinked her watery eyes, "I didn't know that they were your bodyguards, I just felt that they kept staring at you suspiciously. You will face any danger at any moment after reincarnating, that's why I... What's more, your bodyguards are too weak."

...

Ye Zichen was surprised, while the Hou Brothers blushed.

We got looked down upon.

Creak.

A white van parked in front of the supermarket. Ye Zichen looked up and saw that the first one to get out of the car was the long-haired student he had beaten up, while the person who followed was the buzz cut young man who now had a piece of paper in his nose.

“Boss, there was no mistake, that brat is seriously here...” The long-haired young man’s right face was still swollen, most likely due to the damage from Ye Zichen’s slap not having gone down.

The young man with the buzz cut, who stood behind him, immediately smacked the long-haired young man’s head.

“Bullshit, it’s information that laozi spent a lot to buy.”

With that, he strode forward with his hands on his waist.

“Why did you... come so excitedly for?” Ye Zichen stood up from the chair. Then, Lu Lu also stood up after him and stuck by his side.

The buzz cut haired young man instantly exploded when he saw Lu Lu.

“Grandson, you already have such a pretty girl by your f\*cking side, why are you fighting with me over Sun Yige! You two-timer!”

“... I can see that you are rather obsessed,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance, then shook his head. “How am I a two-timer?”

“If you want to say that you aren’t Sun Yige’s boyfriend, then

“why the f\*ck did you hit my guy?”

“Oh, you’re talking about that!” Ye Zichen pursed his lips with a smile. “It’s mostly because your subordinate was too retarded, so I just felt like beating him up.”

“Hehe...” The young man with a buzz cut smiled darkly, then prepared his Tiger Fist stance. “I will duel you, for my sincerest love!”

With that, the buzz cut young man started up again, “Only make a move when I say so. My Tiger Fist takes a rather long time to charge, I lost to you just now only because I didn’t finish charging.”

This guy is too retarded.

Telling others to wait a bit when fighting? And he even exposed his own weakness?

However, Ye Zichen had nothing better to do, so he decided to wait.

One minute passed.

Five minutes passed.

...

“So slow!” When Ye Zichen finished smoking one cigarette, Lu Lu twitched her mouth speechlessly.

Ye Zichen, who had lost his patience, instantly walked forward after he took out his phone to take a look at the time!

Ding dang dong...

Ye Zichen knocked down the buzz cut young man once again in less than three seconds.

“Sorry, I’m in a hurry.”

After Ye Zichen and Lu Lu left, the buzz cut young man stood up from the ground with the long-haired young man’s support.

His face was swollen, and his other nostril bled.

“Boss...”

“Just half a minute longer, just half a minute!”

The young man with a buzz cut clenched his fist tightly, while his eyes were filled with his lack of resignation.

The long-haired young man agreed, “Yeah, that grandson only knows how to use surprise attacks, otherwise, Boss would definitely beat his teeth out.”

“For my purest and sincerest love, I am willing to ignite my soul,” the buzz cut haired young man’s eyes were filled with flames. Even though blood flowed from his nostril, down his lips and dripped onto the ground, he continued to look up high...

Just to pose!

“But before then...” He looked over at the supermarket in front of him and smiled coldly. “This should be the brat’s supermarket, right? Hmph, since he is heartless, then I will be too.”

With that, the two walked towards the supermarket. However, before they got there, two muscular men appeared in front of them...

The Hou brothers!

Ding dang dong...

The Hou brothers stood in front off the supermarket with their bruised eyes, while the buzz cut young man’s and the long haired

young man's heads were as swollen like a pig's head...

“Have to... endure!” The buzz cut young man bit his lips, while tears shimmered in his eyes. However, he forced the tears back.

“The guys from my place are all north easterners...”

A cheerful ringtone sounded out. The buzz cut young man reached into his pocket to place his phone by his ear. He immediately started to cry when he heard the voice in the call.

“Dad, I got beaten up!”

...

“Lu Lu, do you have no private matters at all?” Ye Zichen finally couldn’t help but stop the moment Lu Lu followed him pass the forty eighth intersection.

“I don’t think so. What’s more, I just want to follow you!” Lu Lu tilted her head with a moe expression.

Ye Zichen sighed helplessly, “Did I follow you like this in my previous life as well? No matter what, I was Zhang Junbao, right? I can’t possibly follow you every day, right?”

“Even if it wasn’t every day, it’s more or less the same,” Lu Lu blinked her eyes then giggled. “I’m never ever been here before, take me around! I heard a lot of classmates say that girls like to go shopping, help me experience that.”

Ye Zichen scratched his head, then looked at where they are.

It seems like the business street is just up ahead...

“Sure.”

It could be said that shopping was a woman's nature. Even Lu Lu's eyes became covered in stars when she saw the many products, pretty clothes and shoes.

“Let go, I told you very clearly, we're over.”

An angry roar sounded out in the shopping mall. Many customers looked over, including Ye Zichen.

A rather tall and handsome man cursed loudly by the shopping mall's escalator.

A sobbing woman kneeled next to him. From the sounds of it, the woman seems to be the man's ex.

"Li En, you can't treat me like this," the woman wailed.

A hint of sullenness flashed across the man's eyes as he kicked the woman away, "Laozi is sick of playing with you. You understand?"

Plenty of customers chatted softly near Ye Zichen, and most of it were criticism towards him.

"So scummy."

Ye Zichen licked his lips and raised his eyebrows at Lu Lu due to

it not being related to him, “Let’s go.”

“We aren’t going to help? That girl is so pitiful,” Lu Lu pouted.

Ye Zichen rubbed her head, “Being chivalrous is bad here. It’s fine if you want to just look, but don’t butt your head in. I’ll give you a lesson now, when it doesn’t concern you, ignore it, is the norm here! Didn’t you say that you’re thirsty just now? There’s a drinks store in front, I’ll take you there!”

“Oh, sure!”

“Li En, don’t think that I don’t know why you left me! Isn’t it just for that woman called Mu Jinglei!” The woman screamed near the escalator.

Ye Zichen, who was going to take Lu Lu to the drinks store

suddenly stopped, then turned around and walked quickly towards the escalator.

# Chapter 245 – Scum

---

“What are you going over there for? Aren’t we going to get drinks?” Lu Lu followed quickly behind him.

Ye Zichen chuckled, then patted her shoulders, “Let me teach you something else. Although they say ignore it when it doesn’t concern you, there is another saying that says roar when you see unjust acts, and take action when the time is right!”

With that, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and quickly walked towards the escalators.

If he didn’t make a mistake, the woman mentioned Mu Jinglei. If it’s like that, then he must roar!

“Li En, don’t think that I, Bao Xi, is an idiot. I know about your dealings behind my back very clearly!”

The woman on the floor, who called herself Bao Xi, stared at the man in front of her and took out her phone and opened up the gallery...

The photos in the gallery were all ones Li En took with a woman.

“Beauty, can I take a look at those photos?” Ye Zichen smiled warmly.

Bao Xi nodded, handed the phone over and shouted, “Everyone, take a look. Remember the looks of this scum. If anyone knows the girl in the photo, hurry up and tell her to stay away from this scum. Otherwise, the current me is the future her...”

All of the photos in the phone were clearly taken in secret, and most of them were merely their backs. However, one of the photos from the side allowed Ye Zichen to recognize that the girl was truly Mu Jinglei.

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked Li En in rage, sending him flying four to five meters away.

Then, Lu Lu also helped Bao Xi up from the floor. At the same time, Ye Zichen cracked his neck and slowly walked towards Li En.

“Security...” Li En called for the shopping mall’s security with fear in his eyes.

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped Li En’s face, and grabbed him by the collar...

“Mu Jinglei is your girlfriend?”

“Sec...”

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped Li En once again, and this time, it caused Li En's face to swell up.

“Answer my question.”

“You-You are her boyfriend? Impossible, she's single,” Li En answered frantically.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen smiled, cracked his neck before slapping Li En once again, “It seems like that’s the case. Now, I announce that you two have broken up.”

Thinking that it was about time the security arrived, Ye Zichen threw Li En back onto the ground with force.

“Don’t say that I didn’t warn you. If you don’t break up, then I’ll make it so that you can’t stay in Bingcheng anymore,” Ye Zichen snorted at Li En, then put his hands in his pockets and walked in front of Lu Lu and Bao Xi. “You aren’t unhappy that I hit your ex, right?”

“It’s better if you hit that scum to death,” Bao Xi cursed fiercely. “Do you know Mu Jinglei? If you know her, then hurry up and tell her not to be fooled by this scum’s appearance. Back then, I...”

Bao Xi couldn't help but start crying when she mentioned her sadness.

"It'll all be over."

Not long after Ye Zichen and Li En left the escalator, the security team hurried over with Mu Jinglei.

"Li En," Mu Jinglei squatted worriedly beside him and caressed Li En's face with her fingers. "Why did you fight with someone else?"

"It's nothing. Just now, an employee from my company came over to complain to me since her manager keeps on targeting her. I had wanted to enlighten her, but then she slapped me when she got worked up."

“You should handle the managers in your company properly. How can it be okay for you to take the blame whenever they do something wrong?” Mu Jinglei’s face was filled with anger and annoyance.

Li En smiled, then reached out to caress her hair, “Since I’m the boss, I have to give up more than others.”

Many people in the crowd were able to guess that the woman in front of them was the other woman in the incident.

Some nice people wanted to go and expose Li En, but they were yanked away by the people around them.

Since they heard that he had already established a company, it clearly meant that he wasn’t someone they could mess with.

Li En stood up from the ground with Mu Jinglei's support and dusted himself off with his hands.

“Jinglei, we've known each other for more than a year. Actually, I have something that I've always wanted to say to you!”

“What are you gonna say? Let's go to the hospital first,” Mu Jinglei held Li En and started to walk out of the mall.

However, Li En shook his head and took out a ring from his pocket, while he kneeled down with one leg, “Marry me.”

This was the pickup strategy that Li En used most. A proposal with a ring combined with his sweet words would make the majority of women climb onto his bed at night.

From his many years of experience of picking girls up, he could

tell that Mu Jinglei was a virgin.

Didn't that man want me to leave Mu Jinglei just now? Sure...

But even if I leave her, she'll be a second-hand good then!

Mu Jinglei was shocked by this as well. It was impossible for her heart not to be moved. During the year that they have been dating, Li En truly felt like her ideal type...

However...

She just felt like the two are still a distance away from getting married.

Mu Jinglei bit her lips and helped Li En up, “Li En, can you let me consider it?”

“What else is there to consider? Do you still need to test me after so long?” Li En questioned her in a perfect manner.

Mu Jinglei shook her head, “No, but I just feel like we’re a distance away from getting married. Let me consider it, let’s go to the hospital to have a look at your injuries first.”

“Never mind!” Li En, who had maintained a warm smile, suddenly flung Mu Jinglei’s hand away before turning towards the elevator to leave.

Actually, this was one of his many strategies as well – taking a step back to make two steps forward!

If there was no surprise, then Mu Jinglei would call him before sundown, and even if she doesn't, he still have a plan B.

Li En took out his phone, covered his swollen face and said sullenly to the person on the other side of the line, "Play a few huge ones with him, and this time, make him lose!"

Ye Zichen was able to learn from Bao Xi that Li En was the owner of a company. Of course, the company was rather small, but he was a successful person among his peers.

Ye Zichen didn't worry that much about it. He had already warned Li En. If Li En still doesn't stop, then Ye Zichen wasn't unwilling to use some methods that only dandies would use to deal with him.

The sun set.

Due to Ye Zichen, the School Beauty Harvester, acting once again, his roommates decided to isolate him.

Ye Zichen was lonely as he laid on the dormitory bed and looked at WeChat.

Aside from a few WeChat merchants, Yue Lao was the person that posted new stuff on his Moments the most frequently.

However, the frequency had already dropped either due to complaints from the other deities, or because such frequent advertisement was no longer needed due to his reputation.

Dingodng.

At that moment, Ye Zichen's phone rang.

It was a familiar sound.

A red packet has arrived.

# Chapter 246 – Abusing The Weakness

---

Just which group sent the red packet?

Ye Zichen quickly went to his chats and saw the Heavenly Court's chat group, which was at the top of the list.

Red Packet from the Heavenly Court.

Ye Zichen instantly felt slightly sad.

With the speed of those Heavenly Court deities, it would seriously be weird if I can grab a red packet now.

However, Ye Zichen still decided to give it a shot by clicking on the chat group.

Too slow. All the red packets were gone.

I knew it.

Under the urging of his curiosity, Ye Zichen took a look at the treasure inside the red packet.

The red packet was sent by [Wind Catching Ears](#). There were 100 red packets in total, all of which contained a Long-Distance Sound-Seeking Sigil.

Wind Catching Ears (顺风耳) is the name of a Chinese deity. Like his name suggests, he has very good hearing. He is also the brother of All-Seeing Eyes (千里眼).

Immortality Peach Fairy: Hehe, I got one. I can go and exchange it for cultivation experience at the pawn shop.

God of Thunder: @Immortality Peach Fairy, how much can you pawn it for?

Mother of Lightning: @Yue Lao, how much are you treating this sigil as?

God of Thunder: Yue Lao isn't in the group.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Ai, the more talkative ones in the group all left.

Wind Catching Ears: What? Some deities left?

Barefoot Immortal: Back then, there was a huge war in the group. It is no surprise that great deity Wind Catching Ears, who just entered the group, doesn't know.

All-Seeing Eyes: Could you tell us a little about it?

The Chinese name of All-Seeing Eyes (千里眼) literally means Thousand-Li Eyes, essentially meaning that he can see very far. As mentioned above, he is the brother of Wind Catching Ears.

Immortality Peach Fairy: @All-Seeing Eyes, great deity, there are admins monitoring the chat here. If you speak carelessly, you'll get your salary reduced.

Wu Gang: Ai.

Ye Zichen: Uhm, don't speak carelessly. If that geezer, Taibai Jinxing, sees it, then you wouldn't avoid some scolding. @All-Seeing Eyes, your turn to send red packets.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Great deity has spoken.

Chang'e: <blushing emoji>

Wu Gang: Ai.

Heavenly Soldier A: Ai!

A series of sighs filled the screen. From the looks of it, these damn singles still didn't recover from the trauma from Chang'e and my dog food.

All-Seeing Eye: @Only Idealism, is this Sky Sovereign Nameless, who is renowned in the Heavenly Court recently?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Correct, but no reward. Great deity told you to send red packets!

God of Thunder: Red packet! Red packet!

Mother of Lightning: Red packet! Red packet!

All-Seeing Eyes: I've heard about your great name. I'll send the red packet right away.

Dingdong.

Poke!

Since Ye Zichen had not snatched any red packets lately in the Heavenly Court's chat group, the moment he managed to get one,

he even felt a bit moved.

You received All-Seeing Eye's Red Packet.

Thousand Li Tracking Sigil x1.

Thousand Li Tracking Sigil: Your eyes can see a distance of five hundred kilometers. Literally.

Ye Zichen took a glance at All-Seeing Eye's red packets. All of the one hundred red packets were for this sort of sigil.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. I thought I could get some sort of rare treasure...

Ye Zichen did not continue to chit-chat with the deities, and just left straight away.

Dingdong.

At that moment, Taibai Jinxing sent Ye Zichen a red packet.

Taibai Jinxing: You helped this old one to moderate the group. Not bad, that's worthy of a reward.

Who helped him moderate the group?

Ye Zichen was stunned, then he instantly thought of the excuse he had used to ask for a red packet.

Even that counted as moderating the chat!

Taibai Jinxing: This sovereign has been rather busy recently. The deities in the group all respect and fear you quite a bit, you can speak up more in it from now on. This sovereign will reward you well.

...

“Great deity, I’m rather busy in real life too, so let’s talk about moderating the chat another time.”

“Just take a look at the group when you have time. Oh yeah, how’s the infiltration of the Underworld going?”

“Mission accomplished!”

“Really?”

It was clear that Taibai Jinxing still had his doubts about Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen didn't explain. Instead, he directly screenshotted the chat group and sent the image over.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Taibai Jinxing increased by 100.  
Current intimacy level: 200.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: Trusted.

“Not bad, this is your reward for infiltrating into the Underworld group.”

Dingdong.

A red packet appeared on the screen. Ye Zichen collected it.

You received Taibai Jinxing's red packet.

Cultivation experience x10000.

Ye Zichen instantly laughed when he saw the mission reward. He had worked so hard to get into the Underworld group in order to farm the intimacy level of the Underworld circle...

Only to get ten thousand cultivation experience in exchange.

“Great deity Taibai, you’re too stingy!”

Ye Zichen was speechless.

Taibai Jinxing was stunned for a moment, before he sent his reply.

“How so?”

“I do business in the Heavenly Court, it’s not like you don’t know of it. Yue Lao sends me several hundred cultivation experience whenever he stocks up. I worked so hard to get into the Underworld group and you merely gave me ten thousand cultivation experience? Tell me, are you stingy or not?”

“You still dare to mention this!?” Taibai Jinxing frowned. “Recently, these junk foods you have sent over to our Heavenly Court has severely affected its beauty. Peels and wrappers can be seen everywhere, this includes your packaging as well as poison...”

“Don’t hold me in such high regard, can’t you guys, the deities, deal with such a little problem?”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. Even somewhere like the Modern Realm, where the mortals lived, can deal with that. He refused to believe that the deities in the Heavenly Court can’t!

“Heh!”

Taibai Jinxing snorted coldly, and seemingly accepted the argument.

“Great deity Taibai, don’t worry about such small things with a civilian like me. I feel like you should raise the mission reward.”

“How do you want to do so? A hundred thousand cultivation experience?”

Taibai Jinxing truly was unable to do anything despite being unwilling to negotiate with Ye Zichen.

Nobody in the Heavenly Court could infiltrate into the Underworld staff chat. Only someone like Ye Zichen, who was in the middle of the Three Realms, could do so.

“I don’t need cultivation experience, that’s something that even I can earn. I want some good treasures! Pills, sigils, celestial robes, secret scriptures or divine plants, basically anything useful to me is fine.”

“Don’t be too greedy.”

Taibai Jinxing frowned.

“Greedy? I don’t think so! I am putting a suitable level of effort it, so I naturally have to gain a suitable level of reward. What’s more, my job is seriously dangerous. I’m being a spy. In tv shows, if the spies are caught, they either die or get trashed!”

“This sovereign doesn’t understand what you’re talking about.”

“Then you don’t want to give me any. Fine, I’m done, I’m going to leave the group.”

Dingdong.

A voice message suddenly appeared on the screen. It seems like the geezer, Taibai Jinxing, is getting a bit anxious.

Ye Zichen clicked on the voice message with a smile, then heard an ancient and angry voice.

“Just what do you want! Don’t challenge this sovereign’s bottom line!”

“I want treasures!”

Ye Zichen would have been scared before when Taibai Jinxing got angry. However, just who was he? The reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, that's who.

The powerhouses of the Celestial Realm are all his bros, just why should he be afraid?

“I'll give you three hundred thousand cultivation experience!”

“No, I want treasures!”

The final purpose of earning cultivation experience was to exchange it for treasures in the Treasure Shop. However, not all the treasures were there, and that was a worse option than to

directly ask Taibai Jinxing to send it to him.

“You...”

“I’m going to leave the chat.”

Taibai Jinxing instantly gave up when he saw Ye Zichen’s message. After a brief struggle, he sighed helplessly.

“Fine!”

You finally caved in!

Taking advantage of your weakness was definitely useful!

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then returned the ten thousand cultivation experience. At the same time, he also sent a message.

“For this mission reward, I want a Hell’s Lotus!”

# Chapter 247 – Level 4 Immortal Heart Of Pure Yang

---

When Ye Zichen entered the Underworld's staff chat, he was able to get the Azure Underworld Fruit, which was one of the necessary items needed to level Immortal Heart of Pure Yang to Level 4.

Now, all he needed was a Hell's Lotus in order to level it up.

He had searched for it in the Treasure Shop before, but it wasn't there.

“What do you want a Hell's Lotus for?”

Taibai Jinxing raised his eyebrows and replied.

Ye Zichen knew that geezer definitely had such a treasure when he saw the message.

“Don’t care about that stuff so much. If you send me a Hell’s Lotus, then I’ll work for you. If you don’t, then I’ll leave the chat!”

“...”

Taibai Jinxing’s teeth chattered in his frustration. He clearly knew that Ye Zichen was just scaring him, but he didn’t dare to place the bet.

A person with nothing to lose has nothing to fear from someone with everything to lose... What if he really leaves the chat?

Taibai Jinxing clenched his teeth.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen smiled when he saw the red packet on the screen.

You received Taibai Jinxing's red packet.

Hell's Lotus x1.

The system has detected that Immortal Heart of Pure Yang is able to level up to Level 4. Would you like to level it up?

Yes.

Dingdong.

Immortal Heart of Pure Yang upgrade successful. Current Level:  
4.

Daily Experience Gain x8.

False Spiritual Body (52/100).

“Thanks, Taibai Jinxing!”

Ye Zichen smiled in satisfaction.

Meanwhile, Taibai Jinxing's face was covered in pain.

This was a treasure that I got from the Underworld ten thousand years ago. Since the Underworld and Heavenly Court have a really tense relationship right now, it could be said that this Hell's Lotus is an extreme treasure.

It was taken away by Ye Zichen, the mortal, just like that.

After a while, when Taibai Jinxing finally calmed himself down, he sent a message to Ye Zichen.

"You have the treasure now, so you have to work properly for me. Tell me immediately whenever a situation comes up with the Underworld."

"No problem. As long as I get the treasures, you'll definitely get

timely news from me!”

“I hope so!”

Ye Zichen arrived at Yu’s home at noon the next day.

Zhang Lingling had already fused with her lost spiritual soul, causing her to reveal a strange color.

It seems like this girl didn’t lose any memories, including...

“Ji Gongsheg!” Zhang Lingling screamed out in the room.

Ye Zichen smiled completely and utterly helplessly, then

shrugged, “Can you calm down for a moment? Let me introduce myself, I’m called Ye Zichen!”

“Hmph, in my eyes, you’re Ji Gongsheng!” With that, Zhang Lingling leaned over, hugged Ye Zichen’s arm with her hands and leaned her cheek on his shoulder.

“Ye...” Yu was completely dumbfounded when he saw this.

He looked blankly at Zhang Lingling and Ye Zichen stick together, while a sharp dagger appeared in his hands, “Ye Zichen, I thank you a lot for helping Lingling find her spiritual soul, but what do you mean by this?”

“...” Ye Zichen shrugged speechlessly. “Can’t you tell that I’m the victim here?”

Zhang Lingling stuck to Ye Zichen in her enjoyment. When she opened her eyes and saw the dagger in Yu's hands, she immediately exclaimed, "Second Uncle, what are you doing! Don't try to bully my Gongsheng!"

Zhang Lingling used her petite body to block in front of Ye Zichen.

Yu looked at the scene in surprise...

"Go and rest for a bit. Right now, you need to rest, I have some things to discuss with Yu."

"I don't want to go!"

"Hurry, do you want to see me angry?" Ye Zichen immediately frowned.

Seeing that, Zhang Lingling quickly patted Ye Zichen's brows, "Don't frown, I'll just go!"

After Ye Zichen sent Zhang Lingling back to her bedroom, Yu, who was still standing dumbfounded in the living room spoke up, "Can you tell me just what is going on? Why is my niece so clingy towards you..."

"You're asking me, but who am I supposed to ask!?" Ye Zichen glared. "Your niece must have mistaken me for someone else."

"Deal with the matter between yourselves by yourselves, I'm not getting involved."

"Hey, this uncle..."

Ye Zichen took out a cigarette from his pocket and lit it for himself, before sitting down and crossing his legs, “How is Huo Da acting recently?”

“Huo Da?” A strange expression surfaced in Yu’s face. “He went back to the capital in what seems to be a hurry!”

Ye Zichen smiled upon hearing that.

If there was no surprise, then it should be the actions of the God of Fortune, which caused some threats to the Huo family’s economy.

“Going back to the capital is good. At least he won’t tell you to kill me every single day, making me live in fear,” Yu smiled.

A hint of coldness surfaced on Yu's face, 'Actually... Huo Da had told me to kill you if I find the chance before he left!"

Zing.

A sharp dagger appeared in his hands.

"Say, am I going to succeed if I take action now?"

Cough cough!

Ye Zichen immediately coughed intensely due to choking on the smoke.

He looked vigilantly to the side. Feeling Ye Zichen's nervousness, Yu shrugged, put away the dagger and smiled, "I'm just kidding. Don't be nervous. The current me is unable to be of any threat towards you."

"Your joke is truly terrible."

When Ye Zichen left Yu's place, he hurried towards Xiao Yumei's medical company.

Although the amount of registration funds for the company was shocking, the company itself wasn't very large.

When Ye Zichen arrived at Xiao Yumei's office, he directly pushed the door and entered without knocking.

Within the office, Xiao Yumei took sips of coffee as she stood by the window. She did not even notice Ye Zichen enter.

“Yumei,” Ye Zichen called out softly by the door.

At that moment, Xiao Yumei turned around and revealed a forceful smile, “You came.”

Whenever she made such an expression, it meant that she reached some sort of annoyance, or some sort of trouble.

“Yeah, I’ve missed you!” Ye Zichen walked next to Xiao Yumei with a smile. Then, he took over the cup of coffee in her hands and finished it. “It seems like you aren’t in the best of moods. Or is there some sort of trouble?”

With that, Ye Zichen placed the coffee cup back onto the desk.

Xiao Yumei smiled and asked in surprise, “You can tell?”

“What’s so surprising? Do you know what my eyes are? They’re the Fiery Eyes of Truth! There isn’t anything I can see or tell!” Ye Zichen pulled Xiao Yumei into his embrace and looked at her watery eyes. “Let me see, just what caused our Yumei to get so troubled.”

“Then try,” Xiao Yumei smiled.

Ye Zichen acted like a fake fortune teller as he moved his fingers and rolled his eyes, “Is our Yumei too pretty, and got too annoyed because of there being too many pursuers? Wow, if that really is the case, then I’m the one who should be troubled! I’m just a poor student who can’t compare with those successful people!”

“Hehe, they’re just a bunch of hypocritical dogs,” Xiao Yumei

snorted with a smile.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen was stunned as he looked at her, “It can’t be, I really guessed it right?”

## Chapter 248 – I Have A Bad Temper

---

Xiao Yumei couldn't help but smile when she saw Ye Zichen's look of surprise, causing her to slide her white fingers across his cheek, "No, I'm just expressing my mood out!"

"You scared me," Ye Zichen let out a sigh of relief. I just chased Huo Da, that disaster away, if another one popped out, I seriously would have to use extreme methods. "Then what happened? Something happened with the medical company?"

Xiao Yumei was slightly stunned upon hearing that, causing her to turn Ye Zichen's head with her hands to take several closer looks, "Are you really my little man? When did you become so smart?"

"..."

Ye Zichen's expression darkened. Was I really that dumb before? Was there really a need to have such a huge reaction when I asked

that level of a question!?

Ye Zichen held Xiao Yumei's hand and smiled, "What happened with the medical company? Did a problem come up with the operational side?"

"There aren't any issues with that. In fact, the market is actually unusually heated," Xiao Yumei replied plainly.

"That's good news!"

If the market has a high demand, it means that the company is earning money, it should be the cause of Xiao Yumei's expression.

"Since the market is big, there's a lot of profits. When there's a lot of profits, there are always going to be people that want a share..."

“So it’s like that!” A hint of smile appeared on Ye Zichen’s face.

Dong dong dong.

Someone knocked on the office door. Not long after, Li Minghu walked into the office.

“Director Xiao. Oh, Boss Ye is here too,” Li Minghu raised his eyebrows. Xiao Yumei and Ye Zichen both nodded towards him before they all sat down on the sofa.

“Tiger disturbed your business, right? Tiger apologizes to you right here, but I do have urgent matters to discuss with you.”

“What is it?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Meanwhile, Xiao Yumei revealed a troubled look beside him, as if she had already guessed Li Minghu’s purpose for coming over.

“Ai, our special medicine sold really well in the market before, but for some reason, it just can’t be sold these past few days,” Li Minghu squinted his eyes.

Ye Zichen looked towards Xiao Yumei, and when he saw her expression, he couldn’t help but ask, “Yumei, do you know something?”

“Mhmm,” Xiao Yumei nodded. “It should be that Han family’s child, Han Qi!”

“Who’s he?” Ye Zichen frowned.

Li Minghu, who sat opposite him, was stunned, “Boss Ye, you don’t know Han Qi? Han Qi, the second young master of the Han family, which is part of the three great families of Bingcheng! If it really is him behind it all, then it is a bit troublesome.”

Dong dong dong.

At that moment, someone knocked on the office door.

“Director Xiao, that guy came again,” Li Shuang frowned at the entrance.

Xiao Yumei also revealed a troubled look, “I understand, I’ll be right there.”

After her reply, Xiao Yumei couldn’t help but shake her head with a laugh, “Speak of the devil! Han Qi’s here!”

A young man, who had dyed his hair a wine red, sat on the sofa in the lobby of the medical company. The young man appeared like a delinquent with tattoos covering his arms and fingers.

Nobody could imagine that this young man was actually Han Qi, the second young master of Bingcheng's Han family.

"Hey, girl, did you go and call your boss? I've been sitting here for nearly five minutes!" Hang Qi's voice was slightly sharp, while his face was covered in an impatient expression.

"Why is Young Master Han so angry?" Xiao Yumei walked out with a smile.

Han Qi's eyes lit up, then licked his lips, while he swept his greedy gaze over her, "Boss Xiao's body is getting better and better, and your face is getting prettier!"

“I thank Young Master Han’s praise. I wonder what did Young Master Han come here for...” Xiao Yumei replied plainly.

“Does Director Xiao not know that I only have two purposes in coming here?” Han Qi smiled faintly.

“Young Master Han, I, Xiao Yumei, naturally welcome you if you want to invest in our medical company. However, buying shares with just one yuan seems a bit illogical, right?” A faint smile covered Xiao Yumei’s face.

“Logic is just for people. What’s more, when Director Xiao is with me in the future, isn’t the country going to be mine!?”

“You would have to ask my man about that,” With that, Xiao Yumei hugged Ye Zichen’s arm sweetly.

Han Qi had already noticed Ye Zichen from the get go, but he had thought that Ye Zichen was merely a business associate or a bodyguard etc...

“Oh yeah, he’s also the real owner of this medical company!” The reason Xiao Yumei said this was due to Ye Zichen telling her to beforehand.

She might not know how to handle these shameless bastards, but he did!

“This grandson is Han Qi?” Ye Zichen laughed. Before seeing Han Qi in person, he thought the grandson was someone with a lot of talent.

He’s just a f\*cking delinquent!

And a delinquent with a rather low intelligence at that!

“You’re cursing at me?” Han Qi frowned.

Ye Zichen nodded, “He’s not seriously dumb, at least he knows how to identify people talking about him!”

“You...” Han Qi pointed with his face full of darkness and rage.

Ye Zichen merely whistled and shrugged in reaction, “Don’t point at me. I don’t have a great temper. Didn’t you hear Yumei say that this company is mine? If you want to invest, then speak properly to me!”

“Hehe, grandson, you’ve overestimated yourself way too much, haven’t you?” Han Qi sneered. “I’ll give you two choices!”

“Say it!”

“One, I’ll force your company to close down and make you live the rest of your life in fear!”

“Two, hand the company over to me obediently. Make the woman beside you be with me until I get tired of her!”

Han Qi reached out two fingers menacingly.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen’s smiling face gradually turned dark... “I told you already. I have a bad temper!”

With that, Ye Zichen reached out towards Han Qi's fingers!

Crack.

"F\*ck... You..." Han Qi's face turned bright red as he glared at Ye Zichen like a bull. Then, he subconsciously reached out to point at Ye Zichen with his other finger.

Crack.

"You seriously have a bad memory, don't you? I said it already, I have a bad temper!!"

"You are f\*cking seeking death!" Han Qi curled his body and shouted with a menacing gaze.

Ye Zichen kicked him back, then stepped on him. Then, Ye Zichen put his hands into his pockets and smiled, “I don’t know whether I’m seeking death or not. I just know that if you dare to bullshit about anything else, then you won’t live long!”

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked Han Qi to the revolving doors.

“F\*ck off! If you dare to come here and act cocky again, I can’t guarantee that you’ll walk out alive.”

“Grandson, you’re good. Just f\*cking wait, if laozi doesn’t kill you, laozi’s surname isn’t Han!” Han Qi’s eyes were filled with menace as he cursed as he held his arm.

“You’re not leaving?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled. Then, his gaze begun to sullen, while his hands remained in his pockets. “If you don’t want to leave, then just stay here forever!”

# Chapter 249 – Borrowing Money

---

“Boss Ye, you might cause trouble by doing that,” Li Minghu raised his eyebrows slightly as he looked at the fleeing Han Qi.

“How come? Does Boss Hu think that Han Qi can actually do something to me?” To be frank, Ye Zichen truly didn’t take this sort of brainless young master who only knew how to bully people by using his family’s status seriously.

“You naturally would not need to worry if it was just Han Qi,” Li Minghu frowned. “What worries me more is Han Qi’s older brother, Han Yu!”

“Han Yu?”

“Yes!” Li Minghu nodded. “Han Yu is the first young master of the Han family, and one of the more famous young masters. He is capable and resolute. He isn’t someone that the trash, Han Qi, can compare up to.”

“You feel like he would do something to the company?” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

“His relationship with Han Qi doesn’t seem all that good, but no matter what, Han Qi is from the Han family. Han Yu might help his little brother get even just to put on a show for his elders. I know that Boss Ye knows Young Master Su, but the military doesn’t get involved into politics...” Li Minghu looked at Ye Zichen meaningfully.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen smiled, “When the water rises, we’ll use earth to dam it; when the soldiers arrive, we’ll use a general to ward them off. Don’t fret!”

After Ye Zichen told the Hou brothers by Xiao Yumei’s side to protect her safety, Ye Zichen left the medical company and called Su Yiyun.

“Ye-zi, do you have some important matters for you to find me so urgently?”

Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun sat by the window in a drinks store near Polytechnic University. Both of them held a glass of watermelon juice in their hands.

“What, can’t I find you, my brother-in-law, if there isn’t anything?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully, then got serious. “I do indeed have stuff to say to you.”

“I knew it. Say it, what do you need my help with?” Su Yiyun smiled faintly.

“Some issues came up with the medical company,” Ye Zichen frowned.

“Another issue!?” Su Yiyun was stunned.

He had just gotten the paperwork for the medical company done a few days ago, and now another issue arose.

“It seems like this company I have shares in truly does get into a lot of trouble. If this continues to happen, I might have to withdraw my investment. Say it, what issue came up with the medical company again?” Su Yiyun smiled helplessly.

“Han Qi wants to buy shares with one yuan!”

“The disappointing grandson of the Han family?” Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows and twitched his mouth. “One yuan, he truly has a huge appetite. Ignore this grandson, he’ll stop after I find time to beat him up.”

“I already beat him up!” Ye Zichen shrugged. “I broke three of his fingers!”

“...”

Su Yiyun blanked out for a moment. Then after a long while, he raised his eyebrows and raised his thumb at Ye Zichen, “Amazing, you truly are brave. When I said beat him up, I meant just kicking him a few times at most, you actually dared to break his fingers.”

“What? It’s a lot of trouble? Ye Zichen licked his lips.

Su Yiyun shook his head, then nodded, “It’s not exactly trouble. Han Qi doesn’t have much of a position in the Han family. He’s just a hippy, and the people in his family don’t really care about him. What I’m worried about is that brat, Han Yu, trying to get even for his trash of a little brother. Han Yu isn’t a normal threat. However, there isn’t much to worry about. With me here, he doesn’t dare to do all that much.”

“I’m rather interested in Han Yu,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

“This brat is on the same level as me, he can use a part of his family’s powers and has a good amount of backing. What’s more, this brat is rather capable, and rather dark. Even when he laughs with you on the surface, the dirty tricks he uses behind your back are going to catch you off guard,” Su Yiyun twitched his mouth and snorted. It was clear that he wasn’t a fan of people like Han Yu.

“I even lost to him several years ago!”

“Then why didn’t you get Old Man Su to deal with him?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. From what he knew about Old Man Su, that person was definitely a super protective person.

“You’re kidding, right? Our circles have an unspoken rule, which

is us not being allowed to go to our parents. If you can mess with the others, then do it, if you can't, then just submit. Getting the parents involved is way too embarrassing!"

"I, this puny civilian, does not understand your world," Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

Su Yiyun laughed, "Stop pretending. My dad told me that your identity is seriously mysterious. Oh yeah, how are you getting on with my lil' sister?"

"Her and I..."

Ye Zichen's expression immediately stiffened before he finished his sentence, when he saw the pretty figure behind Su Yiyun.

Ye Zichen smiled wryly and let out a sigh before raising his

eyebrows, “Why did you come again?”

“Just following you and protecting you,” Lu Lu smiled, then tiptoed beside Ye Zichen, before sitting down. At the same time, she blinked towards Su Yiyun and smiled, “Hello, it’s my first time meeting you. Are you Ye Zichen’s friend?”

Crack.

Su Yiyun squished the cup is in his hands, while he smiled towards Ye Zichen with interrogating eyes, “Bro, if you continue on like this, then it is really hard on me as the older brother!”

“What? You two are brothers?” Lu Lu blinked her large watery eyes, reached her hand out towards Su Yiyun with a smile. “Hi, I’m Ye Zichen’s classmate and his girlfriend in his previous life, Lu Lu!”

“Hehe!” Su Yiyun laughed coldly, then twitched his mouth at Ye Zichen with a meaningful smile. “Ye-zi, you’re pretty amazing. Your girl friend from your previous life has appeared. When you continue, wouldn’t the ones from your last last life and your last last last life... You really think my little sister is easy to bully!?”

“Uhm...”

I don’t want it to happen either... Just as Ye Zichen thought about how to explain this problem...

Buzz!

The phone in Ye Zichen’s pocket rang. Ye Zichen took out his phone and couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows when he saw the caller ID.

“Mom, you were looking for me?” The moment he received Ye Rong’s phone call, Ye Zichen returned to the mansion as fast as he could.

A SUV parked outside the mansion, which was most likely the Kind Killer, Mu Jinglei’s, car from the looks of the license plate number.

Ye Zichen pushed open the door. He saw Mu Jinglei crying streams of tears in the living room, while Ye Rong patted her shoulders with a worrisome expression beside her...

“Mom, Lei-jie.”

At the same time, Lil’ White ran over with his tongue out. Mother Ye also looked up. When she saw Lu Lu...

Her expression tensed!

Ye Zichen sighed when he noticed Mother Ye's expression..

When they were coming over, she already told her not to follow, but the girl refused to listen!

That's great. Now, in Mother Ye's thoughts, there will be another candidate for her daughter-in-law.

In order to avoid unnecessary awkwardness, Ye Zichen quickly changed the topic, "Mom, you said it in quite a bit of hurry just now. You said that you need three million for something!"

"Zichen!" Mu Jinglei's eyes were red from crying. She bit her lips as she fiddled with her hands...

She struggled quite a bit in her heart. Three million was no small sum for anyone.

But she had no other choice!

“Can you lend three million to sis?”

# Chapter 250 – Exposing Li En’s True Face

---

“I will try my best to return the money to you,” Mu Jinglei added afterwards, as if she was afraid that Ye Zichen would not agree.

“No need to return it, if you need the money, I’ll give it to you!” Ye Zichen nodded without even thinking about it.

Mu Jinglei was stunned, then her eyeslit up even though they were red from her crying earlier “Really?”

“Of course, this is a cheque for three million yuan! But I want to know what Jinglei-jie wants so much money for! Three million is no small sum!” Ye Zichen frowned slightly. From his understanding of Mu Jinglei, it definitely wasn’t her that needed the money.

“I-I need it to get my little brother back!” Mu Jinglei received the cheque, bit her lower lip and replied quietly.

“What happened with your little bro?” Ye Zichen was shocked.

Although Mu Chuang didn’t really study properly, but it wasn’t to the point that he needed three million. Even if he was beaten up or beaten until he is disabled, she still wouldn’t need this much money!

“Did he do something he shouldn’t have?”

“He gambled and lost nearly three million!”

“Just how much did he gamble to lose that much?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Then, when he saw Mu Jinglei was about to cry once again, he sighed. “Never mind, go and get him back quickly!”

Mu Jinglei nodded, then hurried outside thankfully with the cheque.

Mother Ye, who sat on the sofa, looked towards Ye Zichen, “Go with your Jinglei-jie, the people there aren’t exactly good people.

“That’s true.”

With that, Ye Zichen quickly ran outside.

“Jinglei-jie, wait for me,” Ye Zichen frantically stopped the car when he saw that the car was going to drive away. Then he opened the car door while Mu Jinglei hesitated and got in with Lu Lu.

“You two...”

“We’ll go with you,” Ye Zichen laughed softly. He clearly knew how amazing Lu Lu is, she was strong to the point that even the Hou brothers could not defeat her. If we were to face some sort of evil forces there, this girl would definitely turn into an angel of justice!

“No, you two are just messing around right now,” Mu Jinglei frowned. She wasn’t going to any sort of nice place. She didn’t have a choice to take the risk for her little brother, but how could she take the two students over?

“Jinglei-jie, hurry up and drive. What if little bro gets killed if they don’t get the money in time?”

“Even so, you can’t come with me!”

“I know martial arts, and can fight against ten. Lu Lu knows self defense, she can fight against twenty.

Due to Mu Jinglei being worried about little brother, and because both Ye Zichen and Lu Lu looked very certain, Mu Jinglei no longer stopped then, and the car sped off from the mansion with a step of the pedal.

They remained in silence as the SUV slowly drove out of the city and into the suburbs.

Ye Zichen suddenly frowned from noticing an issue, “Jinglei-jie, did Lil’ Chuang call you himself?”

“Yeah!” Mu Jinglei frowned and replied anxiously.

Something’s not right.

Ye Zichen knew Mu Chuang way too well. He couldn't remember anyone's number. Also, Auntie did not buy a phone for the kid because she didn't want him to go and browse pointless stuff on the internet...

How did he call Mu Jinglei?

Also, he's just a kid around seventeen or eighteen years old. It's possible for him to find somewhere to gamble, but he wasn't an idiot. Could he really go and gamble in places where they gambled with millions?

Although this brat didn't like studying, he wasn't incurable. He definitely wouldn't get involved with huge bets like this.

“How did Mu Chuang say it on the phone?”

“He just cried and told me that he lost three million from gambling, and asked me to borrow it from a friend!” Mu Jinglei replied with a frown.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and raised his eyebrows, “Did you go and find Li En yet? He didn’t want to lend it to you?”

Zzzzzz....

Mu Jinglei, who was driving, stepped on the brakes.

She stared at Ye Zichen in shock and raised her eyebrows, “How did you know I tried to borrow from Li En? You know him?”

As I expected...

Ye Zichen raised his lips, “Then what was the condition Li En gave you?”

“He-He said he can lend me the money, but I have to sleep with him for a night. Then he’ll make sure Lil’ Chuang returns safely the next day.”

“Hehe!” Ye Zichen laughed plainly.

“Zichen, do you want to say that the person behind it is actually Li En?” Mu Jinglei’s eyes jumped. Then she shook her head intensely. “No way, I’ve known him for a long time. He isn’t that sort of person!”

“Isn’t that sort of person?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully. “His company is of a decent size, it’s not like he can’t afford three million. But what was the condition he gave you? You have to sleep with him! If he truly loves you, would he say something like that?”

Would he give out conditions at a time like this?"

"Li En, what a familiar name," Lu Lu, who sat in the back seat, muttered. "Oh? Isn't that scum you hit yesterday called Li En?"

"That's him!" Ye Zichen nodded.

Mu Jinglei raised her eyebrows, "It was you guys who hit him!?"

"Jinglei-jie, don't get tricked by that grandson. He's a true piece of scum," Ye Zichen's gaze was cold as he snorted. "Lu Lu and I were in the mall yesterday, we saw him kick a girl with our own eyes, and he said that he was sick of playing with her or something..."

"I heard your name yesterday, so I went to threaten him to leave you. Lil' Chuang's incident today might just be a way for him to get

you. What's more important is that Lil' Chuang did not lose that much money from gambling at all, and it was just all controlled by him!"

Mu Jinglei was shocked. Ye Zichen could feel from her gaze that she still didn't quite believe him.

She thought she clearly knew what sort of person he was after being with him for a year.

Could this entire year be just a front he put up?

"It seems like Jinglei-jie still doesn't believe me. Then I'll show you the girl when I get a chance. Oh yeah, she said she's called Bao Xi!"

Bao Xi!

Mu Jinglei knew about that woman. When she started to date Li En, she felt like that girl had quite the ambiguous relationship with him.

“I believe you!” Mu Jinglei bit her lips, while a bit of sadness and depression was visible in her eyes. “I didn’t think that he was that kind of person. Then-Then what should I do? Zichen, tell me, what should I do!?”

“Of course we have to go and get Lil’ Chuang back. Since it has already come to this, are you actually going to call Li En and interrogate him?” Ye Zichen chuckled. ‘However, the way we do it has to change!’

With that, he opened the WeChat Treasure Chest and took out the Thousand Li Tracking Sigil.

# Chapter 251 – Change Of Plan

---

Would you like to use Thousand-Li Tracking Sigil?

Note: Thousand-Li Tracking Sigil is a consumable item. It locates the target for three hours.

Yes.

Please select the target. It is limited to a person or item that you have seen before.

Li En!

The image of a scene appeared in Ye Zichen's mind just moments after confirmation.

Li En smiled coldly in the image, while he held a cigar in his hands. A phone was placed on the table in front of him as if he was waiting for somebody's call.

More importantly, Mu Chuang was there as well, and he seemed to be having a great time.

"Wow..." Ye Zichen shook his head and smiled. This is rather like a [scam](#)!

To be more specific, the type of scam being referred to is Immortal Jump (仙人跳). Basically, a female would usually lure a male victim somewhere to have sex (either because the female is fake hooking up with him, or just pretending to be a prostitute). Then, a male accomplice(s) would then arrive at the scene. Since the victim is either intimidated or just doesn't want the news to spread, he will pay the male accomplice(s) and the female to keep their mouths shut.

Ye Zichen was unable to hear the conversation going on in the image, nor was he able to be sure of the precise location of it, but he could tell from the image that...

“What is it?” Mu Jinglei raised his eyebrows. “You said there needs to be a change of plans, but what’s the change?”

“The plan has been changed again!”

Ye Zichen licked his lips as he pondered about whether he should tell Mu Jinglei about the scene he saw.

However, he thought about it, then realized that she wouldn’t be able to understand even if he told her about it.

“Why was there a change needed again?”

At that moment, the phone in Mu Jinglei’s pocket rang. The moment she saw the caller ID, her face became stark white.

“... It’s a call from the casino!”

“Answer it! Put it on speakerphone!” In contrast, Ye Zichen appeared a lot calmer.

Not long later, Mu Jinglei turned on speaker mode as he requested.

“Miss Mu, I wonder how goes your efforts to gather money?”

“I...”

Ye Zichen yanked her forcefully, and spoke up at the same time,

“We can’t gather three million, we just have one million. Are you the owner of the casino? We want to test our luck at your place to see if we can win three million to get him back!”

“Who are you?”

“I am Mu Jinglei’s friend, she got the money from me.”

“Heh, Miss Mu has the relationship to borrow three million, yet you guys said that you only have one million. Are you messing with me?” The man on the other side of the call snorted.

“No, no, no. We truly want to get Mu Chuang back, but money’s a little tight. Can you please give us a chance?”

“Wait a moment,” The man on the other side of the call laughed sinisterly, then handed his phone back to his subordinate and

walked into a room at the back of the casino.

“Director Mu, it seems to be a different from what you said. They said that they only have one million, and wants to gamble a few times here to win enough to get the guy back.”

“Is that so?” Li En laughed. “Then let them, isn’t earning an extra million a good thing?”

Thus, the man left the room.

Meanwhile, Li En looked towards Mu Chuang, “There are truly quite a few men at your older sister’s side...”

“Hehe,” Mu Chuang laughed idiotically.

Li En squinted his eyes, “Are you cooperating with me sincerely?”

“Of course, I’m truly sincere!”

“Then pray for your sister to lose!”

After a long while, various buzzes sounded out from the other side of the call, while the man also spoke up, “Fine, come. You know the address!”

Slap.

When the call ended, a complicated emotion surfaced in Mu Jinglei’s eyes, “Zichen, why did you say that?”

“Naturally, I have my own plans!” Ye Zichen smiled mysteriously, then leaned back in his seat. “Let’s go. It’s time to win money!”

...

Half an hour later, Mu Jinglei parked the car in front of a supermarket in the suburbs.

Everyone got off the car and walked into the supermarket.

The moment they walked in, Mu Jinglei called out towards the cashier, “Cougar!”

That is the term you use in Sic Bo for referring to the three dice getting the same number.

The cashier raised his eyebrows slightly. At the same time, Ye Zichen patted his briefcase, opened it to reveal it being stuffed full of hundred yuan notes.

“Please!”

Not long later, the three of them arrived at a place underneath the supermarket under the guidance of the cashier.

Ye Zichen was stunned the moment he arrived.

Nobody could have imagined that such a scene existed underneath a seemingly normal supermarket.

The place was filled with smoke, while curses would be heard at times.

“Sir, Ma’am...”

“Exchange a million into chips for us!”

Ye Zichen handed over the two briefcases in his hand. The man, wearing a waiter uniform, raised his eyebrows and left the briefcases. Not long later, he returned with a tray full of chips.

“Enjoy.”

“Ye Zichen!” I want to play!” Lu Lu reached out to grab some chips, since she could not suppress her curiosity any longer.

Ye Zichen handed her five hundred thousand yuan of chips for her to use, then took Mu Jinglei to a [Sic Bo](#) place.

[Wiki](#)

“Hands off when you’ve placed the bets!”

Many people chucked their chips to the corresponding location. At the same time, Ye Zichen’s eyes lit up with a faint golden light.

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

I truly can see the numbers on the dice.

Ye Zichen smiled, then chucked a hundred thousand yuan chip to where it said small.

“Five, five, six. Big!”

Oh?

What the heck is going on?

I clearly saw small using my Fiery Eyes of Truth just now. The house collected the chips under the complaints of the people. Then, Ye Zichen played another round in disbelief.

He lost again!

“Zichen!” Since it was Mu Jinglei’s first time to somewhere like this, her palms became covered in sweat when she saw Ye Zichen lose like that.

Not long later, Lu Lu walked back with a pout of dissatisfaction. From the looks of it...

She lost everything.

“It’s no fun, people are controlling all the games here,” Lu Lu muttered softly.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen yanked her, “You said someone is controlling it!?”

“Yeah! It’s been so many times! I want to hit them so much!”

“Then, I’m just asking, could you change these dice to a number we want?” Ye Zichen pointed to the Sic Bo place.

Lu Lu pouted, “It should be fine.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen hugged Lu Lu happily, and whispered, “Let’s cooperate later...”

After Ye Zichen muttered some things by Lu Lu’s ear for quite a while, he called a waiter over to exchange another million yuan of chips.

At the same time, in the room at the back of the casino...

“Director Li, they exchanged for another million!”

“No need to tell me. Earning money is a good thing. Make them continue to lose without winning at all!” Li En smiled faintly. “Since they’re giving us money, we have to accept it!”

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

Ye Zichen stared straight at the dice.

At the same time, Lu Lu whispered in his ear, “What numbers do you want?”

“Three threes!”

“Sure!” Lu Lu replied before turning quiet.

Ye Zichen also surveyed the changes of the numbers on the dice.

“Hands off when you’ve placed the bets!”

Ye Zichen bet five hundred thousand on cougar.

Plenty of people shook their heads when they saw him bet on cougar.

He definitely went crazy from losing. Getting cougars isn’t that simple at all.

Even the person shaking the dice rolled his eyes subconsciously.

He smiled as he glanced at the chips on the table, then slightly tapped it.

The numbers changed!

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen, who was staring at the changes in the number gave Lu Lu a signal.

Open!

Three, three, three!

Cougar!

# Chapter 252 – Two Monsters

---

Even the dealer was visibly shocked when the chest was opened.

Impossible!

He looked at the three threes within the chest in shock, then looked up at Ye Zichen with a look of surprise.

“Oh wow, the God of Fortune has blessed me!”

Ye Zichen laughed crazily, then crooked his fingers at the dealer, “Bro, pay up!”

The dealer frowned and handed over the chips that Ye Zichen had won, while maintaining a look of solemnity.

The people all around him praised his good luck, while Ye Zichen merely smiled, then placed the chips in his hands and the chips he had won back on Cougar.

Again!

Plenty of people were shocked, including the dealer...

Open!

Four, four four!

Cougar!

Ye Zichen went all in on cougar once again!

Open!

Five, five, five!

Cougar!

The dealer of that table continued to open up cougars as if he was jinxed. Meanwhile, the chips Ye Zichen owned also increased gradually, until a small mountain was piled in front of him.

“You’re cheating!” The dealer shouted angrily.

Ye Zichen put on a speechless expression and raised his eyebrows at the dealer, “Bro, you can’t just bullshit like that. You’ve been controlling the dice all along, why are you saying I’m cheating? What? The casino wants to take my money?”

Bang.

Ye Zichen stepped on the table and glared, “I’m telling you, laozi isn’t someone that can be easily bullied. Give me... my money!”

“Sir...” Not long later, the manager of the casino hurried over with a group of people. “This...”

“Your dealer doesn’t want to give me the money I won. What? I came here to consume. Do you guys want to threaten me?”

The casino manager frowned. Then after he understood the situation from the dealer, he laughed softly, “Then let me play a few games with you!”

“Sure, give me the chips first!”

He pushed the chips in front of Ye Zichen with a smile, then personally took control of the dice...

Six, six, six.

Cougar!

...

Cougar!

Ye Zichen bet on cougar every single time, and the manager opened up cougars every single time. The manager finally threw the dice in his hands to the side, then smiled and took off his white gloves.

“Sir, if you return all of the chips you just won from here, then we won’t pursue it!”

“Now you’re trying to scare me?” Ye Zichen smiled. Then he picked up a ten thousand yuan chip from the table with his right hand and flung it.

The disc-shaped chip shot into the casino manager’s collarbone, causing blood to start flowing.

A master!

The manager clenched his teeth as he pulled the chip out.

“Sir, you have impure purposes here!”

“I’ll tell you the truth then, laozi came to trash this place!”

Bang.

Ye Zichen slammed the table.

The chips on the table flung up in the air, while Ye Zichen's hands moved like illusions and continuously knocked them out.

Terrible screams sounded out endlessly. When the other chips from the table finally fell back down...

All of the fighters beside the manager had a chip stuck in them!

“Don’t say that I’m not nice to you. We spend money together, so take it to buy a packet of cigarettes!”

As the fighters fell to the floor, Ye Zichen sat down on the casino table and smiled towards the room at the back of the casino, “Li En, aren’t you going to come out? You truly aren’t afraid of causing a ruckus as you watch the show!”

Clap, clap, clap.

Li En clapped his hands and walked out, while several tens of fighters followed him.

A sinister smile on his face as he looked at the wailing fighters on the floor, “Pretty amazing.”

“Li En!” Mu Jinglei exclaimed. She didn’t think that he would be behind everything exactly like Ye Zichen said.

“Jinglei, I truly am very disappointed at you for refusing me!” Li En shook his head with a sigh.

“Jinglei is not a name for you to call,” Ye Zichen revealed a dark expression. Then he pointed at the chips on the table, “There is three hundred million here, exchange it for me. I’m going to use

three million to exchange for Mu Chuang!”

“Brat, you seem to have forgotten something!” Li En frowned. Another person walked out of the room with his dagger on Mu Chuang’s throat as Li En continued. “I have the person in my hands, so I have the initiative.”

“Lil’ Chuang!” Mu Jinglei exclaimed.

Mu Chuang also cried out, “Sis!”

“Such a moving sibling relationship. Do you see that? I have the initiative!” Li En smiled proudly. Then he looked at Mu Jinglei lustfully, “Say, how much less trouble would it have been if you slept with me for a night?”

“Li En!” Mu Jinglei screamed.

“Don’t shout out my name, I will suspect you of falling in love with me,” Li En’s handsome face turned sinister. “Or, are you already in love with me? Then stop hesitating, sacrifice yourself here for you little brother!”

With that, Li En took off his pants, “We can get a large audience to enjoy the sights here.”

“Do you think that I’m nonexistent?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes as he held a chip in his hands.

“I know you’re amazing, but are you sure that you are faster than his dagger?”

As Li En replied, the person holding the dagger held it closer towards Mu Chuang’s throat, causing droplets of blood to flow down the blade.

“Sis!” Mu Chuang yammered.

At this moment, Mu Jinglei also bit her lips as if she made up her mind, “Let go of my little brother, I’ll go with you!”

“Jinglei-jie!” Ye Zichen exclaimed. “I can save Lil’ Chuang!”

“Zichen, never mind. I can’t let Lil’ Chuang get into any more danger!” Mu Jinglei smiled softly.

Hearing that, Li En laughed loudly, then stepped on a chair with his leg, “I want you here...”

“Alright!” Mu Jinglei nodded without any hesitation, causing the Li En’s face to be filled with a maniacal smile.

Mu Jinglei walked towards him a step at a time.

When she arrived in front of him, Li En smiled, “Kneel down!”

Mu Jinglei did not resist. Her gaze seemed to say that she had given up all hope. However, the moment she was about to kneel down, she leaped towards the person holding the dagger without caring about anything else.

“Lil’ Chuang, run!”

Mu Jinglei hugged the dagger-possessor’s waist tightly, causing the person to frowned, before he stabbed at Mu Jinglei’s back without any hesitation.

“How many times did I tell you already? Do you really treat me as nonexistent?” Ye Zichen held the blade tightly and smiled before waving his right fist towards the person holding the dagger.

“It’s you that’s treating us as nonexistent, isn’t it?” A pitch black barrel pointed at the back of Ye Zichen’s head.

Ye Zichen froze briefly, then smiled.

His fist hit the dagger-wielder’s face without any pause.

“You really are cocky,” Li En, who was holding the gun, had a savage look on his face.

“Hey, you can’t bully Ye Zichen, otherwise, I’ll get angry,” At that very moment, Lu Lu ran over with a giggle and her hands behind her back. Meanwhile, several tens of fighters wailed on the floor in pain.

Bang.

She pushed her hand against the end of the barrel, then flicked her wrist.

The gun instantly twisted.

Ye Zichen also slowly turned his head with a smile, while his right hand still clenched the dagger without it causing him to lose even a single drop of blood.

“Mon-Monster!” Li En screamed out. Ye Zichen brought down

the dagger with his right hand and pierced towards Li En's collar bone.

Ting.

A rock hit the blade, causing the dagger to fall onto the floor. As Ye Zichen turned his head...

“Mr. Ye, please stop!”

# Chapter 253 – The End Of The Troubles

---

A man with a knife scar on his eye appeared in the room.

Ye Zichen held Li En's collar for a long time, while he looked behind Li En at the man.

It seems like there is a wall behind him. How did he pop out?

“Who the hell are you!?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows slightly.

The man walked over with a coy smile, “Allow me to introduce myself. This humble one is Wei Chen!”

“I don't know you!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then turned his head towards Lu Lu. “Where's my knife? Let me chop this idiot up!”

Lu Lu happily skipped over to pick the dagger up and returned it to Ye Zichen's hands.

The moment Ye Zichen received it, he saw a hole that had a diameter of around a centimeter on the blade.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but turn to glance at Wei Chen, as he remembered the pebble, "Who are you with?"

"I'm with Big Sis Xia Keke!" Wei Chen quickly replied with a forced smile.

Ye Zichen was stunned upon hearing that, while both Lu Lu and Mu Jinglei revealed expressions of confusion.

“Xia Keke! Polytechnic University’s Xia Keke?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Yes, yes, yes, it’s that sis,” Wei Chen’s face was covered in that same forced smile.

Ye Zichen threw Li En onto the floor bitterly and stepped on him, “How did you end up following Xia Keke!”

“It’s a long story!”

“Then make it short!”

Ye Zichen always detested people that took a long time to explain it. Did his primary school teacher not teach him to summarize his thoughts when they’re too long?

“In short, that’s...”

“F\*ck, who the heck is causing trouble at my family’s casino!? Give me ten minutes to prepare my Tiger Fist!” Someone called out at the entrance to the casino with a familiar tone and phrase...

“Why did this retard come as well!”

“Ai, no! Dad, why are you here!” The teenager with a buzz cut ran over happily. However, the moment he saw Ye Zichen...

“F\*ck, damn brat, laozi was f\*cking looking for you! Give me ten minutes to get ready this time, laozi will...”

Bang.

Wei Chen, who was standing behind the buzz cut teenager, kicked him into a kneeling position before he finished speaking.

“Go kneel in thee corner!”

“Dad, when I said I got beaten up the other day, it was by this brat. He didn’t go by the rules of the Jianghu, and attacked before I got ready! Didn’t you say that you’ll help me get even when you’ve got time? It’s him!”

The young man with a buzz cut rubbed his butt in his confusion.

Wei Chen slapped his head, “You’re still complaining? Do you want to get beaten up?”

“Understood!” The buzz cut young man struck a horse stance in the corner with his head down.

Ye Zichen looked at the father and son pair in shock, “How about you two have a good father and son conversation, we just came here to save a person...”

“Then Mr. Ye, take care!” Wei Chen bowed and smiled coyly. Ye Zichen pointed at the group of injured people on the floor...

“Do you need me to compensate you? You’re Xia Keke’s subordinate, so I do have to take some care of you.”

“No need, no need,” Wei Chen hurriedly shook his head.

Ye Zichen stepped down on Li En, who was sprawled on the floor, “Oh yeah, this brat has a grudge with me. I’ll give you face and leave him alive, but you can’t let him off easy. Also, I just won more than three hundred million at your casino, so I’ll leave my card number with you!”

“Do you guys have a pen?”

When Ye Zichen saw both Lu Lu and Mu Jinglei shake their heads, he took a look at the dagger in his hand and Li En, who was on the floor...

He made a small cut on Li En’s finger with the dagger, then used his finger to leave a series of numbers on the betting table.

“Here’s the bank card number. Remember to wire it to me, I’m lacking money!”

After Ye Zichen and his group left, Wei Chen's face, which was originally covered in a coy smile, turned dark as he squatted on the floor and yanked Li En up, "Director Li, I hope you will wire the money to the casino's account tomorrow! Three hundred million and not a cent less, do you understand?"

Wei Chen patted his face, then kicked him away. Then Wei Chen walked in front of the buzz cut young man and kicked him.

Bang.

The young man with a buzz cut kneeled on the floor, then muttered as he rubbed his head, "Why did you hit me again!?"

"Think about it yourself. If you don't manage to understand, then don't eat tomorrow!"

...

As Mu Jinglei drove on the way back, Mu Chuang lowered his head without saying anything, while the former remained silent as well...

They managed to save him, but the atmosphere was extremely tense.

“Sis, I was wrong!”

Mu Chuang, who had not spoken until then, suddenly looked up as they neared the city. Mu Jinglei immediately stepped onto the brakes...

“You still know your wrongs!?”

“Sis, sorry!” Mu Chuang lowered his head and apologized softly.

Ye Zichen patted his shoulders, then spoke up, “Jinglei-jie, I’ll have a chat with Lil’ Chuang outside of the car.”

Mu Jinglei nodded, while Ye Zichen dragged Mu Chuang out by his collar.

The moment they got out, Ye Zichen punched him.

“Why did you hit me?” Mu Chuang glared.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then dragged Mu Chuang out ten odd meters by his collar, “I’ll save you some face and not chat in front of the car door. Say it, why did you screw over your sister

with Li En?"

"I don't know what you're talking about!" Mu Chuang frowned, while he avoided Ye Zichen's gaze.

"You don't know, right!?"

Bang.

Ye ZIchen punched him again.

"I'm not Jinglei-jie, who can tolerate you no matter how huge the stuff that happened is. You should know that I was a delinquent in the village. Lil' bro, did you forget all that?"

Mu Chuang gulped. How could I forget?

“Zichen-ge, I beg you, don’t tell my sister,” Mu Chuang clenched his teeth and looked down. “I needed money!”

“Then!?”

It was obvious that he needed money since he told his sister to get him back with three million, while cooperating with a scum like Li En.

“I did lose money at Li En’s, but it was only several ten thousand yuan. I had wanted to win some from him since I had always won before...”

“Hehe... Continue!”

Won? That's because he wanted you to!

The house always wins, it was a saying that everybody knew. Him continuously winning meant that something was up!

“After I lost, I wanted to win my money back, so I went to borrow money from Li En. That’s when Li En requested me to lie to my sister, and I agreed!” Mu Chuang stuttered and spoke out everything that happened.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist and wanted to hit Mu Chuang, but then he couldn’t help but frown when he saw Mu Chuang’s dodgy look, “You still didn’t say why you need money.”

“I-I fell for a girl!” Mu Chuang blushed.

“You need several million for falling for a girl?” Ye Zichen asked.

“She’s different from others,” Mu Chuang clenched his teeth. “She works at a clubhouse. I merely saw her from a distance before...”

“Hmm, then...”

“Big Bro, she’s not the type of girl like you think she is! She merely chats with people,” Mu Chuang quickly explained. “Her price for chatting with people is very high, I needed the money to talk to her...”

“So low!” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. “but this isn’t a reason for you to lie to your sister. Didn’t you know that you were pushing her into a firepit!?”

“I-I was wrong!” Mu Chuang lowered his head even more.

Ye Zichen sighed as he saw Mu Chuang’s self-reprimanding look, “Never mind, big bro will take you to that clubhouse tomorrow to fulfill your wish!”

# Chapter 254 – A Lesson

---

“You’re back.”

When Ye Zichen and Mu Chuang got in the car, Mu Jinglei noticed the bruises on Mu Chuang’s face and the blood at the corner of his mouth.

Although she didn’t ask, Ye Zichen could tell from her gaze that she still cared about it a lot.

“This brat didn’t do anything proper, so I taught him a lesson,” Ye Zichen hooked Mu Chuang’s shoulder and chuckled. “He promised me that he won’t ever gamble again.”

“This is good,” Mu Jinglei smiled faintly, while her depressed mood started to turn for the better.

However, she was still overwhelmed with self-mockery that she could not hide.

My boyfriend for a year was actually someone like that. It truly is ridiculous when I think about how I was on the verge to getting married to him.

Later that night.

The Mu siblings stayed in Ye Zichen's home to rest.

The three of them came to a tacit understanding to not mention about the troubles at the casino to Mother Ye. They merely told her that they got Mu Chuang back with money.

Mu Chuang naturally got scolded. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen, who

had already tired himself out for the day went back to his room to rest.

On the next day, Mu Jinglei decided to take her annual leave from the school to nobody's surprise. After all, she should get a good rest after so much had happened.

Ye Zichen returned home, the moment his veterinary lessons were over.

Mu Chuang had gotten ready very early, because Ye Zichen had said in the morning that he would bring him to the clubhouse today.

“Jinglei-jie, I’m going to take Mu Chuang out for a bit.”

“Hmm,” Mu Jinglei nodded slightly. It was apparent that she had

not yet come out of her depression.

Ye Zichen signaled Lil' White, who was wandering around the room. Lil' White immediately wagged his tail to show that he understood, and jumped beside Mu Jinglei and wiggled.

Ye Zichen smiled. With someone that knew how to make her laugh here, Jinglei-jie's mood should improve.

Then, he left the mansion with Mu Chuang and took Mu Jinglei's car to get to the clubhouse.

Today, I must teach Mu Chuang a lesson.

"This is the clubhouse you were talking about?" To be honest, this clubhouse isn't all that big, and compared to Xiao Hai's commercial clubhouse, this seemed rather tiny.

Chuang nodded, then revealed a worried expression, “Zichen-ge, the stuff in the clubhouse isn’t just a little high... We...”

“Come with your Zichen-ge. Today, I’ll teach you a good lesson,” With that, Ye Zichen hooked his arm around Mu Chuang’s shoulder and walked in.

“Sir, please show your membership card!”

The moment they entered, a tall girl wearing a qipao came up to them. Hmm, although this clubhouse didn’t seem as grand as Xiao Hai’s from the outside, the interior was rather well decorated.

The tall beauties wearing qipaos were also extremely pleasant to look at.

“It’s my first time here, help me register for a membership card.”

“Then please sir, this way,” The girl’s face lit up more since they did get a commission if guests wanted to apply for a membership card.

“Membership cards are separated into silver cards, gold cards, platinum cards and diamond cards. Each card corresponds to different treatments...”

“Diamond card!” Ye Zichen casually took out his card and slapped it on the table.

The girl was momentarily stunned before she explained kindly, “Diamond cards require ten million...”

“That’s fine!”

Hearing that, the girl was stunned. Then, a huge smile blossomed on her face.

Mu Chuang couldn’t help but feel a hint of jealousy when he saw the smiling girl and Ye Zichen’s calmness.

He had come to the clubhouse with Li En several times before, but never once had he seen the greeter smile so brightly.

Approximately three minutes later, the girl handed Ye Zichen’s card and a diamond card over respectfully.

“Sir, please enjoy.”

Scribble.

Ye Zichen took out his chequebook, wrote a string of numbers on a cheque and stuffed it in the girl's cleavage. From what Mu Chuang remembered, this sort of action as not allowed.

“This... is your reward.”

Mu Chuang had seen a boss stuff tips in a girl's cleavage, but what he got in return was a slap in the face. Then, he even got kicked out of the clubhouse.

Mu Chuang never could have expected that the greeter smiled even more brightly after taking out the cheque.

She bit her lips, then took a pen and a slip of paper from the reception to write down a string of numbers, which she handed to Ye Zichen.

“Let’s have a meal together when you have time!”

“Sure!” Ye Zichen placed the slip of paper in his pocket, then patted Mu Chuang’s head with a smile. “I’m here to accompany my little brother. He’s rather interested in a girl here.”

“So it’s like that. Then please have fun with your little brother. I won’t delay you any longer.”

Ye Zichen nodded towards the girl slightly, then patted Mu Chuang’s head, before walking away, leaving the girl standing still with stars in her eyes.

“He’s so cool.”

“Zichen-ge, you’re so amazing,” Mu Chuang said shortly after they walked away from the reception. “I came here with Li En before, but never once was it like this... Every single one of those greeters are extremely proud, so getting a phone number from them was impossible. Li En told me that there were rules here, we can’t...”

“The fact that he can’t just means that he’s not qualified,” Ye Zichen smiled faintly. “This is big brother’s first lesson to you. In this society, your status corresponds to the treatment you receive. There is no can’t, there is only not enough...”

“Mr. Ye!”

The clubhouse’s supervisor immediately walked over with a huge smile when Ye Zichen and Mu Chuang got to a room on the second floor. People rarely applied for a diamond card, so he definitely had to take good care of this source of income.

“I heard that this is your first time coming do our clubhouse. Do you need me to help you...”

Ye Zichen shook his finger at the supervisor, then patted Mu Chuang, who stood beside him, “Say it, who is it! As the older brother, I also want to know which girl my little brother was mesmerized by!”

“It’s that girl in purple!” Mu Chuang scratched his head slightly embarrassed.

Ye ZIchen took a look at the purple-shirted girl in the roster book and nodded, “Her... and the girl in blue next to her. I’ll choose these two!”

“Sure, please wait a moment.”

The supervisor left the room. Not long later, someone knocked on the door, and two pretty girls walked in.

Gulp.

Mu Chuang blushed. It was clear that he liked the girl a lot.

“Mr. Ye!” The two girls greeted Ye Zichen at the same time.

Ye Zichen nodded towards them with a smile and called the girls over.

He told the girl, who Mu Chuang liked, to stay by Mu Chuang’s

side, and walked to the other side of the room with the girl in blue.

“Mr. Ye, is this your first time coming here?”

The girl's appropriate smile easily gained the affection of others.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows slightly, finished the wine in his glass and smiled, “Shouldn't you do a self-introduction before that?”

# Chapter 255 – First Clash

---

“Huang Jia!” The girl in blue smiled.

Ye Zichen nodded, then glanced at the girl in purple, “She...”

“Jiang Xiaoyue!”

Ye Zichen nodded with a faint smile, then started to chitchat with the girl in blue.

Doing so, he learnt that both girls were Year Four students in the Media University nearby.

They both majored in radio hosting!

No wonder they invoked such affinity when speaking, while their words also easily made people fall for them.

Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled, then stood up from the sofa. Huang Jia followed him as he walked towards Mu Chuang and the other girl.

The fact that he could chat with the girl of his dreams made Mu Chuang blush excitedly.

“Mr. Ye,” Jiang Xiaoyue smiled.

Ye Zichen nodded, then smiled at Mu Chuang, “Do you like her?”

Mu Chuang blushed without speaking. Ye Zichen squinted his

eyes and scanned the two girls.

“If you like, I can get her to go to your room tonight to be with you. If you feel like she’s not enough, then she...” Ye Zichen pointed to Huang Jia. “Can as well.”

“Zichen-ge!”

Ye Zichen merely smiled meaningfully in response, “Just tell me whether you like her or not. If you do...”

“Mr. Ye I think you made a mistake. We merely accompany you for chats and do not provide any extra service,” Jiang Xiaoyue frowned.

Ye Zichen merely smiled meaningfully, “Do you think you have a choice?”

With that, he leaned back on the sofa and looked towards the two girls with an appraising gaze, “Professional chatting accompanier costing thirty thousand per hour. Needless to say, you know how to chat very well, and you are indeed worthy of this price in the eyes of rich people. Your clubhouse may actually have regulations, perhaps... you don’t provide other services. But, do you think the clubhouse would help you out if I wanted to take you two away?”

The two girls remained silent, since what Ye Zichen said was the truth.

He straightforwardly asked for a diamond card worth ten million, which was shocking even for the costly prices here.

If someone of his status really wanted to take us away, we can’t resist at all.

Dong dong.

At that moment, the room door was pushed open, and the clubhouse supervisor walked in from the outside with a coy smile.

“Mr. Ye, a VIP came and specifically asked for Jiang Xiaoyue...”

“Hmm?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. I’m teaching my little brother a lesson here, and this supervisor is coming to shit on my face?

“VIP? You have to go in order, right? I already chose these two girls, yet someone else can just take them?”

“Mr. Ye, I’m very sorry. The clubhouse will give you a twenty percent discount on all your consumptions today,” The supervisor nodded respectfully with a coy smile.

Ye Zichen sneered, “Do you think I lack the money? I’m don’t care who comes and asks. GET OUT!”

“Such arrogance,” A playful laughter sounded out at the door. Not long later, a bright-looking young man walked in.

“Boss Han, help me talk to him. He wants to take me away!” Jiang Xiaoyue revealed a worried look and grasped at straws.

The young man was briefly stunned before curling the corner of his lips, “Sir, you can’t not know the rules of this humble one’s clubhouse, right? No additional services are provided here.”

Then, he clapped his hands.

Not long later, a group of security guards appeared at the entrance.

“Sir, you might not be too familiar with our rules since you’re a new member. If you just leave the issue, then I can give you a fifty percent off. If you are determined to take our clubhouse’s girls away, then I don’t mind teaching you a lesson about our rules.”

“You’re Han Yu?” Ye Zichen, who sat on the sofa, took out a cigarette from his pocket, which he then lit.

“You are?” The young man paused upon hearing that.

“I knew it!”

Ye Zichen had thought that he sounded slightly familiar when

the young man entered the room, and with the way Jiang Xiaoyue addressed him just now...

Just like I expected.

“How is your little brother’s finger?”

Han Yu’s face immediately froze when he heard that. Then, he smiled meaningfully, “Ye Zichen!”

“It seems like Han Qi mentioned me to you?” Ye Zichen smiled. “That brat truly isn’t that bad, so I taught him a lesson in your place. That isn’t too much, right?”

“Indeed! I wanted to teach my little brother a lesson ages ago, I can’t even thank Young Master Ye enough for doing that,” Han Yu smiled brightly. Then his expression darkened. “Though Young

Master Ye's teaching methods seem a bit too much..."

"It's alright, at least he's still alive, right?"

Everybody's heart jumped when they heard those words. Nobody expected that this diamond member actually had this sort of link to their boss.

And from the meaning behind the last sentence...

They had a grudge!

"Hehe... Then I have to thank Young Master Ye," Han Yu half-squinted, then smiled. "Young Master Ye came to this humble one's clubhouse so suddenly, could it be to..."

“Don’t think too much into it, I just brought my little brother here to have a look. He kept on saying that he wanted to chat with the girl in purple. If I knew this was Young Master Han’s clubhouse, I wouldn’t dare to come, no matter what!” Ye Zichen smiled faintly, but no hint of fear could be seen in his eyes.

“Young Master Ye...” Han Yu chuckled, then patted the supervisor’s shoulders. “Waive all of Young Master Ye’s charges here. From now on, whenever Young Master Ye comes to our clubhouse, treat him as a VIP of the highest level.”

“Understood, boss!” The supervisor continuously nodded in response.

“I wish Young Master Ye a good time here. I’ll stop bothering you.”

“Then why are you still standing here? Leave. You’re wasting my time,” Ye Zichen sneered mercilessly. “Oh yeah, I want to take

these two girls away, is that alright?”

“Please!” Han Yu made a “please” gesture, then left the room with the supervisor.

I didn’t think that Han Yu would have that much tolerance. This makes him hard to deal with, but I need to deal with this first.

The faces of Jiang Xiaoyue and Huang Jia turned stark white after seeing their final hope get crushed.

At this moment, Ye Zichen also laughed, “Do you see that? You two have no way of resisting.”

With that, he turned towards Mu Chuang with a smile, “What do you think? As long as you want, the two of them are yours tonight. If you want, they can even be yours forever!”

“I just want to ask one thing,” Mu Chuang, who had stayed silent until now, looked up and straight at Jiang Xiaoyue. “All of the stuff you said to me just now was purely part of your job, right?”

“If you tell him the truth, your futures might have a chance,” Ye Zichen spoke up.

“Yes!” Jiang Xiaoyue bit her lips. “The reason I chatted with you was purely because you guys paid...”

“Does that mean that it was all due to Zichen-ge’s face?”

“Yes!” Jiang Xiaoyue clenched her fists tightly and nodded.

Hearing that, Mu Chuang looked up at her with bright eyes and smiled.

“I’ve decided!”

# Chapter 256 – Half-Beastmen

---

Both girls looked at Mu Chuang nervously. There was no helping it, their fates were going to be determined by a single sentence from him.

“Zichen-ge, let’s go back,” Mu Chuang looked over the girl in purple and laughed softly.

Ye Zichen nodded in satisfaction after hearing his reply, “Are you sure?”

“Mhmm,” Mu Chuang nodded in confirmation, stood up from the chair and walked next to the purple-shirted girl to take down the ribbon in her hair.

He smiled as her long hair flowed down and snagged the ribbon, “Give it to me as a souvenir. There’ll be a day that I make you look up to me.”

During this entire time, Ye Zichen maintained a faint smile. He wasn't that much of a scum to allow Mu Chuang to forcefully take the girl. If Mu Chuang chose to have the two girls accompany him...

Then he definitely would get beaten up.

From the heated gaze in Mu Chuang's eyes, Ye Zichen could tell that the lesson was rather successful.

Then, Ye Zichen left the clubhouse with Mu Chuang as the clubhouse's supervisor and manager bid them farewell alongside a large group of other people.

"Zichen-ge, I want to work for you," Mu Chuang looked up determinedly the moment they left.

“That’s fine, but don’t think that you can directly be a high leveled worker. If you do choose to work for me, you have to start from the bottom,” Ye Zichen replied.

Mu Chuang maintained his determined gaze, “No problem.”

Ye Zichen smiled, he was rather pleased that he managed to redirect his little brother onto the right path.

Ye Zichen patted Mu Chuang’s shoulders in recognition, when a dangerous feeling suddenly surrounded him.

Ye Zichen reached out his hand to stop a taxi, pushed Mu Chuang into the car and chucked three hundred yuan at the driver.

“I’ll deal with your work issue tomorrow. Take the cab back first, then tell Jinglei-jie and my mom that I have some stuff that’ll delay me for a while.”

Then, he closed the door without waiting for a reply and watched the taxi leave. Only then did he let out a long sigh and took out a cigarette for himself.

“Come out!”

Hssss...

A spandex-wearing man walked out from the dark and gazed at Ye Zichen with snake-like eyes, causing the latter to feel uneasy.

That was especially true since Ye Zichen could feel a dense bloodlust from him...

Huuu.

Ye Zichen released a mouthful of smoke and eyed the clubhouse behind him, then back at the man.

“Han Yu told you to come, right? But he’s in too much of a hurry, I haven’t even left the surroundings of his clubhouse yet. Is he not afraid of the blame of this falling on him?”

Ta ta ta...

The man slowly walked towards Ye Zichen in silence. The closer he got to Ye Zichen, the more intense the thick smell of blood became.

“Seriously...”

Ye Zichen chucked his cigarette onto the ground and stomped it out...

Since the Hou brothers did not come out to guard him, it is possible that they weren't nearby, so he could only rely on himself.

Since his strength was unknown, I might as well take initiative and attack him for a bit...

Bang.

Ye Zichen punched his arm, but Ye Zichen did not expect the other person's reaction speed to be so fast...

A ray of cold slight flashed across Ye Zichen's face, while he dropped down and kicked the man.

F\*ck!

He isn't very easy to deal with.

“Tiger Fist!”

A huge illusion of a tiger head attacked from the side, shocking Ye Zichen with it's aura.

The person that dashed towards Ye Zichen stopped, then leaned to the side.

“F\*ck, I missed!” An angry voice shouted.

Not long later, Ye Zichen saw the buzz cut young man, who kept on asking him for a duel, walk out from the side.

The spandex-wearing man merely paused slightly before he continued to charge over.

“F\*ck, the heck are you blanking out for!? Run!” The buzz cut young man grabbed Ye Zichen by his shoulder and ran backwards. The spandex-wearing man wanted to chase, but a rock suddenly fell down from the sky.

Immediately afterwards, Wei Chen stretched lazily, and blocked off the path of the spandex-wearing man.

“Young Master Ye, hurry up and run, leave this place to me.”

“You...” Ye Zichen revealed a worried expression. From his brief fight with the spandex-wearing man earlier, he was able to feel the strength of the other person.

“You what? My dad’s definitely alright. Where’s your car, hurry up and run!”

Under Wei Chen and the buzz cut young man’s continuous urging, Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and drove away. Meanwhile, the spandex-wearing man wanted to follow as he saw the SUV leave, but Wei Chen blocked him off.

“I’m here, and you still want to chase?” With that, Wei Chen took out a cigarette from a box, held it in his mouth and lit it. “Half-beastman, I’ll give you a cigarette of time. I hope you can satisfy me!”

Ye Zichen sat in the front seat and looked at the excited young man with a buzz cut, “I still don’t know what you’re called!”

“Wei Teng!” Wei Teng licked his lips and stared intently in front of him.

This name...

Ye Zichen looked at him speechlessly. There really wasn’t much thought put into it.

Although Ye Zichen clearly knew that the “Teng” wasn’t the Teng meaning hurt or ache, he still felt like there was a large chance that...

Wei Chen might have had a stomachache when he named [Wei Teng](#).

Stomachache is 胃疼 in Chinese. It is homophonic with Wei Teng (魏腾)

Ye Zichen did not comment on Wei Teng's name, "Is it really alright to leave your dad there?"

"What issues could there be? I'm telling you, my dad is really amazing," Wei Teng said in admiration.

Thinking about the strength of Wei Teng's Tiger Fist, Ye Zichen did realize that Wei Chen shouldn't be too weak.

"Why did the two of you come over to save me?"

"How would I know!" Wei Teng turned his head and rolled his

eyes at Ye Zichen. “My dad was intent on coming here, can I, as the son, stop him!?”

“F\*ck, can you drive properly!?”

Does this guy not care about his life!? He dared to just look around even though he’s driving!

“Oh yeah, I forgot!”

Wei Chen scratched his head with a smile, causing both of his hands to leave the wheel.

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide, then looked at the way he was driving...

“Have you driven before?”

“I’ve driven tractors with my dad back in the village!”

The more Ye Zichen asked, the more uneasy he felt. However, he still asked hopefully, “Do you have a driving license?”

“You need a driving license to drive this?” Wei Teng replied, shocked. “Grab on, we’re going downhill!”

Eventually, Ye Zichen was able to return to the mansion safely. If you had a heart attack or something, you might have to go straight to the emergency room in the middle of the journey if you let Wei Teng drive..

Ye Zichen got out in his fatigue, then puked on the side of the

road.

“Are you alright? You get carsick even though you have a car?” Wei Teng walked over and looked at Ye Zichen’s mansion. “Zeze, the place you live in isn’t bad. Oh yeah, find a time to compete with me, but you have to give me ten minutes time to prepare...”

“No way!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes furiously.

Wei Teng threw the car keys back into Ye Zichen’s hands, then patted the SUV reluctantly, “It really is nice. This feels so much better than driving a tractor. Here’s your car keys. If you need a driver, then call me any time.”

Then he left casually.

On the other hand, Ye Zichen, who was holding the car keys,

couldn't help but retort.

No one wants you as the driver!

# Chapter 257 – Ore Trading Center

---

Wei Chen looked at the fallen man with a human's body and snake tail with a shake of his head. A slither of smoke blew out from his mouth. Only half of his cigarette had been burnt.

"Yellow Emperor's life is truly filled with disasters, even half-beastmen came. It seems like I have to find some helpers, otherwise, I won't be able to defend him."

With that, Wei Chen chucked the cigarette beside the half-beastmen's body and left.

Not long later, two men appeared by the half-beastman's side. They glanced at the cigarette, that was still smoking, and the dead half-beastmen on the ground, then dialed a number.

"Number Three mission failed. Recovering him now."

On the next day, Ye Zichen took Mu Chuang to the jewelry store.

“Young Master Ye.”

Bai Dahai’s face was covered in a smile. Since Ye Zichen completely handed the jewelry stores to him, he didn’t have to follow other people’s decisions, making him the boss of the jewelry stores, so his recent days have been very comfortable.

“You’ve lived a good life recently. You got fatter again,” Ye Zichen patted his shoulders with a faint smile. “Oh yeah, let me introduce someone to you.”

Then, Ye Zichen pointed at Mu Chuang.

“This is the helper I got for you, Mu Chuang! Didn’t Yumei take

Li Shuang to the medical company, he can stay here to assist you, and learn from you.”

“No problem, no problem!”

People that Ye Zichen brought over in person was definitely royalty. Bai Dahai was an intelligent person, so he quickly smiled, “Recently, I’ve been looking for an assistant. Thank you so much, Young Master Ye.”

Ye Zichen smiled and eyed Mu Chuang, “This is the general manager of our jewelry store, Director Bai, Bai Dahai! Just follow him from now on!”

“Director Bai.”

Mu Chuang and Bai Dahai nodded towards each other.

Ye Zichen wandered around the store a few times, then raised his eyebrows, “How has business been recently?”

“It’s been pretty good. It’s just that we don’t have much ore left on hand, so we have to control the amount we put out,” Bai Dahai replied.

“Control for what? Is there an ore trade today?”

Bai Dahai’s heart leaped when he heard that. Is this master going to make a move again?

This is definitely great news!

“Yes, yes, yes. I just received an invitation to an ore trade a few days ago. Young Master Ye, are you going...”

“Yeah, I have nothing better to do.”

“Sure, sure!”

Bai Dahai and Ye Zichen left Mu Chuang at the jewelry store, then the former gave some orders to the store's manager and supervisor before driving Ye Zichen to the ore trading center.

Plenty of people recognized Ye Zichen the moment they entered the hall.

“Mr. Ye, I wonder if you can sell me a few pieces this time?”

“Mr. Ye, I can use a high price to...”

“Mr. Ye...”

More and more people begun to surround them. That was inevitable, since Ye Zichen had swept up goods way too fiercely a while ago in the stone gambling circles.

Since he managed to get it right every single time, he was already called a god.

“What’s going on over there?” Han Yu looked at the crowd with a frown. He did have a jewelry store of a decent size that was subsidiary to his company, so he had come with an invitation.

“I heard Stone God or something. It should be someone that’s

rather good a stone gambling,” The expert beside Han Yu frowned slightly, then smiled. “It is impossible for a person to get jade every single time when stone gambling. That Stone God is probably coined due to exaggeration.”

“That’s true,” Han Yu nodded. After all, nobody had x-ray vision to be able to see what was in the stone.

Stone gambling was all luck, although experience was also very important...

However, no matter how experience the person, they will get it wrong a few times.

Just as he shook his head and was about to leave, a laughter sounded out behind Han Yu.

“Young Master Han, what a coincidence, I actually bumped into you here.”

Ye Zichen smiled playfully, but his eyes were completely cold.  
This brat nearly took my life yesterday!

“Young Master Ye?” Han Yu raised his eyebrows, then couldn’t help but be shocked when he saw the people around Ye Zichen.  
“Young Master Ye is that stone god?”

“It seems like it!” Ye Zichen eyed the people around him.

Ye Zichen’s reply truly surprised him.

Experience from stone gambling needed to be built up. At such a young age...

Han Yu hid the astonishment in his heart, then said respectfully, “Young Master Ye, that is truly admirable.”

“Haha, speaking of admiration, I admire Young Master Han quite a lot. I was terribly shocked by the huge present you sent me yesterday,” Ye Zichen smiled coldly.

Han Yu put on a look of confusion, “What present?”

Pretend, keep pretending!

Ye Zichen had pretty much cursed all eighteen generations of Han Yu’s ancestors, but he couldn’t do anything if Han Yu didn’t admit it.

He had no proof that Han Yu did it.

But the chances were over eighty percent.

Ye Zichen smiled faintly and did not continue down the topic. Instead, he glanced at the stone gambling expert beside Han Yu, “Geezer Liu, we meet again!”

Expert Liu’s face immediately darkened when he saw that playful smile.

If it wasn’t for the brat in front of his eyes, he might still be receiving the best treatment in Xiao Yumei’s jewelry shop.

“Hmph,” Expert Liu snorted coldly.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows with a smile, “So angry.”

“You know each other?” Han Yu raised his eyebrows.

Ye Zichen shrugged, “We’ve met when stone gambling before. This Expert Liu is a titan-class person in the stone gambling scene. Young Master Han has found a prize!”

Then he glanced at Expert Liu, “I hope Expert Liu can help Young Master Han pick a few good stones that can open up green.”

With that, he walked into the ore auction area.

Han Yu squinted his eyes with a smile, “Come, let’s follow him and see.”

When Ye Zichen arrived at the trading area, he naturally met another group of people that respectfully begged him for stone. After he nodded in response to their demands with a smile, Ye Zichen's eyes flashed with a gold light...

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

“This stone can open up jade, who wants it?”

Ye Zichen pointed to a stone covered in moss. Since he had the Fiery Eyes of Truth, he didn't have to look all over the place like other experts. He was able to tell whether a stone could open up jade with a single glance.

“Young Master Ye, I want this stone!”

“Screw off, I’m going to take it. Young Master Ye, let me buy it, I can give you a consultation fee!”

“I want it...”

“I want it...”

All of the jewelry business men surrounded him like locusts after hearing Ye Zichen’s words.

Han Yu was also stunned. He picked it so quickly. However, what made Han Yu even more speechless was that those jewelry businessmen started to fight over it without thinking at all.

Weren’t they afraid of it not opening up jade and losing the bet?

“Don’t be anxious, take it slowly. Everybody has a chance!” Ye Zichen smiled, then picked twenty-odd more stones, which those jewelry businessmen snatched away.

“Everyone, are you not afraid of it not opening up to anything?” Han Yu couldn’t help but ask.

The businessmen nearby looked at him as if they were looking at a retard. If it wasn’t due to Han Yu’s position, some people might have even started to scold him.

Ye Zichen merely smiled.

“Open them, show Young Master Han whether you guys won or lost the gamble!”

# Chapter 258 – The Person In Charge Of The Trading Center

---

Since the jewelry businessmen were going to open up the stones up already, the fact that Ye Zichen said that basically meant that they could do him an easy favor.

Thus, they nodded. The topless stonecutters walked out, and the businessmen split into three queues and got ready to get their stones cut.

Han Yu subconsciously frowned when they saw everyone's calm expressions, then asked Expert Liu, "Elder Liu, do you think these stones can open up jade?"

"Definitely not!" was what Expert Liu really wanted to say. He had a very deep grudge for Ye Zichen. He wished more than anyone for the stones this brat picked to all open up to nothing, causing the crowd to feel enraged towards him.

However, he also knew that this brat did have some capability...

“I’m not too sure. From the patterns of the stones, there is a possibility for jade to get opened up,” Expert Liu chose to give a rather neutral answer.

Han Yu raised his eyebrows, “If there is a chance, then there is a chance for it to not open up any jade. However, why can’t I see any worry from these jewelry businessmen!?”

“This... Might be blind trust!”

Han Yu did not reply, and merely stared at the people who were asking to get their stone cut. He did not believe that all of these stones would give out jade.

However...

Through an entire hour, Han Yu stood on the spot and watched the stones all open up jade.

“Thank you, Young Master Ye!” All the jewelry businessmen laughed.

Ye Zichen nodded towards them with a kind smile, then walked beside Han Yu, “How is that, Young Master Han. They all opened up jade!”

“Impressive, Young master Ye,” Han Yu faked a respectful smile.

Ye Zichen nodded and chuckled, “Hey, isn’t Elder Liu going to take Young Master Han to buy a few stones that look rather good? If you don’t, then I’m going to take them all!”

“Hehe... No need for you to worry.”

With that, Elder Han took Han Yu and left.

“Young Master Ye, should we...” Bai Dahai got rather impatient as he watched the businessmen open up jade.

Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, “Get ready to pay!”

Then, Ye Zichen activated his sweeping mode in the trade center.

An hour later... Ye Zichen picked out most of the jade-giving stones in the ore trading center, and let the more minor jewelry businessmen take the ones that would give out slightly lower quality jade.

I gain some merits this way as well.

However, a strange scene appeared. When Ye Zichen stopped sweeping, the jewelry businessmen in the trade center also chose to stop picking stones.

They were not idiots, since Ye Zichen stopped buying, it clearly meant that none of the stones left will give out jade.

They were still able to remember the losses they made the previous few times.

“Older sister, we still have a large majority of the ores left, but no businessmen are buying anymore. If this continues, then we’ll be at a huge loss.”

A young girl said to the girl, who was embroidering, on the sofa within a hidden room of the trade center with a frown.

“Why did this occur?” The embroidery lady, who wore a veil, was stunned. The way she dressed emitted a classical beauty, while the way she spoke was unusually clear.

“It’s that Ye Zichen,” The girl twitched her mouth. “Our trade centers made losses the last few times because of him as well...”

“So, the young man that can buy all of the stones that will give out jade? I’m rather interested in him. It seems like it’s time for us to meet.”

Then, the girl stood up from the sofa, put the embroidery on the side with a smile, “Take me to see him.”

The jewelry merchants did not choose to act at all, even though most of the ores in the center were not opened yet. They merely set their sights on Ye Zichen, and waited for him to start choosing.

F\*ck, isn't this making me the target of blame for everything!?

“Mr. Ye.”

At this moment, a clear voice sounded out near his ear. Ye Zichen turned around, and saw a veiled girl slowly walk in towards him like a lady of a rich-upbringing.

Covering her face? Zeze, she's afraid of being looked at!

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and shrugged, “There are plenty of

ores over there that can give out jade, go and pick yourself. I'm about to leave with my people!"

"Mr. Ye, you misunderstood," The lady smiled softly. "I'm the person in charge of this ore trade..."

"What did you come to me for?" Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

The woman made a "please" gesture, "Can we talk over there?"

Ye Zichen walked with the woman to a rather distant place and placed his hands in his pockets, "Say it!"

"Just how are you speaking to my sister!" The red-shirted little girl, who was like a powdered jade sculpture frowned. "I'm telling you, bad guy, you've already severely affected our family's business. Look at all the leftover ores, they aren't going to be sold

anymore....”

“What does that have to do with me!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “Am I not your customer for buying ores from you? What’s more, I buy a lot, so I more or less am a huge customer of yours!”

“But since you stopped buying, so did those jewelers!” The red-shirted girl pouted. “It’s all because of you! Go and make them buy stones!”

“Are you bandits!?”

Ye Zichen was truly speechless at the girl’s bandit-like mindset.

Those jewelers are no idiots, isn’t there something wrong with them if they continue to buy even when they will just lose money!?

“Lil’ Red!” The veiled lady scolded. “Mr. Ye, Lil’ Ye is rather young, please don’t take it to heart.”

“There’s no need to fault children for what they say!” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

“However, Mr. Ye, I have to say, you did severely affect our interests. Ignoring the previous few times, we have nearly lost fifty million just this single time.”

“What? You want me to compensate you?”

“No!” The lady shook her head. “From this day onwards, you will be blacklisted. From now on, you will not be allowed into the ore trades at all!”

“Hey... This is a bit too much! You are doing business...”

“We are doing business!” The lady’s voice remained soft, yet without any doubt. “But businessmen look for profits. If our business continues to lose us money, then why should we continue to do it? Am I right? For example, you only buy stones that open up jade, and not stones without anything inside!”

“The fact that I manage to buy stones that open up jade is my capability, is that part of your business?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Then we also have a right not to sell to you, right!?” With that, the veiled lady turned around. “I won’t pursue this issue any further this time. Please leave!”

“Say, girl, you can’t be like this, right!” Ye Zichen sighed. “Is there any space for negotiation...”

“There is!” The veiled girl turned around. “Help me sell all these stones, or buy a few of them at a high price!”

“Wow, your heart is truly filled with profits!”

“Thank you, that is the best praise you can give to me, who is a businesswoman!” The veiled girl smiled. “All of the remaining ores are worth around fifty million, I believe in you.”

“Who am I supposed to find though!” Ye Zichen frowned, then swept his gaze over the trade center before smiling. “No problem. Fifty million, right? I’ll screw someone over for you!”

# Chapter 259 – Young Master Han, Who Was Messed With

---

At that moment, Han Yu's expression was rather dark. This “Expert” Liu, who nominated himself, did not seem particularly good at his job.

Of course, most of the stones this geezer told me to buy did not make a loss.

But my gains were pitiful compared to the pile of stones that Ye Zichen bought.

Just who the heck is that brat!

It was whatever that I, as the older brother, did not take revenge for my little brother, Han Qi, after getting beaten. However, I didn't gain any face here...

Han Yu muttered in his heart, only to look up and see Ye Zichen walk over with a smile.

“Young Master Han, how is it? Your stones raised in value, right?”

“Slightly!” Han Yu forced a smile and replied respectfully. “But it is naturally less than Young Master Ye!”

“Ha, naturally!”

Ye Zichen replied in a totally self-satisfied manner, then glanced at the stones that totaled to more than two hundred and fifty kilograms.

These stones looked pretty good, and could be called the featured items of this ore trade.

It could be said that these sorts of stone would get fought over crazily by the jewelers, but...

Since Ye Zichen had no intention of buying them, they didn't make any move either.

Ye Zichen could see with his Fiery Eyes of Truth that these stones would give out jade, but only palm-sized ones.

“I’ll take these three pieces of stone!” Ye Zichen lifted his fingers and pointed at the three stones, causing the jewelers to feel a hint of regret.

There were several times that they wanted to buy them, but since

Ye Zichen did not have any intention of buying them, they thought that it wouldn't give out any jade.

In the end, it seems like he just wanted to buy them last.

Although they regretted it, but when they thought back on how much they earned by following Ye Zichen, they didn't think too much into it, and merely watched the show enviously.

“Sir, this stone isn’t sold according to its weight, it’ll be auctioned with the lowest amount being one yuan.”

The heavens are truly helping me!

Ye Zichen laughed manically in his heart. He was only just pondering about how to make Han Yu fight over the price with him, and did not realize that the stone was actually one that would

be auction.

However, he decided to put on a look of unwillingness, “Dude, this stone has been placed here for an entire day and no one has bought it, so auction for what. Just directly sell it to me. If it really is hard, then I’ll buy double the price.”

Han Yu glanced at the three stones. Even he could tell that the stones would give out jade. He subconsciously took a glance at Elder Liu. The old man caressed his beard, looked at the stone, then looked at Ye Zichen’s desperate look.

“It’ll give out jade, and a huge piece at that!”

Hearing that, Han Yu smiled, then walked over with his hands behind his back.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile when he saw Han Yu, who now stood beside him.

"Shopkeeper, these stones are for auction, right? I'll pay a million!"

"Young Master Han, you..." Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in false annoyance. "I clearly chose this stone, and now you're coming to snatch it from me?"

"Young Master Ye, he already said that this stone is set up to be auctioned, so how is it snatching?" Han Yu smiled when he saw Ye Zichen's look of annoyance, causing him to feel very good about himself. "A good stone naturally belongs to the highest bidder!"

This stone belongs to me, I can't let you have it.

I also have to open it up right here in order to anger this grandson properly. After all, he was so cocky in the clubhouse yesterday, and it'll also serve as a good way to get even for my little brother.

Ye Zichen felt extremely smug when he saw Han Yu's slightly proud face.

Goes to the highest bidder, just to my liking.

Ye Zichen really was worried that Han Yu wouldn't say something like that.

"Then so be it, after all, I have to gain this stone, it'll just be up to how much Young Master Han can pay," Ye Zichen laughed coldly.  
"Five million!"

“Ten million!”

“Twenty million!”

“Thirty million!”

Han Yu did not even raise his eyebrows when he named the price. The higher Ye Zichen raised the price, the more he felt like it was worth the price.

Thirty million, twenty million more is enough.

Ye Zichen laughed maniacally in his heart.

“Fifty million!”

“Sixty million!”

Enough.

When Ye Zichen saw the smile on Han Yu’s face brighten even more, he did stop to get worried about his plan failing if he raised the price even more. Thus, he mocked, “Is Young Master Han not afraid of making a bad bet?”

“Even if that happens, I, Han Yu, do not lack the money,” Han Yu replied. Ye Zichen saying that clearly means that he has no money left. Thus, he mocked in return, “Why isn’t Young Master Ye bidding anymore!?”

“Then I’ll let Young Master Han have it,” Ye Zichen shrugged.

Then he turned around, smiled towards the veiled girl, who stood beside him, and hooked his fingers, “Go and receive the money!”

The veiled girl walked over the girl in red, who was holding a POS machine.

Han Yu immediately felt like something wasn’t right, but he didn’t say anything, and just swiped his card.

After that, he roared at the stonecutter, “Cut open the stone!”

The opening of these three emperors of stone attracted the attention with many people.

However, Han Yu felt like something was amiss when he saw the veiled girl stand with ye Zichen.

“Open!” Han Yu clenched his teeth and roared.

The stonecutter walked up the stage with the machine.

First cut, nothing!

Second cut, nothing!

No matter how many cuts were made, nothing came out!

“Ye Zichen, you f\*cking messed with me!” Han Yu glared and cursed.

“How did I mess with you!? Young Master Han, what the heck are you saying!?” Ye Zichen walked over and glanced at the stone on the floor. “There is jade inside!”

With that, he took up a piece of chalk and drew some lines on the stone, then glanced towards the stonemason, “Cut it like this!”

Not long later, all three pieces of stone were cut. Each one of them produced a piece of palm-sized jadeite.

Ye Zichen pointed at the three pieces of jade on the floor and raised his eyebrows, “See? Didn’t it give out jade?”

“Ye Zichen!” Han Yu clenched his teeth. He had spent sixty

million to buy three palm-sized pieces of jadeite! “You two worked together to screw me over!”

He pointed at the veiled lady and Ye Zichen with a savage expression.

Ye Zichen smiled playfully, “Young Master Han really knows how to joke. Nobody forced you to bid, so how did we worked together to screw you over? What’s more, I had reminded Young Master Han already, but Young Master Han did not listen! You even said that even if you took a loss, you could afford it!”

“You... You...” Han Yu squinted his eyes, pursed his lips and cursed. “You two screwed me over together, fine... But don’t think that I, Han Yu, is that easy to push around!”

“What? Young Master Han wants to deal with me?” The veiled lady stepped up with a smile. “Stone gambling is all luck. You want to blame us for you taking a loss? What’s more, I saw it just now, you were intent on buying it! Also, I am very curious, why exactly does the Han family, that’s in politics, have so much money for

stone gambling? It seems like there really is a need to probe deeper!”

“Fine, you two, just wait!” Han Yu turned around to leave.

Ye Zichen, who stood behind him, held out the three palm-sized pieces of jadeite, “Young Master Han, the jade you bought for sixty million!”

Hearing that, Han Yu paused for a moment, then left the scene without even looking back around.

Ye Zichen placed the three pieces of jadeite back onto the table and smiled toward the veiled lady, “How is that? You wanted fifty million and I gave you sixty. I also left these three pieces of jadeite to you. This is fine now, right?”

“Yes, but before Young Master Ye leaves...” The veiled lady pointed to the piles of ores. “Please give me a hand and pick out all of the stones that have jade in them. I’m not going to bring these useless pieces of stones back! Is that alright?”

# Chapter 260 – Obligatory Education Plans For The Heavenly Court

---

Ye Zichen smiled wryly in response to the questioning tone that left no space for negotiations.

He raised his eyebrows at the veiled lady and shook his head, “I have to pick out all of the stones that will give out jade for you? Do I owe you anything?”

“Mr. Ye isn’t going to agree?” The veiled lady raised her eyebrows. “Isn’t it fine if you just treat it as compensating me for my previous losses?”

“Hehe...” Ye Zichen liked his lips. “Fine.”

Ye Zichen did not say a single word to the woman after picking out all of the stones with jades in them, then he left the trade center with Bai Dahai.

The veiled lady nodded meaningfully with her hands beneath her chin, and pointed at the stones Ye Zichen picked out, “Open them, open them all right here! I have to know just what’s so amazing about this guy.”

Now that he had a large supply of ores, Bai Dahai promised Ye Zichen with certainty that he’d definitely double the jewelry shops’ profits.

However, Ye Zichen did not care about it all that much, since he did not have much desire when it came to money...

Yet, he was a bit annoyed by the veiled lady for ordering him around.

Ye Zichen frowned, then dialed Xiao Hai’s number.

“Zichen, how did you find so much spare time to call Hai-ge?”  
Xiao Hai laughed.

“Actually, I do have business to bother Hai-ge with. I want Hai-ge to help me investigate into a person’s background,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

“Oh? Say, who is it?” Xiao Hai spoke with a bit of confusion.

“The person in charge of the ore trade center, a woman wearing a veil!” Ye Zichen replied.

“No problem!” Xiao Hai replied without any hesitation. “Find some time to play with Hai-ge, we haven’t met for a long time, let’s get a drink together!”

“Sure, I’ll definitely go and bother Hai-ge when I have time.”

Ye Zichen hung up the call with a smile, then habitually looked at the Heavenly Court’s chat group.

Everyone was sighing in the group, including a deity that he never saw in the group before.

### Earthen Lord!

Earthen Lord (土地公) is a patron deity in Chinese folklore that blesses the people. During his life, he was a just official by the name of Zhang Fude (张福德) who did a lot of good and understood the difficulties of the people.

Earthen Lord: Great deities, help me think of something, otherwise, this old one’s beard is going to get completely pulled out by those kids.

God of Thunder: This is rather difficult!

Mother of Lightning: Yeah, those kids are all heavenly third generations of great deities, we can't do anything about them.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Aren't there plenty of great deities here? Perhaps Grandpa Earthen Lord can go directly to the parent?

God of Thunder: Immortality Peach Fairy, that isn't going to work. All of these children are the treasures of their families. Even if Earthen goes to the parent, those kids wouldn't get punished one bit, the person who's going to suffer is still going to be Earthen.

Earthen Lord: Exactly!

Ye Zichen read the chat for awhile, then replied in the group.

“What’s going on? Is there some sort of trouble that can’t be dealt with?”

God of Thunder: Hey, Sky Sovereign is here.

Immortality Peach Fairy: @Earthen Lord, tell Sky Sovereign about it.

Earthen Lord: Greetings, Sky Sovereign.

Sky Sovereign was a title used by extremely high ranked people, it outranked even titles such as True Lord and Dao Lord.

Earthen Lord was a mere deity, it was impossible for him not to be frightened when meeting this sort of great deity.

“Hmm, no need for such courtesy, Earthen Lord. What were you all saying just now...”

Earthen Lord, who was sitting on the ground, snuck a peek at the celestial children running around his vegetable garden.

“Sky Sovereign might not know, this puny deity resides in a place outside of the Heavenly Court. Celestials live forever. Although the Heavenly Court once had a birth control plan in place, there were still plenty of celestial children born. It was fine before, since I could handle ten-odd children, but now...”

Earthen Lord sighed, then continued.

“Recently, there have been more and more celestial children, and they are extremely active. These old bones really can’t handle their torture. However... this puny deity is low-ranked, and doesn’t dare to get mad at these celestial children, nor can I go and seek out their parents!”

Ye Zichen nodded, the issue just laid with children’s hyperactive period. Since their parents were busy with work, they were unable to take care of them. There were no nurseries or kindergartens over there either, so it seemed like Earthen Lord couldn’t seem to take it anymore.

“This issue can be easily dealt with.”

Ye Zichen smiled.

“Sky Sovereign, please solve this little deity’s troubles.”

Earthen Lord and the other deities in the group were all shocked. This issue had been troublesome for the Heavenly Court for a long time, but they have never seen anyone being able to deal with it.

“We have to go and talk to our Heavenly Court’s butler, Great Deity Taibai. @Taibai Jinxing.”

Taibai Jinxing: What is it!

It seems like this old brat is keeping an eye on the group. He immediately popped up after being mentioned.

“Scroll up and look at what Earthen Lord said!”

“I have read all that. This problem has always been one of the major issues in the Heavenly Court. You said that you can solve

it?” Taibai Jinxing raised his eyebrows.

“Isn’t this problem super simple?” Ye Zichen smiled.  
“Established a school!”

“How exactly?” Taibai Jinxing asked.

“Split the school into kindergarten, primary, middle school and high school divisions. Then, placed the celestial children of the appropriate age groups into the corresponding schools and manage them together. This way, not only can you deal with the problem of the celestial children running around, you can develop their celestial spiritual energy from a young age, allowing them to win at the finish line!”

“Amazing, Sky Sovereign’s solution is truly amazing!”

God of Thunder and the other deities all applauded, while Taibai Jinxing raised his eyebrows.

Why did I never think of this solution before?

“But... Someone still needs to manage the school if it is established, right? Then, who is going to be the ones to manage these celestial children?” Immortality Peach Fairy blinked.

“The school will naturally have teachers, and these teachers definitely have to be able to control these children. That’s why, you can choose from those celestial second generations. These celestial second generations are mostly deities with nothing to do. Getting them to teach at the school is kind of finding work for them as well.”

“What’s more, the school needs to have a principle and a registrar. These positions can be filled by great reputed deities that are not very busy normally. This will form a hierarchy where one levels manages the next!”

Slap.

Taibai Jinxing slapped his thighs when he saw Ye Zichen's thoughts.

Amazing!

Since those celestial second generations have nothing better to do, and they organize gang fights or steals random stuff when they are bored; this not only deals with the problem of no one managing the celestial children in the Heavenly Court, it even deals with the problem of those second generation deities.

“I’ll report it to the Jade Emperor right now!”

The moment Taibai Jinxing sent that message, Ye Zichen saw Taibai Jinxing sent him a red packet.

You received Taibai Jinxing's red packet, cultivation experience +200000.

"Laddie, you are promising. Not bad! You essentially dealt with a huge trouble for the Heavenly Court. I will ask the Jade Emperor right now, if it passes, then there'll be benefits for you!"

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Taibai Jinxing increased by 200. Current intimacy level: 400.

Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

At that moment...

Dingdong.

Earthen Lord has sent you a friend request.

# Chapter 261 – Literari Star's School Report

---

Literari Star (文曲星) is a deity that is very well versed in academic stuff. He is often portrayed as very wise and intelligent, and is often featured as the opposite of the Martial Star (武曲星), who is very proficient in fights and war. It should also be noted that Literari Star can also be a term that is used to describe an official to the Emperor. In the past, people that became officials due to being good at writing were sometimes seen as an incarnation of Literari Star.

Ye Zichen accepted Earthen Lord's friend request.

He habitually glanced at the intimacy level. It was 200. Trusted.

“Sky Sovereign, thank you for helping this little deity solve my issues!”

If it wasn't for Ye Zichen, Earthen Lord really might have continued getting troubled over the issue of the celestial children. He is an old man, so he really couldn't take much from the children.

“It was a simple task!”

Ye Zichen did not actually think that much, he merely wanted to screw over the celestial children in the Heavenly Court once. Since we, the mortals, have to go to school and do homework in the lower realm, I want those celestial children to feel that pain too.

At the same time, I can also make those deities in the Heavenly Court feel the pain and joy of being a teacher!

“Little deity doesn’t know how to thank Sky Sovereign either. This is something that this little deity accidentally received, I hope it is of use to Sky Sovereign.”

Dingdong.

Earthen Lord promptly sent Ye Zichen a red packet, which the latter received with a raise of his eyebrows.

## Mystery Envelope x1

Ye Zichen clicked on the Treasure Chest. There really was an envelope inside. Then, Ye Zichen looked at the description...

**Mysterious Envelope:** A very mysterious envelope!

F\*ck, it really is mysterious!

Ye Zichen couldn't help but shake his head with a wry smile before chit-chatting slightly more with Earthen Lord, then leaving the chat interface.

At the same time, in the Cloud Palace of the Golden Arches...

Taibai Jinxing, who held a fly-whisk in his hands, stood at the bottom of the stairs. He had just told the Jade Emperor and the Queen Mother about Ye Zichen's ideas.

“Jade Emperor, what do you think...”

The Jade Emperor frowned, then smiled, while gripping the throne.

“Not bad, it's great! Taibai Jinxing, your idea is great, and it can be used. Say it, what sort of reward do you want?”

“This wasn't an idea thought of by this little deity,” Taibai Jinxing raised his eyebrows with a smile. “It was thought up by a

comrade of the Heavenly Court.”

“Oh?” The Jade Emperor raised his eyebrows. “Call him over!”

“That would be a bit difficult. That celestial friend is in a secret location right now!” Taibai Jinxing explained.

“What a pity. It really is a pity that I can’t meet that talented one!” The Jade Emperor sighed softly. He waved his right hand, causing a golden scroll of decree to appear in the palace. “The establishment of the school will be overlooked by you. You can use this decree in order to order anyone to help!”

Dingdong.

Endless Merits. You have gained 100 Reputation.

Ye Zichen, who was lying down and playing with his phone, suddenly received a notification...

Just what the hell is this Reputation feature?!

Ye Zichen frowned. At that moment, he had already gotten 127 Reputation, but he still couldn't figure out what Reputation did for him.

At the same time, Taibai Jinxing sent him a message.

“The establishment of the school has been ordered, you have completed a great achievement.”

“Is that so? Then, Great Deity Taibai, give me some good stuff,

I'm already immune to verbal praise.”

Ye Zichen smiled.

Taibai Jinxing raised his eyebrows, then tapped lightly.

Dingdong.

You received Taibai Jinxing's red packet.

Identification Stone x1

“This sovereign managed to foretell that you will need this stone, so treat it as your reward!”

No way!

What the heck is this reward!

Ye Zichen looked at his phone's Treasure Chest and the pitch black stone within, in shock, while being beyond speechless.

“Say, you’re not screwing me over, right?”

The moment Ye Zichen sent the message, he suddenly received a system notification on his phone.

Dingdong.

The system has detected that the Mysterious Envelope can be identified. Would you like to identify it now?

Ye Zichen revealed a look of understanding when he saw this. So the stone is actually for this envelope.

Say, that geezer, Taibai Jinxing, is truly amazing, he actually managed to foretell this.

Ye Zichen was rather interested in the envelope anyway. Since it could be identified, he naturally chose to do so.

Yes.

A dazzling white light flashed from the screen. Ye Zichen subconsciously closed his eyes. When the light faded and he finally clicked on the Treasure Chest...

Dingdong.

Identification successful.

Congratulations, you have received Literari Star's School Report!

At the same time, in the Literari Star Hall...

Literari Star, who was immersed in the sea of knowledge, trembled, put down the book in his hands, then continuously formed signs with his fingers...

Then, his expression drastically changed.

He took out his phone, found Only Idealism in the WeChat group and sent a friend request.

Ye Zichen, who had just received Literari Star's School Report was shocked. This thing seems to be sold for several million cultivation experience in the Treasure Shop.

Before he returned to normal from his surprise, he saw a friend request.

Literari Star has sent a friend request.

Why did he add me? Could it be for that school report?

Ye Zichen thought silently to himself, but he still accepted the friend request.

“Daoist friend!”

Literari Star’s intimacy level was Friendly. Ye Zichen did not feel the need to feel worried at all as long as it wasn’t Cold. When he saw the news, he also replied immediately.

“Daoist friend!”

“Hey, I want to get straight to the point. I wonder if daoist friend has found a school report?”

He really came for that.

“Yes, I did receive one of daoist friend’s cultivation experiences.”

Ye Zichen replied honestly.

“Daoist friend didn’t take a look, right?”

“I didn’t manage to get the chance to yet.”

“That’s for the best. Could daoist friend return the school report to me? I can give daoist friend a suitable amount of thanks.”

This guy is so worried about the school report, could there be something special about it?

Ye Zichen subconsciously took the school report out, laid on the bed and looked at it for a long time...

It was filled with strange characters that Ye Zichen could not understand at all. Also, this school report also seems to be rather old...

“Daoist friend!”

“Daoist friend, where did you go off to!”

“Daoist friend, can you give me that school report?”

“Daoist friend, say something!”

Literari Star rapidly became very anxious merely from Ye Zichen not replying for a while. Ye Zichen glanced at the school report he couldn't read. Although he couldn't understand it, the information definitely couldn't come to light. Otherwise, Literari Star wouldn't have become so anxious.

“Uhm... I wonder why Brother Literari is so worried about this school report?”

Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner. However, Literari Star did not have any intention of revealing it.

“That doesn't have anything to do with daoist friend. I wonder if daoist friend can send me the school report? I will definitely give something that can satisfy daoist friend in exchange!”

Satisfy!

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and looked around the Treasure Shop. The most expensive thing about Literari Star that could potentially be given seemed to be his book of memory techniques.

It was worth three million cultivation experience.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and raised his eyebrows.

“I’m interested in daoist friend’s experience on memory techniques.”

Literari Star had already gotten himself ready for the other person to name something outrageous. However, he never would have expected that the other person merely wanted his experience on memory techniques...

This was way too simple for him.

He directly sent the secret scripture with his experiences over.

Dingdong.

You received Literari Star's red packet.

Secret Scripture of Literari Star's Photographic Memory x1.

Seeing that the daoist friend had received the red packet, Literari Star also sent another message.

“I wonder if the school report can be returned to me now?”

“Naturally.”

With that, Ye Zichen sent Literari Star the school report.

Dingdong.

LIterari Star received your red packet.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Literari Star increased by 100. Current intimacy level: 200.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: Trusted.

---

[Previous Chapter] [Table of Contents] [Next Chapter]

-> googletag.cmd.push(function() { googletag.display('div-gpt-ad-1505271341759-0'); });

1. Literari Star (文曲星) is a deity that is very well versed in academic stuff. He is often portrayed as very wise and intelligent, and is often featured as the opposite of the Martial Star (武曲星), who is very proficient in fights and war. It should also be noted that Literari Star can also be a term that is used to describe an official to the Emperor. In the past, people that became officials due to being good at writing were sometimes seen as an incarnation of Literari Star.

Previously in Chapter 64, I had used Megrez due to it being the star that corresponds to the deity, that has now been changed. ←

# Chapter 262 – Multi-Dimensional Changes

---

After Ye Zichen gained Literari Star's experience on memory techniques, he became one of the frequent people at Polytechnic University's library.

He would go to find a lot of books at the library all the time, but the way he read them was astonishingly fast.

In fact, he wasn't reading them at all, he was just flipping through the books.

Ye Zichen read most of the books in the library using three whole days, then left the library on the last day.

He stretched lazily. At that moment, he could be described using phrases such as “eight bushels of talent” and “so knowledgeable that his knowledge could fill five cars”.

Then, he decided to head over to Xiao Yumei's medical company.

Xiao Yumei sat in her office with a troubled look and a frown that did not disappear for a long time. Ye Zichen knocked on the door with a smile, causing her to look up and see Ye Zichen standing by the door.

“You came!” Xiao Yumei forced a smile.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, and walked in front of the office desk...

“I’ve rarely seen you smile after starting this medical company,” Ye Zichen raised his hand and spread Xiao Yumei’s brows. “If it’s too much work, then let’s not do it anymore.”

“How can I go back after I have already begun!” Xiao Yumei sighed.

“But like this...” Ye Zichen touched her hair. “What? Did you get into some sort of trouble again?”

“The paperwork for our medical company was voided!” Xiao Yumei replied faintly.

“Why did that happen?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“I heard that the higher ups voided our paperwork because we gained them through an irregular way. However, I feel like it was actually someone causing trouble behind our backs,” Xiao Yumei squinted her eyes.

“It seems like you have a suspect?” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

“It’s probably Han Yu!” Xiao Yumei shrugged. “There only seems to be Han Yu, who has so much power in Bingcheng and doesn’t even give Young Master Su face.”

“That’s a good guess!” Ye Zichen smiled.

“But, why did Han Yu make a move on our medical company? Was it purely because you beat up Han Qi?” Xiao Yumei asked in confusion.

“No!”

With that, Ye Zichen told Xiao Yumei about the recent stuff that had happened between him and Han Yu.

Xiao Yumei was stunned upon hearing that.

After a long while, she couldn't help but smile wryly, "You actually screwed him over for sixty million, no wonder he has such a huge grudge against us. But what should we do now? If we wait for the normal paperwork and Han Yu's intentional pressure, it might have to wait until the end of the year."

"I guessed this sort of possibility might happen already," Ye Zichen smiled faintly. "Didn't you say that you want to send this medicine to the military?"

"Yeah, but that's when our medicine gains a bit of reputation..."

"No need, we'll just directly make the medicine exclusive for the military," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

“You sure?” Xiao Yumei was shocked when she heard that. “If it was purely exclusive to the military, then we’re going to become a nationalized company! The military would definitely invest in us.”

“We can make it more multi-dimensional, make it so that it is not only a pill, but we can make it so that it can be applied as well.”

Ye Zichen’s eyes shone with an intelligent light. He probably wouldn’t have been able to think of so much before. However, after swimming in the ocean of knowledge for a long time, and reading several tens of managerial books...

He became like a general, who is had read up a lot of military strategies but lacked the actual experience. Yet, that was no matter, he still had Xiao Yumei by his side!

“I found out by chance a while ago that that our medicine can not only heal internal wounds like bone fractures, it also has an miraculous effect of healing scars. Then we can sell two types of

this medicine. One is military-exclusive, which can be designed to be used as a special medicine. The other is for normal people. Everybody loves beauty, I'm sure scar-removal would able to have a very huge impact on the market!"

Xiao Yumei looked at Ye Zichen in a shocked expression, then pinched him, and pulled...

"Are you sure you're my little idiot man..."

"Who's an idiot!" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. "I have always been really smart!"

"This is too unbelievable for you to say something like that!" Xiao Yumei's face was covered in disbelief. "I can get R&D to develop what you talked about, but about the military-exclusive..."

“It’ll naturally be down to me,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled. “I don’t believe that Han Yu would be able to stick his hand in when military-exclusive is written on it. If he dares, then I’ll put the crime of treason on him.”

“Wow, my little man is so cool!” Xiao Yumei hugged her chest, tilted her head, and looked at Ye Zichen in admiration.

“Hmm, of course,” Ye Zichen pulled Xiao Yumei into his arms dominantly.

Yet, at that moment, the phone in his pocket rang.

Ye Zichen looked at the caller ID and smiled.

Speak of the devil!

Ye Zichen went to the Su household in Xiao Yumei's car. During the drive, Ye Zichen noted down that he must buy a car when he finds the time. Otherwise, it really was too inconvenient for him.

When Ye Zichen entered the courtyard, Old Man Su sat in the pavilion in the courtyard as Ye Zichen expected.

"Elder Su, you called me?" Ye Zichen ran over and sat down with a chuckle.

Old Man Su raised his eyebrows and pointed at the tea on the table, "Have a taste..."

"I don't have much knowledge on this stuff, so never mind." Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile.

Old Man Su did not insist. Instead, he smiled, “Why haven’t I seen you with my darling granddaughter recently? What? Did some relationship trouble happen again?”

....

Ye Zichen thought about it for a moment. I truly haven’t looked for Su Yan recently. The main reason is truly because I’ve been way too busy...

Ye Zichen laughed dryly and scratched his head, “There isn’t anything wrong with the relationship. It’s that that I’ve been slightly busy recently!”

Elder Su nodded, then smiled meaningfully, “Busy setting up a medical company, right?”

With that, he took out a green pill from his pocket.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he saw it. The pill was the pill that was spread through the underworld before Xiao Yumei's medical company was established.

"Zichen, this old man isn't going to take you around in circles. I just want to know, the recently established medical company is actually yours, right? And this medicine... actually comes from you as well?"

Ye Zichen did come over with a purpose relating to the pill, so Elder Su's words seemed like they were just assisting him...

"Yes, it's from me!"

Elder Su raised his eyebrows, while his blurry eyes lit up, “Then Grandpa Su has an unreasonable request...”

“Please say it!” Ye Zichen nodded.

“Can you turn this medicine into a special one that’s military-exclusive?”

“About this...” Ye Zichen revealed a troubled expression.

“What? Military-exclusive medicine would mean that you’re doing things for the country,” Old Man Su frowned.

However, Ye Zichen smiled wryly, “Elder Su, there are things that you don’t know!”

## Chapter 263 – Buying A Car

---

It could be said that Su Qian paid a huge importance on the pill in front of him, so Ye Zichen's reply surprised him.

"What happened?" Ye Zichen sighed when he saw Old Man Su's serious expression. "We can't produce it at all."

"Can't produce it?" Old Man Su raised his eyebrows. "What? Is your medicine not up to standards and is harmful to the human body?"

"Elder Su, do you think I will produce a medicine like that?" Ye Zichen revealed a wry smile. "It passed all standards, and this medicine doesn't have any side effects for the human body."

"Then why can't you produce it?"

“I want to produce it as well, but I need the paperwork!” Ye Zichen shrugged while putting on a look of helplessness. “Originally, the paperwork and stuff had been approved, and we were ready to start production, but then they were cancelled.”

“Cancelled?” Old Man Su frowned.

“Yeah!” Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then told Old Man Su about Han Yu using his means to cancel their paperwork.

Bang.

Old Man Su slapped the marble table, while his entire face turned beyond dark.

“The heck!”

Old Man Su did do some research on the effects of the medicine. It was able to quickly recover internal injuries. What's more, if the special medicine would really have no side effects for the human body like Ye Zichen said...

If it was to be made available to the military, it would be a huge blessing for the children on missions, allowing the death rate of those missions to decrease by quite a bit!

The Han family's brat actually voided the paperwork for a medicine like this!

If it was put in a nice way, then Han Yu was just a bit childish, if it was put severely, then he was committing treason!

“Hmph, the Han family really seems to think that they can rule over Bingcheng by themselves!” Old Man Su cursed. “Lil’ Ye, don’t

worry. I will report this medicine to the higher ups and give you paperwork from the military. This old man doesn't believe that the Han family can stick their hands there!"

"Sure!"

Ye Zichen then left the Su household. Before he did, he heard Su Qian continuously making calls, probably in order to discuss with people higher up in the government or the military.

He took a taxi to a 4S store. There was no helping it, he really did need to buy a car, since taking a taxi everywhere was far too troublesome.

"Sir, welcome."

The moment he entered, several sales clerks surrounded him. Ye

Zichen nodded with a faint smile, and silently noted that the service there was really good...

Just as he decided to ask them where the medium-priced cars were, the sales clerks all walked away.

“Uhm... Excuse me, where are the medium-priced business or private cars?”

...

Nobody answered.

At that moment, Ye Zichen felt slightly dissatisfied. Why were their service attitudes like this...

“Can someone come over? I have come to take a look at cars!”

Ye Zichen raised his volumes. However, the sales clerks continued to chat in groups and ignored him.

“Are there no living people in your shop?”

“What are you shouting for? Can’t you see that we’re busy?” A sales clerk frowned.

“There customer is standing right here, yet you guys are chatting over there. This is how you treat your customers?” Ye Zichen forcefully suppressed his anger.

“Never mind, Lil’ Li, come over and take this gentleman to have a look at the cars so that he doesn’t file a complaint on our service

attitude.

The sales clerk that spoke up previously hooked her fingers at the baby-faced girl, who was wiping the floor. The girl lifted her hand to wipe away the sweat on her forehead, placed the towel back into the bathroom, then jogged over.

“Hello sir, what sort of cars would you like to have a look at?”

“No need to be so passionate. This guy can’t afford it at all. Even if he does buy any, it would be with a mortgage, so just do a simple reception for him,” the sales clerk mocked Ye Zichen once again.

Ye Zichen’s expression darkened even more.

The baby-faced girl immediately tried to divert his attention when she saw his expression, “Sir, the cars over here are all

medium and low tiered cars, they aren't particularly expensive, so they are suitable for those that just started working, or university students that are getting ready to start their own company, what do you..."

"No need," Ye Zichen shook his head.

"Hehe, see that? He just came to look. He can't even get a mortgage, so what are you wasting your time over there for!"

Ye Zichen glared at the sales clerk.

When the sales clerk saw his gaze, instead of backing off, she put her hands on her hips, "What are you looking at? You're not liking it now that I speak the truth?"

"I'm really curious about how someone like you can work here,"

Ye Zichen shook his head with a chuckle, then turned to the baby-faced girl. “You guys have sell Panamera here, right?”

“Yes!” The baby-faced girl nodded.

“Bring me over to have a look!”

The baby-faced sales clerk took Ye Zichen to where the Panamera were sold, while the sales clerk behind them couldn’t help but mock, “What’s the use of just satisfying your urge to have a look?”

“You better shut your stinky mouth!” Ye Zichen, who was suppressing his anger, pointed at the sales clerk and roared angrily.

The sales clerk wanted to retort, but when she saw the gold card that Ye Zichen took out...

Although they were just the lowest level of sales clerk, they did have suitable observation skills.

People that held that sort of gold card could easily buy more than a Porsche, they were even able to buy the entire car dealership.

“I’ll take the Panamera and the Maserati Quattroporte together.”

“Sir, are you sure?” The baby-faced girl did not dare to receive the card. The bonus from selling those two cars was worth almost two years of her salary...

“Of course! Go and prepare the contract!”

After signing the contracts, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and walked in front of the sales clerk with a particular nasty mouth.

Meanwhile, she had gone limp...

“You’re going to get screwed one day due to your stinky mouth,” Ye Zichen scolded, then drove the Panamera away from the 4S store, while he got the car dealership to get a person to drive the Quattroporte back to his mansion.

Dingdong.

Not long after he drove away, Ye Zichen’s phone suddenly rang.

He stopped the car by the road, took out his phone to have a look at the messages, and saw that Taibai Jinxing was the one looking for him.

Most importantly, that geezer seemed to be in a hurry...

Taibai Jinxing: Kid!

Taibai Jinxing: Come quickly!

Taibai Jinxing: This sovereign has important matters to discuss with you.

Taibai Jinxing: Can you hurry up? I'm really on the spot right now.

Taibai Jinxing: Only Idealism!

What is it? What's he in such a hurry?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, rubbed his nose, then replied.

“What is it? Why are you in such a hurry? Also, I have my own daily life too, I can't possibly service you 24 hours a day!”

“You finally came,” Taibai Jinxing let out a long sigh of relief, then looked at the mess of a school in front of him with a frown. “A problem has come up with the school established in the Heavenly Court!”

# **Chapter 264 – Dealing With The School Issues**

---

Ye Zichen was speechless when he saw the messages.

If something happened with the Heavenly Court's school, then think of a way to solve it. Why are you coming to bother me?

“What now?”

At that same moment, within the Heavenly Court's academy.

A group of three and four years old cried. The children in primary school did not study properly either, and even the celestial second generations were messing around with them...

Just moments ago, a celestial second generation hit a child until he cried, resulting in the latter being sent to Old Lord Taishang.

Taibai Jinxing did not know how to describe the situation in front of him either, so he just directly sent Ye Zichen a short video.

Ye Zichen saw the situation at the school through the video...

“I really submit, I thought you people from the Heavenly Court were supposed to be smart. Could it be that you’ll only be able to do something when I make everything crystal clear for you?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “No wonder the technology in the Heavenly Court cannot compare up to the Modern World!”

Taibai Jinxing was very displeased to get retorted at by Ye Zichen, a mere mortal. However, in order to solve the current situation, he could only push forward.

“Please help this sovereign.”

Ye Zichen directly drove off after seeing this message and did not send any replies. As Taibai Jinxing looked at the chat that did not move for a long time...

“Hey, where did you go? Tell me how to handle it!”

“Can you be more responsible? This old man has no experience... What am I supposed to do about these kids!”

“Can you say something?”

Taibai Jinxing felt like he was going crazy. At that moment, several celestial children sat near his leg, while they scratched his pants.

What made him even more speechless was that he felt a sudden wave of warmth of his leg...

He looked down. A celestial child had peed on him.

“Seriously...” Taibai Jinxing scratched his hair in annoyance. His hair no longer flowed smoothly. At that moment, he lost all of his built-up image, while he scratched his hair into a chicken’s nest!

F\*ck I thought that establishing a school was a simple thing. I never would have expected it to be so hard.

More importantly, the person who suggested it ran away!

“This sovereign is giving you the ultimatum now. If you don’t

appear, then this sovereign is going to kick you out of the WeChat group.”

“Stop hurrying me, can’t you just wait a moment?” At that moment, Ye Zichen was buying comics in a comics store.

When he moved all of those comics back in his car, he licked his lips and rolled his eyes, “Geezer, I’m telling you, don’t threaten me with kicking me out of the group. I don’t have a particularly good temper.”

“Stop bullshitting, tell me the solution!”

Zoom.

Ye Zichen used his phone to scan and send all of the comics in his car.

Taibai Jinxing received your red packet.

Flump.

A pile of comics fell down from the sky. Taibai Jinxing waved his hand, causing the comics to automatically line up in a line and levitated in midair.

“These are?”

“What I sent you just now is called comics!” Ye Zichen messaged in annoyance. “These comics are used to educate those kindergarten children. With these, those children will calm down a lot.”

“Then how do I deal with primary and middle school?”

Taibai Jinxing raised his eyebrows.

“How are you dealing with them?”

“I just got the celestial second generations to play with them, but they just start fighting randomly!”

“You guys are truly foolish!” Ye Zichen sighed. “The point of the school is to teach the students knowledge. How could you let them play?”

“Then teach them what? Those celestial second generations are a lazy bunch!”

“The Heavenly Court has plenty of celestial young masters, right? Every single one of them have some experience in cultivation and somethings that they excel at, right? These deities will all have children in the future, and those children would have to go to school, right?”

“What do you want to say?”

Taibai Jinxing did not catch his drift.

“Get the deities in the Heavenly Court to all donate some cultivation books. Organize these books according to their difficulty levels, then use them for primary, middle, and high school. Isn’t that fine?”

“That could technically work, but those celestial second generations aren’t exactly suited to become teachers...”

“You really are dumb.” Ye Zichen shook his head. “Go and find Yue Lao, ask him who those celestial second generations at school are interested in. As long as you bring the targets of their affection over, then the problems will be solved.”

Wow.

Taibai Jinxing suddenly felt like he had an epiphany as he saw Ye Zichen’s messages.

Amazing!

Why did I never think of it? Those celestial second generations are no longer young, their celestial hearts have started to move...

“Thank you!”

“No need for the courtesy. Just don’t annoy me.”

After Ye Zichen drove back to his mansion, he saw that the Quattroporte had already been driven back. Ye Zichen parked the car in his yard, then got out. When he entered the mansion, he saw Lil’ White run towards him with his tongue stuck out.

Ye Zichen squatted down to pat Lil’ White’s head, while Mother Ye smiled, “You came back! You’re just in time, I have to pick Tiantian up from school.”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen nodded.

Mother Ye walked over and whispered, “Your Jinglei-jie is in a bad mood, go and chat a bit with her.”

Ye Zichen nodded, then walked to sit down by Mu Jinglei's side.

“Jinglei-jie!”

“Zichen, when did you come back!” Mu Jinglei, who had been silent until then, raised his eyebrows, and looked to the side subconsciously. “Auntie Ye was here just now...”

“My mother went to pick up Tiantian,” Ye Zichen replied with a soft smile.

“Tiantian. That little girl is pretty cute,” Mu Jinglei giggled. “Oh yeah, I heard Lil’ Chuang say that he’s been working for you recently!”

“Mhmm!” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. “Lil’ Chuang is now working in one of my jewelry stores!”

“Alright, then I don’t need to worry anymore,” With that, Mu Jinglei stood up from the chair, then stretched lazily. “Sis is a bit tired, so I’m going back to rest.”

As Ye Zichen watched Mu Jinglei leave, Ye Zichen hooked his finger at Lil’ White, “Has Jinglei-jie continuously been like this recently?”

“More or less!” Lil’ White’s ears dipped. “I have been trying very hard to make her happy, but it’s no use!”

“This is going to be hard!” Ye Zichen frowned. He didn’t think that Li En’s matter would cause such a large impact for Mu Jinglei. It seems like I’ll have to let time slowly wash away the wounds in her heart.

Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly, then took out a cigarette, which he lit for himself.

Before he smoked a few mouthfuls, his phone rang again.

Xia Keke!

He hadn't seen her for several days, and he did want to ask her about Wei Chen.

“Keke, what is it?”

“Zichen-ge!” Xia Keke's cute tone sounded out from his phone. Ye Zichen felt his entire body and heart turn happier.

“Hmm, why did you think of calling me?”

“Wow, you truly are shameless. A lad like you is actually not going out to earn money properly, and instead doing this sort of thing. Even I’m ashamed of you!”

Xia Keke seemed to be arguing with someone on the other side of the call. Then, Ye Zichen heard her speak into the phone, “Zichen-ge, come over quickly. Susu and I bumped into a pack of scoundrels!”

# Chapter 265 – The Five Pengci Brothers

---

Pengci (碰瓷) is a type of scam where a person fakes getting injured in traffic ‘accidents’ and extorts money from the driver.

Near the Ganshui Road development area...

A twenty-five or twenty-six year old man laid in front of a white Audi A6, while four young men around his age stood around him.

Pengci.

And it was an organized pengci.

Plenty of the surrounding bystanders shook their heads. These young men were frequent scammers in this area.

People called them the Ganshui Road Pengci Brothers.

This pengci group always picked on targets that were rather easy to bullied. Most people that ran into these situations would pay up to escape the trouble, so when they saw that the car's occupants were actually two young girls...

It seems like the Ganshui Road Pengci Brothers were going to succeed again.

“Girl, you bumped into my bro’s leg, compensate!”

“Wow, you guys are really shameless!” Xia Keke pouted, while she looked ahead speechlessly. “We drove very slowly, so it was impossible to crash into anyone. If you guys really think that we crashed into him, then fine, we’ll go to the hospital. If something really happened, then we definitely won’t run.”

“We brothers are busy, how could we have time to go to the

hospital? Don't bullshit with us, compensate us with five thousand yuan and we'll call it even." The more menacing looking man out of the five roared.

At the same time, a kind-looking young man added, "Girl, there is no need for you to mind them. Five thousand yuan, just treat it as preventing trouble!"

Actually the person who spoke was also part the group since their pengci group was very well organized.

One of them would be the "victim", while the other people would perform other tasks. They might pretend to be a bystander, or a worked-up teenager that helps the "victim", or the big bro of the "victim" that asks for money...

Basically, it was teamwork.

“Why should I give him money? We didn’t hit him,” Xia Keke bit her lip and snorted.

At this moment, a Panamera stopped, and Ye Zichen got off.

“Zichen-ge!”

“Zichen!”

Su Yan and Xia Keke both walked up to him, while the Ganshui brothers looked at Ye Zichen’s car.

A well-equipped Panamera cost nearly two million. Looking at his age, he should be a rich second generation.

All of a sudden, they felt a bit troubled. Professional scanners like them really disliked dealing with rich second generations.

While the scammers started to think about retreating, Ye Zichen nodded towards the two girls and walked in front of the scammers.

“You got hit by their car?” Ye Zichen squatted on the ground and glanced at the scammer, who was lying in front of the car and moaning.

“Ouch...” The scammer cried out in “pain” due to not knowing the situation.

The menacing-looking young man frowned, then snorted, “What is your relationship with them? I’m telling you, these two girls hit my little brother.”

“Hmm, then how much do you want to be compensated for?” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

The scammers were stunned. They never would have imagined that the rich second generation would be that easy to talk to. They, who were going to retreat, glanced at his car, while the menacing-looking man held out a finger...

“How much is that?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Ten thousand!” The menacing looking hulk squinted. “Give us ten thousand, then this is over!”

“Hey, why did the five thousand from earlier become ten thousand!?” Xia Keke frowned. “Zichen-ge, we didn’t hit him. They are here to pengci.”

Ye Zichen rubbed Xia Keke's hair, then squinted his eyes. "So little. Since I can drive that car, don't you feel like you're at a loss to just ask ten thousand yuan from me?"

Gulp.

The pengci group gulped.

Were they going to turn everything around and suddenly become rich?

"How much do you want to give?"

"Hehe..." Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, walked in front of Su Yan and asked her for the car keys. At the same time, he also called Bai Dahai. "Fatty, I met some pengci scammers, wire a million to

my account. I'm going to crush him!"

Then, Ye Zichen hung up and got in the car.

When the young man on the ground heard the engine start up, he frantically stood up and cursed, "Grandson, do you want to crush me to death!?"

"Oh wow, didn't you get hit by the car? I don't see anything wrong with you?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. "I even got the money transferred over. I can't exactly just leave it lying around, right? Stand still, I'll crush you to death now then give you guys the money!"

Ye Zichen stepped down on the pedal, and the Audi A6 sped out towards the young man.

The young man immediately jumped to the side and dodged it.

At that moment, Ye Zichen also stopped the car, pointed towards the pengci scammers and cursed, “If you don’t want to die, then scram!”

Hearing that, the Ganshui Brothers scrambled off.

Meanwhile, Su Yan and Xia Keke also walked up to Ye Zichen.

“You scared me so much. I thought that you were really going to crush him,” Su Yan called out with a frown.

“Do you think I’m an idiot? If I ended up killing him, then I have to pay up with my life! I was just scaring him!” Ye Zichen reached out to rub Su Yan’s and Xia Keke’s heads. “Why did you girls come over to the Ganshui Road development area?”

“Hehe...” Xia Keke suddenly got closer mysteriously. “There is a very accurate fortune telling place here. Susu and I came to get our fortunes told!”

Fortune telling place?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Weren’t these kinds of things all lies!?

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head when he saw Su Yan’s and Xia Keke’s anticipatory look.

It can only trick young girls like them.

Ye Zichen and co. drove over to the business street around there. Since the area was still in development, there weren't many shops there.

The fortune telling place Xia Keke and Su Yan wanted to visit was a store. It didn't seem too big from the outside, but within...

They saw that the room was pitch dark the moment they entered.

Puff.

The candles on both sides of the pitch-dark corridor suddenly lit up after they took a few steps.

“F\*ck, what the hell!?” Ye Zichen looked at the scene in shock. This was too strange...

“We heard that this fortune telling place is very mysterious from our classmate. It really is amazing!” Xia Keke patted her hands in excitement.

Meanwhile, Su Yan’s eyes also lit up.

The more mysterious the fortune telling place seemed, the more hopes they had for the fortune teller.

After they walked two or three minutes down the candlelit corridor, Ye Zichen and co. arrived outside the room of the fortuneteller.

“Zichen-ge, do you want to go in with us?”

“No, I’m not interested in this stuff,” Ye Zichen shook his head as he looked around vigilantly. No matter what, he just felt that the place seemed slightly sinister...

“Then we’re going!”

The two girls held hand and tried to push open the door to the fortuneteller. However, for some reason, no matter how they pushed, the door just would not bulge.

“Stop wasting your strength. The fortuneteller only tells the fortune of destined people. Since you can’t push open this door, it means that we are not destined to meet,” An empty laugh sounded out.

“What a pity!” Xia Keke and Su Yan frowned unhappily.

Ye Zichen, who sat back on a chair, squinted his eyes, and pushed the door...

The door... Opened!

# Chapter 266 – Fortune Telling

---

Ye Zichen was stunned.

Ye Zichen had merely wanted to try and see whether the door really couldn't be opened. Why did it open the moment I touched it?

I swear I didn't put any force behind it. I merely touched it.

"Zichen-ge, you pushed open the door," Xia Keke exclaimed.

"This door..." Ye Zichen pointed at the door for quite a while without saying anything. At the same time, the slightly cold voice from before rang out from the room once again. "Destined one, come in..."

“Go in your ass, I don’t want to get my fortune told at all!” Ye Zichen was speechless. However, since he was unable to withstand the urgings of Su Yan and Xia Keke, he could only walk into the room.

Bang.

The moment Ye Zichen entered the room, the room door slammed shut.

Hu...

The candles in the dark room lit up, illuminating the enter room. At that moment, Ye Zichen also noticed that a person, whose appearance could not be clearly seen, sat near the window in the room.

“Sit!”

It wasn't just the looks, Ye Zichen was unable to even identify whether he was male or female from the person's voice.

Ye Zichen sat down vigilantly opposite the fortune teller. A crystal ball suddenly appeared on the table...

“What do you want to ask?”

“Will you hit me if I say that I don't want to ask about anything?”  
Ye Zichen blinked.

“No,” the fortuneteller shook his head.

“That’s great. Friend, let me tell you the truth, actually, I don’t believe this kind of stuff at all. The reason I entered was only because my girlfriend told me to. How about you let me go?” Ye Zichen asked in anticipation.

“Coming here is fate, so getting something told is better,” The fortuneteller smiled, then placed a stack of cards in front of Ye Zichen. ‘Draw one!’

“Oh!”

Ye Zichen randomly drew a card from the pile. The moment he drew the card out, the rest of the cards burnt to dust.

Ye Zichen gulped when he saw that...

The special effects are so realistic, it was even more realistic than some entertainment shows.

Ye Zichen received the card Ye Zichen drew with a faint smile, then spoke up after taking a glance at it, “I have some advice for you.”

“Say it!”

“The moment you exit the room, the first person you see will become your future enemy. I suggest you make up your mind and eliminate him or her now! What’s more, the first person you meet after leaving my store will be a lucky warrior for you. If you can quickly get him under your wing, it will be of great assistance for your future tribulations!”

With that, the fortuneteller made a gesture that asked Ye Zichen to leave.

Ye Zichen looked back in shock. There's something wrong with this fortuneteller, right? The people I see first after I walk out of the door are definitely Su Yan and Xia Keke. It's impossible for them to become my enemies!

Also what lucky warrior. There's something wrong with him!

Ye Zichen pushed open the room's door as he continuously retorted in his mind. The moment he pushed the door opened, he saw that Su Yan and Xia Keke did not wait for him at all.

Instead, the person who stood at the door was...

“Class Rep Sun, why did you come?” Ye Zichen was stunned. When he entered earlier, Su Yan and Xia Keke had said that they would wait for him.

Sun Yige clearly did not think that she would bump into Ye Zichen either. She blanked out for a bit before blushing, “I-I heard my classmates say that the fortune told here is very accurate, so I wanted to come and try!”

“Accurate my ass, it’s not accurate at all,” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but retort. “He’s just a liar, a conman that lies for money.”

“Really?” Sun Yige bit her lips with hesitation. However, she still couldn’t help but use her hand to push the room door.

It didn’t budge.

“It seems like such is fate!” Sun Yige let out a soft sigh. It was clear that a student had already told her beforehand what it means if she can’t push open the door.

‘What fate? Don’t believe it, believe me!’ Ye Zichen said seriously.

Sun Yige nodded with a smile, “Mm, I believe you!”

Then, Ye Zichen left the fortunetelling store with Sun Yige. During so, Ye Zichen continuously called Su Yan and Xia Keke, but the calls did not connect...

“Did you see Xia Keke and Su Yan when you came here earlier?” Ye Zichen looked at Sun Yige, since there was no other choice.

“Hmm? Keke and Susu came as well?” Sun Yige replied in surprise.

From the way she reacted, she probably doesn’t know. Ye Zichen

sighed. Then he pushed open the door to the fortunetelling store as he listened to the sound of the recipient of the call being busy.

“Damn dog, stop. It’s the lollipop that laozi loves!”

A black dog continuously ran forward with a lollipop in its mouth on the business street, while a glasses-wearing young man followed behind it...

Ye Zichen stopped in his tracks.

The glasses-wearing young man suddenly stopped when he passed by Ye Zichen, then exclaimed with a surprised smile, “Shopkeeper, I didn’t expect to meet you here!”

Ye Zichen was shocked, “Gou Yuzhan, why are you here?”

“Me? I just followed the dog in front of me...” Gou Yuzhan pointed at the space in front of him, but when he looked up, he noticed that the dog had already disappeared!

“My lollipop!”

Ye Zichen reacted speechlessly as he saw the expression that seemed to say that an apocalypse had come, “Uhm... You can’t have followed the dog all the way over here, right?”

“Yeah, I ran over following it. That dog stole my lollipop while I wasn’t paying attention. Just a little bit, just a little bit more and I could have gotten my lollipop back!” Gou Yuzhan clenched his teeth. That was my favorite lollipop!

“Seriously...” Ye Zichen was speechless. “Stop being depressed, I’ll just give you a dozen lollipops later!”

Clap.

The depressed face instantly turned joyous. Gou Yuzhan grabbed Ye ZIchen by his shoulder, then bear-hugged him.

“Shopkeeper, you really are an amazing person!”

At that moment, Ye ZIchen’s phone rang. The caller ID showed that it was Xia Keke...

“Zichen-ge, Susu and I went shopping!”

“...” Ye Zichen was speechless. They had clearly said that they would wait for him outside...

Ye Zichen let out a soft sigh of helplessness, then reminded them to be careful before returning the phone to his pocket.

“I’m going back to school, what about you guys?” Ye Zichen looked towards Sun Yige and Gou Yuzhan.

The two of them did not reply...

After a while, Sun Yige spoke up, “Err... Can I treat you to the meal? Just treat it as thanks for helping me out earlier...”

“Food!” Gou Yuzhan’s eyes lit up. “If you’re going to eat, then can I come? Believe me, I definitely will not become a third wheel. Instead, I will become the catalyst for your relationship’s improvement.”

“Of course,” Sun Yige smiled, then looked towards Ye Zichen.  
“You coming?”

“Then let’s go!” Ye Zichen smiled.

# Chapter 267 – Ox-Head Borrows Money

---

Within a bright and quiet room...

Ye Zichen sat on a chair and looked at Gou Yuzhan, who was sitting beside him, with surprise.

“My god, if I’m dreaming, then let this dream continue on forever!” Gou Yuzhan muttered inaudible words as he stuffed food into his mouth.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then ignored Gou Yuzhan and smiled towards Sun Yige with his wine glass raised, “Class Rep Sun...”

“Oh, oh,” Sun Yige raised her glass and touched it with Ye Zichen’s, then turned her gaze back to Gou Yuzhan. “He is truly eating very happily!”

“God only knows what sort of experience caused him to be like this!” Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly with a smile, then started to pick up the food on his plate with his chopsticks, which Class Rep Sun had cooked personally...

“How is it, is it delicious?” Sun Yige bit her lip and looked closely at Ye Zichen’s expression.

“Zeze, Class Rep Sun, your cooking skills really aren’t bad!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then couldn’t help but pick up more food.

“It’s good that you like it,” Sun Yige smiled softly in response.

After a good half an hour passed, Ye Zichen patted his tummy as he leaned back on the chair and burped in satisfaction. Meanwhile, Gou Yuzhan had pretty much finished as well...

However, he wasn't because it was full, it was because there wasn't anything edible left on the table!

"Thank you for the feast. I'm pretty much finished, so I'll leave now!" Gou Yuzhan rubbed his hands and stood up from the chair.

Ye Zichen glanced at him and yanked his arm, "Where are you going!?"

"Didn't I already say it before coming here? I'm definitely not going to be the third wheel!" Gou Yuzhan shrugged. "There's nothing else to eat, so I'll leave now and give the two of you some space!"

With that, Gou Yuzhan irresponsibly left.

“He only came to freeload!” Ye Zichen was speechless.

“Isn’t he your friend?” Sun Yige blinked. “But your friend is pretty amazing, there was so much food...”

“Would you believe me if I tell you that I don’t know him? Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “My story with him originated from a lollipop...”

“A lollipop?” Sun Yige was confused.

Thus, Ye Zichen told her about the things that happened between him and Gou Yuzhan with a smile.

After a while, Sun Yige snickered, “He’s kinda cute!”

“Really?” Ye Zichen truly didn’t get where the cute point was, causing him to look at her in surprise...

At that very moment, Sun Yige also looked up and saw Ye Zichen’s dark eyes.

Zoom.

Sun Yige’s face randomly blushed.

Dingdong.

You received a marriage string.

F\*ck!

Ye Zichen took out his phone and looked at the Treasure Chest in shock...

Possessor: Ye Zichen, Possessed: Sun Yige. Current affability level: 10.

What the hell? How did I get linked with School Beauty Sun?

For some reason, the more Sun Yige, who held her head with her hands as she looked at Ye Zichen, looked at him, the more she wanted to continue doing so. It was as if she had completely fell, and was unable to pull herself out of it.

After long time, she finally bit her lips and smiled, “There’s been

way too many things to thank you for recently...”

“We’re classmates, so no need to be so courteous,” Ye Zichen smiled slightly forcefully. At that moment, he truly was a bit nervous...

He hadn’t gain any marriage strings for a long time, and now, he freaking linked with the class rep.

Fortunately, the affability level wasn’t particularly high. It was merely 10.

Ye Zichen looked at the time, then smiled, “It’s getting late, I have to go!”

“I’ll send you off!”

Sun Yige stood up from the chair and sent Ye Zichen to the entrance.

“Just here is fine, hurry back!” Ye Zichen stopped at a place about several tens of meters away from Sun Yige’s family’s Chinese restaurant and smiled.

“Sure, see you tomorrow!” Sun Yige nodded.

“See you.”

Ye Zichen waved towards Sun Yige then sped off in the car. Even after the car completely disappeared from her sights, Sun Yige continued to gaze at where he left.

At that moment, a person wearing a long black robe that covered their face in a hood walked out from the shadows.

“Sun Yige!” The person had a woman’s voice that sounded almost identical to Sun Yige’s.

“Who are you...” Sun Yige bit her lips and wanted to run away, but her body was restrained, causing her to be unable to move at all.

“You tell me who I am!” With that, the black robed woman dropped her hood, revealing a face identical to Sun Yige’s.

“You... You...” Sun Yige was so stunned that she didn’t know what to say.

However, the woman smiled, and caressed Sun Yige’s cheeks,

“Now you know who I am? Actually, I’m you!”

When Ye Zichen returned to the school dormitory, he saw that no one was there, exactly as he expected.

He laid on the bed lazily and took out his phone. There weren’t any huge matters in the Heavenly Court’s chat group, since they were discussing about the establishment of the school and the regulations.

On the other hand, the Underworld’s group was busier.

Ox-Head: @Hua Tuo, Elder Hua, don’t be so stingy, just lend me a little.

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Hua Tuo: This old man doesn't have much either. I've been losing recently as well.

Ox-Head: Then what should I do? It's almost the repayment date for the Heaven and Earth bank. I still lack twenty something thousand.

Hua Tuo: How about borrowing from other people?

Ox Head: We ghost servants don't get as good of a treatment as you mortals who chose to remain in the Underworld get. They might not be able to lend me merits!

Merits?

Heaven and Earth merits?

Ye Zichen blanked out for a moment, then sent Ox-Head a friend request.

I have accepted your friend request. Let's chat!

Ox-Head: Bro, what's up!

He's so easy to talk to.

Ox-Head and Horse-Face were ghost marshals of the underworld, and even some temples in the Modern World had statues of them.

I never would have expected him to be so friendly with a little ghost servant like me.

“Big Brother Ox-Head, this little ghost just saw that Big Brother Ox-Head seemed to want to borrow Heaven and Earth merits? You are one of the Underworld’s ghost marshals, how did you end up like this?”

“Ha, I can tell that you’re new!” Ox-Head sighed. “We Ox-Head and Horse-Face used to have a similar position to the Black and White Impermanences, and were soul-reaping servants that had actual power before. However, the Heavenly Court and the Underworld’s relationship soured, since Little Brother Horse-Face and I had closer ties to the Heavenly Court guys... So... Ai, never mind, there’s no point of looking back on things.”

Ye Zichen suddenly understood. I didn’t think that there was such a situation.

It seems like the tensions between the Heavenly Court and the Underworld were misfortune to a bunch of people. A good example

was Ox-Head, no matter what, he's a ghost marshal... He actually reached the point of needing to borrow Heaven and Earth merits from others.

But this is good. I don't have a particularly high reputation in the Underworld, so I'll take the chance of Ox-Head being down to get to know him. This might be of great help for me in the future.

"Then Big Brother Ox-Head, how much Heaven and Earth merits do you need? I'll lend it to you!"

# Chapter 268 – Immortal Jump

---

Tears instantly flowed from Ox-Head's eyes when he saw Ye Zichen's message.

Who said that the ghost realm had no true feelings? Look at this little brother...

“Little bro, are you speaking the truth?”

Ox-Head asked in a testing manner.

Ye Zichen smiled when he saw the message.

“Of course, but this little ghost doesn't have too many merits here!”

Ox-Head's heart felt slightly sad after seeing this message. Oh yeah, this kid is merely a small fry that just entered the staff group. It's already going to be hard for him to support himself with his Heaven and Earth merits, how could he lend them to me.

However, since the Heaven and Earth Bank was truly reminding him all the time, and Horse-Head didn't have any spare merits...

Although Ox-Head felt a bit bad, he still forced himself to ask.

“Little bro, how many Heaven and Earth merits do you have?”

“I have around sixty thousand. Big Brother Ox-Head, how much do you need?”

“How much? Sixty thousand!?” Ox-Head nearly jumped up in shock when he saw Ye Zichen’s message.

Heaven and Earth merits were not easy to earn. Even he, himself, Ox-Head, merely has several tens of thousands of merits...

This new little ghost in the staff chat actually has sixty thousand Heaven and Earth merits.

“Little bro, don’t joke with Ox-Bro. You have sixty thousand Heaven and Earth merits?”

“Why should I lie to Big Brother Ox-Head?”

At that moment, Ye Zichen did not know that his several tens of thousands of Heaven and Earth merits actually caused such a huge reaction.

“Little bro, then lend twenty thousand to Big Bro. Big Bro will give it back to you as quick as possible.”

“No problem!”

With that, Ye Zichen send Ox-Head a red packet of twenty thousand Heaven and Earth merits.

Ox-Head received your red packet.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Ox-Head increased by 100. Current

intimacy level: 200.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Ox-Head leveled up. Current intimacy level: Trusted.

Ox-Head had suffered a lot for these twenty thousand Heaven and Earth merits. While the Heaven and Earth Bank hounded him, he asked everyone he could find, but did not manage to borrow twenty thousand.

He was already on the verge of giving up, but he was actually able to borrow twenty thousand here.

“Little Bro, Ox Bro will watch over you in the Underworld from now on. Although I, Old Ox, am not as well off as before, the title

of Ghost Marshal is still here. If any idiot little ghost messes with you, tell Ox Bro, I'll definitely back you up!"

"Thank you, Big Brother Ox-Head."

Ye Zichen smiled.

"Sure, then I, Old Ox, is going to repay the debt so that the debt collectors wouldn't come to bother me all the time. Little Bro, let's chat again when we've got time!"

With that message, Ox-Head left his manor. F\*ck, I've truly been so ashamed this half a month.

Now that I got this twenty thousand merits, I have to show off a bit.

Ye Zichen closed the chat with a faint smile. Although he lost twenty thousand merits, it was definitely worth it for him to get on good terms with the Underworld's Ox-Head.

Just like Ox-Head said earlier one. No matter what, he still had the title of Ghost Marshal.

A starved camel was still larger than a horse. After some time, I have to go to the Underworld in order to revive Liu Qing, so will be good for me to know a few bigshots there.

Nothing else happened the entire night...

The moment Ye Zichen laid down on his pillow, he fell asleep, most likely due to getting too tired out recently.

When the first light shone on the next morning...

Bang.

Ye Zichen sat up from the bed after hearing a loud noise, then saw that the others in the dormitory had already returned, and were staring at the entrance with a look of speechlessness.

Zhu Yunbai walked in lifelessly. From the looks of him, it was as if he fought with someone, since several strands of grass were stuck in his hair, while his trousers were covered in footprints.

“Lil’ Six, didn’t you say that you were hooking up with someone? Why did you come back so early in the morning?”

Kang Peng rubbed his eyes sleepily. However, when he noticed

the situation with Zhu Yunbai, he immediately jumped down from his bed.

He tried to look at Zhu Yunbai's face several times, but Zhu Yunbai covered his face with his hands.

Kang Peng was a bit angry, "Move your hand away and let me see!"

Zhu Yunbai put his hands down bitterly, while Kang Peng puled Zhu Yunbai's head by back his hair.

Zhu Yunbai's eyes and corners of his mouth were bruised, while his whole right side of his face was a bit swollen.

"Ol' Six, what happened?" Everyone in the dorm surrounded him.

“Don’t mention it!” Zhu Yunbai sat down bitterly on the chair.  
“F\*ck, I got hit with Immortal Jump!”

“What?” Everyone bar Zhu Yunbai were stunned.

Zhu Yunbai cursed with his bloodshot eyes, “I f\*cking treated the girl to a meal, then we went to get a room. The moment we entered the room, and before we stripped, two men came in from the outside and stripped me, then they threatened me to give them money, otherwise, they would call the police...”

“Then...”

“Then I thought about it a bit, then submitted and paid then,” Zhu Yunbai’s expression turned menacing. “But... F\*cking hell, the girl that had been chatting with me was actually a man! That’s why I got pissed and fought with them! But since they had more

people, I couldn't beat them. They took my phone, my wallet and everything, so I had to f\*cking walk back from the development area!"

"F\*ck!" Kang Peng stood up in his boxers with a look of speechlessness. "You say that decent looking girl with that soft voice is a guy!?"

"Yeah!" Zhu Yunbai answered angrily.

"F\*ck this..."

Everyone else was shocked. They had seen the girl when he was video calling Zhu Yunbai before.

None of them expected that it was actually a guy.

“F\*ck, we have to help Ol’ Six pay them back. Not only was it Immortal Jump, they even beat him up. They really don’t think much of us older brothers!” Kang Peng frowned, while the others also agreed.

As for Ye Zichen...

At that moment, he had already gotten dressed and ready to go. I have to do something about this...

Immortal Jump was whatever, since it was just losing a bit of money at worst. F\*ck, that brat actually cross-dressed and tricked our little brother’s feelings... That was intolerable.

Ten-odd minutes later, all of them got out of the dormitory. The moment they opened the door, they saw the Panamera, which was parked at the entrance!

“F\*ck, does Polytechnic U have so many rich second generations now?” Kang Peng said in annoyance.

“Yeah, that Panamera is worth like two million!” Zhang Rui pushed his glasses up.

The others chatted about the fancy car at the entrance, while Ye Zichen smiled wryly...

I wonder what they would think if they find out that the car is mine.

“Ye-zi, can you endure this?” Bai Yu hooked Ye Zichen’s shoulders. “Back then, you were the person driving a 918. The fact that the Panamera is parked here, shouldn’t you get a fancy car and show him some colors? What’s more, look at him, it’s parked in your...”

“Wait, what? Your parking spot?”

Bai Yu looked over at Ye Zichen, who was smiling wryly, then pointed at the sportscar.

“F\*ck, this car is yours!”

# Chapter 269 – Mortals Pissed Me Off

---

Everyone from the dormitory stared at Ye Zichen speechlessly.

They really did not expect that this roommate of theirs would start to turn more and more mysterious in just a few months time.

He had to free-load off them before, and now he was able to afford his own sportscar!

After a round of retorts, since the car did not have too much space in its interior, Kang Peng and Zhu Yunbai decided to take a taxi to lead the way, while Ye Zichen followed closely behind them as the driver.

After about an hour, they stopped in front of farmhouse.

“Little Bro, you sure it’s here?” Everyone looked at Zhu Yunbai in shock. He actually could hook up in these sorts of places, he’s pretty wild!

“It’s here... That’s definitely right!” Zhu Yunbai frowned.

Kang Peng squinted his eyes and signaled everyone else.

They immediately understood, and climbed over the wall.

“No one’s here either!”

They walked around the farmhouse several times, but they did not see a single person.

“They might have gone out. Let’s wait here for a bit!”

At the same time, outside the farmhouse...

The Ganshui Road Pengci Brothers walked to the entrance of the farmhouse as they hummed arm in arm, with beer bottles in their hands.

The shortest one of them pointed at the parked Panamera tipsily.

“Hey, this car is so familiar!”

“F\*ck, laozi gets annoyed whenever I see a fancy car. The guy actually dared to park in front of our home. Bros, wreck it!”

With that, they wobbled towards Ye Zichen's car...

Beep, beep, beep.

The alarm started blaring.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and climbed over the walls again, and coincidentally saw the Ganshui Road Brothers pissing at his car...

"What are you guys doing!?" Ye Zichen roared, then quickly ran towards them.

They looked up.

One of them raised his eyebrows, “Isn’t that the rich second generation from yesterday?”

“F\*ck, this grandson tried to crush laozi the other day. The world is truly tiny, we actually bumped into him here. Bros, destroy him!”

The Ganshui Road Brothers charged over with their beer bottles. Ye Zichen raised his hand...

Slap, slap, slap, slap, slap.

He slapped each of them once!

These slaps completely shocked the five brothers. They blanked out for a while, then subconsciously touched their slapped faces...

“Bros... Go... Hey, these lords, how may we help you?”

At that moment, Kang Peng and co. also climbed back over the wall of the farmhouse.

Zhu Yunbai pointed at the skinny man in the middle with skin whiter than a woman's with his trembling finger, “It's him...”

“Then what are you guys hesitating for? Beat him up!”

Everyone from the dormitory charged over. The Ganshui Road Brothers clearly met these sorts of situations many times before, so they were not afraid at all.

If they were fighting with normal people, then the Ganshui Road Brothers might have had a chance.

But against Ye Zichen...

Kang Peng and co. did not even attack much, as Ye Zichen had already knocked down the Ganshui Road Brothers easily.

“Say, you guys are into quite a bit of stuff. Not only pengci, but also Immortal Jump?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and looked at the Ganshui Road Brothers, whose faces were already swollen like a pig’s.

“Big Bro, we’re just trying to make a living!” The buzz cut young man on the floor folded his hands in front of him.

“Return what you robbed from my bro yesterday!” Ye Zichen kicked him. The young man with a buzz cut quickly took out a phone and placed it on the floor. “This is your friend’s phone. As for the money...”

“Big Bro, what are you submitting for!” The rather menacing-looking young man frowned. “Your friend’s an idiot. He really should look at a mirror to see what the heck he looks like. He actually wants to hook up with someone? He jumped into the Immortal Jump, he deserves it.”

“You’ve got a temper!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “You have such justification for being a criminal. Amazing...”

“Heh, don’t speak shit with laozi. Kill laozi if you dare!” The menacing-looking man glared.

“Killing is illegal. Do you think I’m an idiot?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

The menacing-looking guy instantly bared his yellow teeth in disdain, “Then stop babbling towards laozi. You’re just going to beat up laozi at worst. Laozi’s skills are rough and muscles are thick, so I don’t care!”

“Very strong!” Ye Zichen smiled faintly, then raised his eyebrows at his roommates. “Let’s go!”

“Ye-zi...”

“What are you guys waiting here for? He already said it, kill him if we dare. You guys dare to kill?

Thus, they immediately got into the car or a taxi and left.

The menacing-looking man watched in disdain as Ye Zichen and co. left, “You see that? We’re still more fierce!”

Meanwhile, Zhang Rui pushed his glasses up in the car and cursed, “F\*ck, I’m really annoyed about just letting them go like this!”

“Yeah,” Kang Peng let out a long sigh. “But what could we have done? It was just beat them up once at most.”

Ye Zichen did not join in the discussion.

He had more important things to do.

Ox-Head, the fallen ghost marshal of the Underworld, felt like everything was brighter after repaying the entirety of his debt of

twenty thousand merits in the Heaven and Earth Bank.

“Leader Ox!”

“Marshal Ox!”

The ghosts on the streets greeted him. Although Ox-Head’s status was lowered, he still possessed the title of Ghost Marshal in the Underworld.

“Mm.”

Ox-Head nodded towards the ghosts with a straight face. At that moment, the phone in his pocket vibrated.

Ever since his position drastically lowered due to the tension between the Heavenly Court and the Underworld, he had lost a lot of friends. Aside from the loan officer of the bank, people rarely contacted him through his phone...

Ox-Head took out his phone in confusion...

Little ghost bro!

Ox-Head instantly smiled!

Thinking back, when he was a proper soul-reaping servant, everything was bright. Countless people were proud of adding him as friends. However, ever since he has fallen, he found that the number of friends he had on social media gradually decreased...

Since they had all deleted him.

It was from then on that he saw relationships clearly.

Number of friends didn't matter. The quality of friends did!

It was clear that Ye Zichen was a true friend in Ox-Head's mind.

“Little bro, what business do you have with Old Ox?”

“It’s not exactly business,” Ye Zichen smiled faintly. “This little one merely wants to ask Big Brother Ox-Head a question.”

“Please!”

“How do we hurt a mortal if those of us in the Underworld get annoyed with them?”

Zoom.

Ox-Head instantly shuddered when he saw Ye Zichen’s message. He subconsciously glanced around at the ghosts on the street, then quickly walked to a dark corner to send his reply.

“Little bro, you can’t just carelessly say that. It can cause you to lose your life. The Underworld and the mortal realm are two separate realms, we can’t carelessly interfere in it. It was fortunate that you asked me. If you asked other people, they might have reported you and gotten you fried in the oil wok!”

“It’s that severe!?” Ye Zichen was stunned. He never expected things to be so strict in the Underworld. However, when he

thought about the Ganshui Road Brothers, he couldn't help but ask. "But those mortals offended me!"

"What?" Ox-Head was stunned. "Mortals offended you?"

Original Chapter Teaser:

Coming up in the next chapter of Red Packet Server...

Ye Zichen and his bros are out for blood. How dare someone immortal jump Zhu Yunbai's ass!? How dare they beat Zhu Yunbai up!? And more importantly... How dare the GUY CROSS-DRESS AS A CUTE GIRL AND TRICK EVERYONE!?

What's going to happen?

Who are they going to meet?

Is it going to be somebody we've never ever seen before? Or could it actually be someone familiar? Could they even be some idiots that we've already met just part-timing and doing something else?

How are they going to take revenge? Just beating them up? Extorting them for money? Or maybe Ye Zichen will go "Super Saiyan" on them and send them flying? Or... Is that just too kind?

# Chapter 270 – Yue Lao’s Relationship Hall

---

Ye Zichen’s heart jumped as he gripped his phone...

He was in too much of a hurry just now, so he said the wrong thing. Ox-Head can’t have noticed something, right?

“Those mortals are sick of living, right? They actually dared to offend Old Ox’s brother!” Ox-Head slapped in thigh in the alley of the streets, causing the group of nearby little ghosts to get freaked out.

“Bro, your Ox Bro will help you teach the mortals you talked about a lesson.”

“Ox Bro, didn’t you say that if anyone of us in the Underworld goes and harms people in the mortal realm, we will be thrown in the oil wok?”

“Hey, little bro, you don’t know about it right? There are loopholes in everything,” Ox-Head explained with a smile like an older brother. “Tell Ox Bro, just which mortals offended little bro...?”

“It’s...”

Ye Zichen told Ox-Head about the location and appearances of the Ganshui Brothers.

“Leave it to I, Old Ox!”

The moment Ox-Head sent the message, he placed his phone back into his pocket, then casually grabbed two ghosts with foot cuffs.

“Marshal Ox!”

Both of these little ghosts were ones sent to Hell to be punished due to committing too many crimes in the Modern World. They were truly scared when they met ghosts servants of the Underworld, so they were naturally terrified when they saw Ghost Marshal Ox-Head.

“Do you want to get your foot cuffs taken off?” Ox-Head smiled slightly meaningfully.

“Yes, naturally!” The two ghosts quickly nodded.

“Then do this...” Ox-Head grabbed the heads of the two ghosts and whispered.

The two ghosts quickly whispered.

Inside the Ganshui Road farmhouse.

The five brothers were truly not afraid of anything at all. Even though they were just beaten up, they were eating and drinking together happily once again.

“Qiang-zi, you’re still the most menacing!” The buzz cut knocked his beer jug with the scar-face. “It seems like we have to act more menacing from now on. Look at that rich second generation. He ran away with his tail between his legs!”

“Look... In terms of how menacing people are, we are this!” The scar-face raised his thumb, while the others also chuckled.

At that very moment...

The table was suddenly flipped over, while a sinister feeling surrounded them...

Their sweat glands uncontrollably exploded, and that scar-face actually felt that something was touching his back...

Bang.

The five people quickly kneeled on the floor and kowtowed towards the east, while muttering some inaudible words...

At the same time...

Ye Zichen and co. finished their breakfast at the bun shop outside the school, then Ye Zichen directly returned to the dormitory, laid down on his bed and took out his phone...

He definitely wasn't just going to do that. It was too low to just get several ghosts to scare them.

Since he was going to play, he had to play in a more high-class manner.

At that moment, Yue Lao was looking at the messy red strings in the Marriage Hall with a frown. Ever since he started to do business in the Heavenly Court, he hadn't dealt with the situation in the hall for a long time.

Yue Lao scratched his head with a terrible expression as he looked at the red strings in front of him, which would not be sorted out.

What am I supposed to do!

It was nearing the time for him to hand in the annual report, but he truly could not sort out the red strings.

Dingdong.

His phone on the table rang.

Yue Lao, who was getting troubled over the red strings, looked at the messages on it...

“Sky Sovereign, what is it?”

“Yue Lao, do you have some lower-leveled red strings? Send me a

few!"

Red string!

Yue Lao felt like his head was going to explode whenever red strings were mentioned.

"Which fairy did Sky Sovereign fell for? Do you want to link the strings by yourself? That seems like it's going to be rather troublesome, since this old man's Marriage Hall is facing some small issues!"

...

Ye Zichen was speechless.

I had way more than enough red strings around me, and to link even more...

Do you think that I'm crazy!?

However, he did noticed Yue Lao's words!

Marriage Hall!

Was the Marriage Hall that Yue Lao was talking about the place that was in charged of the marriages of the Three Realms? However, why did he say that there was trouble?

"What is it? What trouble? Tell me and let me enjoy myself."

Dingdong.

Yue Lao did not reply, but sent an image.

The image showed countless tangled red strings.

Ye Zichen immediately understood after seeing that.

No wonder so many cheating incidents and stuff happened after marriage. So that's the origin of the issue!

“Old Man, you’re not good for doing that. These strings are all tangled together, so aren’t you forcing couples to fight?”

“This old man has no way to sort it out!” Yue Lao sighed.

“In my opinion, you should just cut all of these tangled strings. Let them start a new relationship. Otherwise, wouldn’t they just be harming each other?”

“How can that be okay!” Yue Lao said justly. “As Yue Lao, I have to be in charge of the relationships in the Three Realms. How can I intentionally destroy their marriages!”

“But aren’t you destroying them right now?” Ye Zichen was speechless. Those other men and other women had a more severe impact on the destruction of families.

“Say, marriages have to be natural, so you should cut those tangled strings. If they truly are meant to be, then they will naturally go back together... That will stop the current situation which causes trouble for their families!”

“Scissors!”

Yue Lao lifted his hand. A celestial child immediately handed over a pair of scissors with a piece of red cloth tied on the handles.

Don’t blame me, blame Sky Sovereign Nameless. He told me to do this!

Snip.

Yue Lao snipped the strings several times with his scissors, causing the tangled red strings to all fall apart.

“I cut them!” Yue Lao placed the scissors back into the celestial child’s hand, then complained in a speechlessness inducing manner. “It seems like I’m not going to be able to get my year end bonus!”

...

He’s still thinking about his year end bonus even now?

Ye Zichen was truly speechless.

“What, even as Yue Lao, you got some performance indicators?”

“What do you think!?” Yue Lao rolled his eyes. “Right now, competition is huge in the Heavenly Court. Just those cuts...”

“Worried for what!?” Ye Zichen smiled.

“How could I not get worried. It’s nearly the end of the year!”

“I can tell that you’re a newb at work,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. “This sovereign shall now tell you about the workplace survival laws...”

After ten-odd minutes, Yue Lao was rather confused from all the listening. However, once he thought deeper into it, he found that the stuff Ye Zichen talked about really did make sense.

“Sky Sovereign, then how do you think I should fix it?”

Yearend bonus was something that I definitely can’t lose!

“Give me a few low-leveled red strings first. The ones that you can only use for ten odd or twenty days are fine.”

Dingdong.

Yue Lao sent the red packet without thinking.

You received Yue Lao's red packet.

Red String x5.

Red String: A necessary item to refine the Red Strings of Fate. It is able to have a simple string-tying effect, but it is not comparable to a Marriage String. It can only maintain itself for half a month.

Not bad, not bad.

It was exactly what Ye Zichen wanted...

With these red strings, it seems like the Ganshui Road Brothers will love each other even more.

Meanwhile, Yue Lao felt like he was on fire.

What's going on with Sky Sovereign? Why does he disappear at the key moment every single time? He already told me about the workplace survival rules, but he didn't say what I should do!

Just how was I supposed to show myself off in front of the Jade Emperor? How can I get my year end bonus...

All of a sudden, Yue Lao wanted to sing a song...

Sky Sovereign, come back quick, I can't take it by myself...

# Chapter 271 – Sun Yige’s Drastic Change

---

When Ye Zichen looked back at Yue Lao’s chat after putting away the red strings, he saw that the old man had exploded.

He couldn’t help but smile.

“What are you getting anxious for!”

“How could I not be anxious!” Yue Lao thought to himself. It’s not like you’re the one who might lose his year end bonus...

“Never mind, since you gave me those red strings, then this sovereign will give you a few tips,” Ye Zichen replied with a smile. “You can make a dating game show for the Heavenly Court!”

“Dating game show?”

Yue Lao was confused.

“Find twenty six marriage-thirsty girls, essentially just female deities that want to get married. Then find some good quality lads and give them a platform to get to know each other so that they’ll become a couple. After that, they can leave. Whenever there’s an empty spot for the girls, find someone else to fill up the spot etc...”

Ye Zichen was definitely able to talk about several tens of different non-repetitive ideas when it came to dating game shows.

Since there were so many of them in the Modern World, he naturally understood a bit from just hearing about them.

“Uhm... Are you sure it’ll work?”

Yue Lao didn't quite believe him.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort when he saw Yue Lao's doubts.

He actually did not trust "If You are the One" that is famous throughout the whole world. The popularity of this dating game show...

"It's definitely alright. I'm telling you, if you do just that, you'll definitely get a share of the year end bonus. What's more, as Yue Lao, if it really doesn't work, then do some tricks behind their backs!"

"Alright, I'll try it!"

“I’m telling you, if this game show gets high ratings in the Heavenly Court, do give me some commission!”

Ye Zichen left the chat with Yue Lao and decided to stare at the red strings.

He was able to link strings, but that was only when he could see them...

I can’t exactly go over to Ganshui Road just to help them tie some strings, right...

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen remembered the Thousand Li Tracking Sigil from All Seeing Eye...

He immediately sent a friend request.

I have accepted your friend request. Let's chat!

All Seeing Eye: Sky Sovereign!

All Seeing Eye spoke with a hint of seriousness. Sky Sovereign was not a title that anyone could bare. This deity dared to address himself as “this sovereign”, while the other deities in the group also called him “Sky Sovereign”...

Although they have never met before, All Seeing Eye did not dare to offend him.

All Seeing Eye: I wonder what business do you have with this little deity?

Ye Zichen glanced at the intimacy level.

Friendly.

“I wonder if daoist friend still has any Thousand Li Tracking Sigils left?”

All Seeing Eye was surprised.

That kind of crappy thing was things he randomly made for fun when he had nothing better to do. If he actually wanted to, he could provide him with a whole truckload of them.

“Yes.”

“I wonder if daoist friend can send this sovereign a few?”

“No problem!”

Dingdong.

You received All Seeing Eye's red packet.

Thousand Li Tracking Sigil x50.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but rub his eyes when he saw the amount... There was no mistake. It was fifty!

“If Sky Sovereign needs anymore, then you can ask little deity for them any time.”

Was it that worthless?

Ye Zichen looked at the message on his phone in shock. I had thought that the sigil was some sort of amazing treasure.

“Sure, thank you daoist friend.”

“Sky Sovereign is too courteous. If there are no other matters, then little deity is going off to patrol.”

“Mm!”

Ye Zichen took out a sigil from the Treasure Chest.

Would you like to use Thousand Li Tracking Sigil?

Note: Thousand-Li Tracking Sigil is a consumable item. It locates the target for three hours.

Yes.

Please select the target. It is limited to a person or item that you have seen before.

Ye Zichen imagined the Ganshui Road brothers in his mind. Not long later, a scene appeared in front of him.

The Ganshui Road Brothers kneeled on the floor in a line with terrified expressions as they continuously prostrated.

The sounds of bottles breaking could occasionally be heard from behind them.

It seems like Big Brother Ox-Head called some ghosts over.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and smiled evilly.

The Ganshui Road Brothers' bonds are truly strong!

Also, since that trap liked being a girl so much... Then I'll let him feel a man's passion.

Ye Zichen quickly tied the red strings for them and revealed a satisfied smile.

“I wish the five of you a happy life!”

The moment he said that, Ye Zichen could see from the image that...

Four of the five Ganshui Road Brothers, who were kneeling in a line, instantly sat their gaze on the trap.

Bang.

The buzz cut brother kneeled on the floor with a knee and grabbed the trap's hand with his right hand...

“Flower, I have fallen in love with you. Be my man!”

Bang.

At that moment, the scar-faced brother kicked the buzz cut brother away and cursed.

“F\*ck off, Flower, I’m the one who loves you the most!”

“All of you f\*ck off. Flower, it’s me who loves you the most!”

“Flower!”

Ding dang dong.

The Ganshui Road Brothers immediately started to fight amongst themselves, causing Ye Zichen to be unable to resist his laughter.

“Why are you smiling so lecherously?” Zhang Rui pushed Ye Zichen a bit. “Hurry up, we have lessons later!”

“Haha, we might be able to see huge news in tomorrow’s headlines!” Ye Zichen chuckled.

When he finished the entire day of class, Ye Zichen was rather surprised that Class Rep Sun did not attend class.

From what he could recall, that class rep of his never missed any lessons.

“Ye Zichen.”

To no surprise, Lu Lu immediately stuck to him when lessons were finished. However, what caused him to feel even more troubled was that...

Su Yan and Xia Keke were also outside the classroom.

“School Beauty Harvester, as expected of your name!” Xia Keke twitched her mouth meaningfully, while Su Yan looked straight at Lu Lu with the gaze of the legal wife...

All of a sudden, the smell of gunpowder was everywhere.

“Ahem... Errr, have you seen Sun Yige?”

“You’re still thinking of Sun Yige...”

They instantly exploded.

“We didn’t see Yige today,” Xia Keke and Su Yan finally replied after sorting out their moods. “She did not return to the dorms yesterday.”

“Really?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

At that moment...

“How many times have I told you? I’m not your Sis. If you guys dare to harass me one more time, then don’t blame me for being merciless,” A yell could be heard from the school woods.

Ye Zichen immediately frowned when he heard this familiar voice as he hurried towards the woods...

When he arrived in the woods, he saw a tall girl who wore black skintight leather clothes and black high heels.

If she had a whip in her hands with this outfit...

Cough cough!

Ye Zichen looked in front of the girl and saw three delinquents lying there.

He took a closer look and saw that these three delinquents were Wei Teng's underlings.

Ye Zichen connected the dots, then ran in front of the girl in disbelief.

“Sun-Sun Yige,” Ye Zichen gulped. What’s going on?

This Sun Yige is totally a different person from the Sun Yige I know!

Sun Yige has always been like a little sister next door, who caused people to be unable to resist caring for her. But this lady in front of me...

Had her hair tied up in a bun, drew long and thin eyeliner, had bright red lips as well as a gaze that looked down on the world...

She isn't that little sister next door at all!

She is a queen!

“Are-Are you Sun Yige?”

# Chapter 272 – Leveled Up!

---

Ye Zichen truly felt like he was going crazy.

Just what the heck is going on? Sun Yige was perfectly fine last night, why did she suddenly turn out like this after a single night...

Did she get stimulated somehow!?

“Of course I’m Sun Yige!” Sun Yige smiled, then kicked the wailing lackeys of Wei Teng, who were lying on the ground. “I’m going to say it one more time. I’m not your sis... If you guys come to harass me one more time, then don’t blame me for being merciless.”

“Yes, yes!”

The lackeys immediately ran away, while Ye Zichen watched everything in shock...

Is she really Sun Yige?

At the same time, Xia Keke and co. also walked up. All of them were completely stunned when they saw Sun Yige.

“Yige?” Su Yan walked over with a stunned expression. This Sun Yige was way too different from her memories.

“Susu!” Sun Yige smiled, then pulled Su Yan’s hand.

Su Yan couldn’t help but reply after hearing the familiar tone and way of addressing her, “you really are Yige!”

“Yeah, why did you all ask me that? Ye Zichen asked me once, and you asked me once as well... What, is it no good for me to be like this?” Sun Yige twirled with a giggle, then formed a gun with her hand before raising it up.

So cool!

No matter what, Ye Zichen was unable to relate the girl in front of him to Sun Yige.

People’s personalities can indeed change, but... This is a bit too much change, right?

Xia Keke pouted as she blinked for a long time. Then, after making sure that the girl in front of her was Sun Yige, she immediately skipped over, “Yige, your outfit is super cool!”

“Yeah? I like it quite a bit as well,” Sun Yige smiled warmly.

Ye Zichen, who stood behind them, couldn’t help but ask, “Why did you suddenly think about dressing up like this?”

“I’ve wanted to dress up like this since a long time ago, but I’d never got the courage to!” Sun Yige smiled faintly. “But, I had a dream last night and decided to wear this when I hope up. From the looks of it, it suits me rather well!”

Too strange.

Even when Ye Zichen arrived at Huang Shengmei’s office, he still felt like Sun Yige’s suddenly change was rather strange.

Both from the way she spoke and the confidence that she emitted

faintly...

That is different from the Sun Yige I know.

“Why are you frowning so much?” Huang Shengmei handed over a cup of coffee.

Ye Zichen received it then raised his eyebrows, “Shengmei, I want to ask you a question!”

“Mm, go on!” Huang Shengmei nodded.

“From a medical perspective, is it possible for a girl who had a rather weak personality to suddenly turn extremely dominatrix-like?”

“It is!” Huang Shengmei nodded. “The extremes of things are its exact opposites. If she is overly cowardly and careful, it is rather possible for her to suddenly wake up one day with an altered personality... However, there are huge cons for her heart and mental health.”

“Why do you say that?” Ye Zichen asked.

“The extremes of things are its exact opposites. The reason that happens is because it surpassed the endurable range. When a person’s mind gets an intense attack, this sort of situation would occur!” Huang Shengmei answered plainly.

Is Class Rep Sun’s situation like this? Ye Zichen scratched his chin. For some reason, he felt like Sun Yige’s change was not as simple as that.

“Ai, oh yeah, what did you call me over for?”

“Can’t I just want to see you?” Huang Shengmei rolled her eyes and pouted.

Ye Zichen sat in Huang Shengmei’s office for the entire afternoon. Originally, he had wanted to take her out to dinner, but an ad hoc surgery caused the plan to be voided.

While Ye Zichen drove back to school, he continued to think about whether he should take Sun Yige for a check up...

At that moment, a truck barreled towards him.

Ye Zichen reacted as if it was his natural instinct and turned the wheel, forcing his car to rush into the greenbelt. The Hou Brothers and him opened the door, while the former stood in front of him.

“Boss Ye, the other side isn’t weak at all!” Third Hou said vigilantly.

“I’ll cover you guys, send Boss Ye off first!” Fourth Hou stepped forward and released a faint gold aura from him.

“Boss Ye, let’s go!” Third Hou grabbed Ye Zichen’s shoulder and ran backwards. However, no matter how far they ran, a group of people were always on the verge of blocking them off.

“We can let you go if you hand over the person behind you!” The one who spoke was a woman with long hair and double pupil eyes, who had faint scales on her arm.

“Boss Ye, find a chance to run. I’ll help you block them off!”

With that, Third Hou charged towards the woman.

A chaotic fight broke out!

Ye Zichen could feel that the person who fought Fourth Hou and the woman that blocked off earlier were both spiritual body leveled expert.

What do these people want to capture me!? Could my identity as the Yellow Emperor been exposed?

Ye Zichen scratched his head. He was unable to get involved in spiritual body leveled fights, and he also clearly knew that he was merely a burden to the Hou brothers if he stayed behind.

Run.

He immediately started running without turning his head.

Zoom.

Just as Ye Zichen turned around to run, a man and a woman with the same double pupil eyes and scales on their arms appeared beside him.

“Boss Ye!” The Hou brothers were in no spot to help him.

Ye Zichen scratched his head and looked at the pair in front of him, “Why are you guys capturing me?”

“We have nothing to say!”

With that, the pair blocking Ye Zichen's way charged towards him.

"Hey, I am of the false spiritual body level as well, so give me some face!" The pair in front of him were also false spiritual body leveled experts, but they worked very well with each other. Even when Ye Zichen activated both Unbreakable Body and the Fiery Eyes of Truth...

He could only continuously defend.

As Ye Zichen lost his stamina drastically, he was in no shop to exchange a pill from the Treasure Shop. He had to maintain being absolutely vigilant, but that was devastating for his mind.

He subconsciously looked over at the Hou brothers. It seems like they can't free themselves to help me.

Soul Pearl Yiyuan is still soaking in water at home...

Am I going to fall here?

Zing.

The pair that was fighting with Ye Zichen instantly attacked more intensely.

Due to being caught unaware, Ye Zichen fell backwards...

Crap!

This fall made it so that I no longer have the chance to turn the tables.

At that very moment...

Ye Zichen felt a warmth flow through his entire body. His originally tired out body instantly became full of energy...

More importantly, he felt as if his senses had become sharper.

System notification.

Level leveled up. Current level: Spiritual Body.

Experience: 100/200.

Daily Experience Gain: 8.

Ye Zichen instantly smiled when he saw the notifications. The saying is right. There is always a way...

Ye Zichen scratched his head and looked at the pair, who now had vigilant expressions, and apologetically raised his eyebrows, “I’m so sorry. I leveled up!”

# Chapter 273 – The Five Loving Brothers

---

The Yellow Emperor's reincarnation is truly amazing!

It actually comes with plot armor. I was just about to get screwed, but then I suddenly get told that I leveled up!

Ye Zichen supported his chin with his right hand, while he took out a cigarette from his pocket and stuck it in his mouth.

“My two bros are waiting for my help. You two... Sorry, but I’m in a hurry!”

Bang bang.

Ye Zichen knocked down the pair with two chops, then ran over to the Hou brothers.

The situation of the originally equal fight instantly changed with Ye Zichen's participation.

When the double pupil lady with scales noticed that Ye Zichen had advanced to the spiritual body level, she immediately ordered a full retreat.

The Hou brothers decided to stay and remain on guard with the mindset of not chasing an enemy with nowhere to go, while Ye Zichen walked to the place where they fought and picked up a piece of scale from the ground.

The scale was a greenish-blue, and felt rather slimy. It was both cool and soft at the same time.

“Do you two know who they are?” Ye Zichen handed the scale over.

Third Hou examined it closely, “They should be half-beastmen, probably of the snakemen tribe!”

“Half-beastmen?” It was Ye Zichen’s first time hearing about them. “Are half-beastmen half beast, half men?”

“You can think of them as such,” Fourth Hou nodded. “But half-beastmen normally only appear within the Three Realms, I don’t know how they managed to get here.”

“But there is a point to note,” Third Hou squinted his eyes. “These half-beastmen aren’t particularly strong on average. What’s more, during my fight with them, I felt that they don’t seem to know how to use their Power of Heritage!”

“Then...” Fourth Hou frowned.

“Never mind, leave it!” Ye Zichen waved his hand with a faint smile.

Actually, Ye Zichen did have some ideas about why everything happened.

These half-beastmen appeared in the Modern World most likely because of him.

Great Emperor Qingming had told him that this ninth life of his would definitely not be calm. At that very moment, he was like Xuanzang's meat, which anyone would want to take a bite out of.

What's more, it seems like he had gained quite a few enemies back when he was the Yellow Emperor.

And the descendants of these enemies had been continuously looking for him...

It really is hard to stay alive!

As Ye Zichen drove back to the dormitory, he saw his roommates grouped together with a focused gaze that would cause people have some dirty thoughts.

“What are you guys looking at?”

Zhu Yunbai was the first to turn around. He immediately pulled over a chair for Ye Zichen, then massaged his arms and legs.

“One who is unaccountably solicitous is hiding evil intentions...

Say it, do you want to borrow money or get boosted?” Ye Zichen took out a cigarette from his pocket and lit it.

Zhu Yunbai shook his head, “It’s neither this time!”

“Then what are you acting solicitously for? Go away,” Ye Zichen smacked Zhu Yunbai’s hand away.

At this moment, Zhang Rui pushed his glasses up with a smile, ‘Ye-zi, tell me, are you responsible for this?’

“What?” Ye Zichen took a glance at the computer screen.

Zhang Xiaohua, a member of the Ganshui Five, has turned himself in.

The body of the news laid below the title, mostly talking about what the Ganshui Five did.

There was also a short video in the middle...

“Mr. Police, please arrest me! I have committed crimes, please arrest me. I’m begging you!”

In the video, Zhang Xiaohua cried as he grabbed the policeman and said that he had committed crimes...

Also, it could be said that Zhang Xiaohua’s clothes were messed up, and that he had a strange posture when walking!

It seems like his four brothers really loved him a lot!

“Ye-zi, tell us the truth, what sorts of tricks did you pull this time!” Zhang Rui raised his eyebrows. “I saw that you were smiling extremely lecherously when you smiled. You said that there will be a headline, so this is what you were referring to, right?”

“Hey, I just wanted them, those five brothers, to get more loving with each other!” Ye Zichen shrugged speechlessly.

At that moment, another news popped up on the screen.

The Ganshui Five turned themselves in all together.

An extremely eye-catching title appeared on a certain Bingcheng forum.

Ganshui Brothers, not real brothers, but are as close as real brothers!

This author eloquently described the journeys of the Ganshui Brothers, but emphasized his words in the last paragraph, which he accompanied with a video.

The video was already heavily censored. Mr. Zhang Xiaohua of the Ganshui Five were pressed down onto the ground by four hulks passionately...

During that, the four hulks would occasionally physically fight in order to gain a better position.

Meanwhile, the comments below were extremely amazing.

“You guys now know why I’m still single after watching this

video.”

“Look at that trap’s expression carefully, he has a look of enjoyment...”

“I heard that Zhang Xiaohua of the Ganshui Five just turned himself in, then his four waifus also did the same. Are they going to love each other until the end of days?”

“Zhang Xiaohua said, ‘Uncle Police, I’m regretting it a little now!’”

Ye Zichen smiled faintly as he read the comments, while his roommates rewatched the video several times and even chuckled...

“He’s so pitiful!”

“You won’t understand his happiness,” Zhu Yunbai chuckled.

All of them laughed. It was a good thing for the Ganshui Five to get arrested.

Especially since one was able to find out that they truly had plenty of penci and Immortal Jump victims from reading the comments.

Then, Ye Zichen played two games of League with his roommates before falling asleep on his bed.

In the Heavenly Court...

Yue Lao did choose to listen to Ye Zichen’s ideas to start a dating

show, and there was a very good reaction to it.

Plenty of families even get Yue Lao some red packets in hopes of getting their family's child on the show.

After all, everyone wanted their family's child to get married and have kids. They were naturally anxious when they see some families get their celestial fourth generations, while their celestial second generations did not even start dating yet!

However, Yue Lao noticed an issue... The good reactions from the dating show merely came from the lower and upper class...

The higher ups had not noticed it at all. If this continued, then according to the workplace survival laws that Ye Zichen thought him, he would be just wasting his efforts for nothing!

“Sky Sovereign, little deity is facing some trouble!”

When Ye Zichen, who just woke up to go to the bathroom, saw the message on his phone, he raised his eyebrows.

“What troubles is it now?”

So lucky, Sky Sovereign is actually here!

Yue Lao directly described the problem he faced to Ye Zichen, causing the latter to not be able to help but raise his eyebrows.

“I’m telling you, this first show must be extremely shocking and spread through the Heavenly Court!”

“I want that to happen too, but those that signed up...” Yue Lao hesitated.

“Who told you to just wait for them to sign up? Don’t you know how to invite people?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “Since you just started, many deities are just watching on the sides for now!”

“Then who should little deity invite?”

Ye Zichen smacked his forehead speechlessly. Why isn’t this gramps getting it!

Invite who? Of course he had to invite well-known people!

# Chapter 274 – Topical People

---

Nowadays, platforms would invite some renown people on in order to raise their reputation.

These kinds of people that are in the limelight can raise a lot of discussion surrounding themselves, which increases the chances of the platforms being in the spotlight.

The same principle applied to Yue Lao's dating show.

Ye Zichen sighed, then formed a reply after sensing the old man's confusion.

“Find some recently noteworthy people to enter...”

Noteworthy!

Yue Lao was stunned. He then looked at his chat screen in shock.

“Sky Sovereign, you are the most talked about person recently. Sky Sovereign, could it be that you’re coming back to the Heavenly Court?”

The gossips in the Heavenly Court all surrounded Sky Sovereign Nameless and Chang’e. The two of them being together was slightly old news, but the two of them still drew the attention of many occupants in the Heavenly Court.

The Heavenly Court’s Number One Beauty.

The Heavenly Court’s Number One Mystery.

Yue Lao felt that it would take a long time before the two of them stopped drawing any attention.

“Return to the Heavenly Court, your ass!”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort. He did want to go to the Heavenly Court to take a look, but that's if he could actually get there...

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly at his phone.

“Don't just throw Chang'e and I out there. Aside from the two of us, what other people would draw a lot of attention in the Heavenly Court...?”

“I can't think of any! Sky Sovereign, what do you think I should

do?”

Yue Lao scratched his head. Recently, he had been either focusing on his business or playing Landlord with Old Lord Taishang and his group that he had completely ignored the gossips in the Heavenly Court.

“This sovereign truly submits.”

Ye Zichen licked his lips and sighed speechlessly. This guy really has to be spoon fed everything, even though everything was already laid out for him, and he only needed to reach out to grab it.

“Can’t you use your brain?”

“I’m so old already. Using one’s brain is the job for the young people.”

Yue Lao replied shamelessly.

“...”

Ye Zichen was speechless. He was truly unable to do anything when a deity was shameless to that degree.

But then he thought... Why do I have to help him?

Yue Lao can get screwed, but I won't. It's not like I get any benefits from Yue Lao getting his year end bonus.

“I'll leave it at this. If you don't want to use your brain, then

don't. It doesn't have anything to do with this sovereign."

Slam.

Ye Zichen turned off his phone, laid on the bed, and went back to sleep.

Meanwhile, Yue Lao gripped his phone in shock. He truly felt a bit worried as he read message.

No, Sky Sovereign, you can't mess with me like this! This old man is already so old, my brain definitely doesn't turn fast enough, so at least give me some hints!

What am I, this old man, going to do when you just disappear like that!

He continuously sent messages to Ye Zichen, but the messages did not result in any reaction. Thus, Yue Lao glanced around at the parents, who were lining up to sign their children up, then scratched his head...

Just what deities do I need to find!?

Thus, without any other choice Yue Lao sent Ye Zichen a red packet...

Still no reply.

A while later... Ye Zichen crawled up sleepily from the bed and turned on his phone...

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

A series of notification sound sounded out from his phone. Ye Zichen opened up WeChat, and saw that the messages Yue Lao sent him filled the screen.

At the very end of the long list of messages, Yue Lao even sent him a red packet.

You received Yue Lao's red packet.

Cultivation experience x66666.

At that very moment, the phone of Yue Lao, who was drawing circles as he squatted on the ground, vibrated, causing his body to shudder as well.

No matter how hard he thought, he was unable to think of which most gossipped about people to invite. What's more, that was when his tidy white hair had already been scratched into something that resembled a bird's nest.

If any bird was brave enough, it could totally lay an egg on his head.

Sky Sovereign Nameless received your red packet.

Sky Sovereign appeared!

Yue Lao quickly stood up and sent Ye Zichen a message.

“Sky Sovereign, you finally came back!

Ye Zichen had originally wanted to quit the chat just after collecting the red packet, but Yue Lao’s message stopped him...

“Don’t tell me that you have just been waiting for me for all this time...”

“Sky Sovereign, this old one considered it a fair bit, and asked plenty of other celestial friends, but there honestly aren’t any hot topic people recently!”

Yue Lao frowned.

So foolish.

Could everyone in the Heavenly Court be so dead set on one thing?

Ye Zichen no longer had the stamina to retort.

“Talked about people don’t have to be recent ones, even... Never mind, I’m not going to explain that much to you. I’ll tell you directly, go and invite some royalty!”

“Royalty?” Yue Lao did not understand.

“Seriously... Basically, go and invite the [Seven Fairies](#). Of course, you don’t need to invite Lil’ Seven, since she already has Dong Yong! As for the other people, you know what to look for now, right?”

The Seven Fairies (七仙女) are the daughters of the Jade Emperor and are married/single depending on the texts people refer to. The only thing consistent is that the Seventh Fairy is married to Dong Yong (董永).

“That’ll work?”

Yue Lao was stunned.

“Why wouldn’t it? I’m telling you, the other six of the Seven Fairies might have been itching to get married already when they saw their little sister get married. The entire show will definitely become famous if you invite them!”

Yue Lao frowned slightly. Back then, he had done a lot as Yue Lao

in order for Lil' Seven of the Seven Fairies to be with Dong Yong.

However, the Jade Emperor was not particularly happy about it, resulting in him not getting any year end bonus that year.

Now, he was being told to start from the Jade Emperor's fairies again... Yue Lao did feel rather worried.

"Sky Sovereign, the Seven Fairies are the Jade Emperor's darlings. Are you sure that we should invite them?"

"So? Can darlings be spinsters for life!?" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. "I know what you're worried about. Aren't you just worried about the Jade Emperor criticizing you for it? Let me tell you, this'll definitely be fine. The issue with you helping Lil' Seven and Dong Yong get together was because one was a mortal and the other was an immortal. This time, you're setting pairs up in the Heavenly Court, everyone is suitable for one another, so what are you afraid of? Perhaps, the Jade Emperor will even reward you greatly since you set the Seven Fairies up!"

“That’s true!” Yue Lao was clearly fickle. As long as someone was convincing him, he would change his mind.

“Then Sky Sovereign, which men should I find?”

“You naturally have to find matching people as well!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “Think about it, which of the men in the Heavenly Court are not married and are gossiped about...?”

“True Lord Erlang, Great Sage Sun, Third Prince Nezha...”

Yue Lao did start to understand the criteria for selecting people after getting the suggestion of the Seven Fairies.

“Correct,” Ye Zichen nodded. “Just the three of them. For the first show, only invite them three. I’m telling you, if your show doesn’t take off, then I’ll stream myself eating shit!”

“What’s shit?” Yue Lao did not understand.

“Don’t mind so much!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “If you have the time to care about that, then you might as well hurry up and invite people!”

“Alright, I’ll go and organize it! But for True Lord Erlang and co...”

Yue Lao stopped once again. However, how could Ye Zichen not know what he wanted to say!

“If they don’t agree, then I’ll help you sort it out!”

# Chapter 275 – Possession?

---

Yue Lao continuously visited the large families in the Heavenly Court in his white robes.

He was essentially giving it his all. Isn't it just notable people...?

This old man WILL invite them!

He also naturally placed the Seven Fairies at the very end of his invitation list since he was not one hundred percent certain that he would be able to convince the Seven Fairies to participate in his dating show.

While Yue Lao busied himself to no end in the Heavenly Court, Ye Zichen was in a similar situation in the Modern World.

Just as he was about to drive back to the mansion to take a look, Wei Teng walked over menacingly with dark circles around his eyes.

Bang.

Wei Teng slapped the front of Ye Zichen's car.

Ye Zichen got out with a look of confusion, "What happened? You got beaten up?"

"Tell me! Just what did you do to Sun Yige!" Wei Teng put up a horse stance angrily. "Give me ten minutes!"

"There's something wrong with you isn't there!" Ye Zichen was speechless. "I didn't do anything to her!"

“Heh heh...” Wei Teng smiled coldly.

Thus, the two of them stared at each other without doing anything until ten minutes had passed...

Tiger Fist!

The image of a fist alongside a faint tiger roar flew over, causing Ye Zichen to raise his eyebrows.

He's serious...

Ye Zichen quickly dodged to the side and took a look at Wei Teng!

Wei Teng dipped his head lethargically, as if using the Tiger Fist had used up all his energy...

“This skill of yours is truly low-level!”

It charged up for a super long time, had a super low accuracy and was a huge waste of his stamina....

I really don't understand why Wei Chen taught Wei Teng this move.

Ye Zichen pulled Wei Teng's arm and dragged him in the car as students came over to watch.

“Why are you not staying in your school properly and always

coming over to mine?”

“Say, just what did you do to Sun Yige?” Wei Teng leaned back in the front seat listlessly and muttered. “Just now, I came over to find Sun Yige. She said she likes you... And beat me up!”

“Sun Yige beat you up?”

Ye Zichen was stunned. When he saw Sun Yige in the woods back them, he had seen Wei Teng’s three lackeys lying on the ground...

He didn’t even dare to imagine Sun Yige being the one to beat them up, since from what he remembered...

“How is it possible for Sun Yige to beat you up!”

“You’re asking me, but how am I supposed to know!” Wei Teng glared. “School Beauty Sun clearly seemed like a cute girl several days ago, but when I took a look just now... She’s a true dominatrix! She’s also extremely evil in the way she hits. I feel like she is at least of the Spiritual Body level!”

“Are you sure?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and exclaimed quietly.

“Of course. I’m telling you, the beating resistance my dad trained me to have means that it is nothing when False Spiritual Body level people hit me, I would only get a few bruises at most. But when Sun Yige hit me, even my bones felt pained!” Wei Teng complained. Doing so, he even took a deep breath since he had touched his injuries.

Seeing his pitiful look, Ye Zichen took out his phone to exchange a Spring-Returning Pill for him.

“What is this!” Wei Teng looked at the pill vigilantly. “You can’t be wanting to poison me, right? I’m telling you, I’m not falling for it!”

“Who the heck has the effort to poison you!? This is medicine to help you with your injuries. Didn’t you get beaten up? It’s good for your wounds!”

“Alright, then I’ll take it!” Wei Teng did not think too much into it, and directly took the pill over and popped it in his mouth without suspecting whether the pill really did as Ye Zichen said.

His eyes lit up when the pill entered his mouth.

He could feel that a warmth flowed through his body, while the bruises on his face seemed to fade a little.

“This medicine is amazing. Can you give me a few more? My dad always hits me...”

Ye Zichen helplessly exchanged a few more pills from the Treasure Shop and placed it into his hands.

“Thanks, I’m not going to stay here any longer. If I return home late, my dad’s gonna hit me again!” Wei Teng ran away from the car happily, as if he had already forgotten his purpose for coming over.

When Ye Zichen drove back to the mansion, he found that since Mu Jinglei was still down, Mother Ye had decided to take her out with Tiantian to clear her mind.

Ye Zichen continued to think about what Wei Teng had said as he sat on the sofa.

Sun Yige actually had Spiritual Body leveled strength.

Don't joke with me...

But Sun Yige is indeed kind of weird recently. Ye ZIchen couldn't help but take out a Thousand-Li Tracking Sigil from his Treasure Chest.

Target confirmed: Sun Yige.

Zoom.

This familiar image... It seems to be...

The bathroom!

Ye Zichen was stunned. Why did I ended up tracking her to her shower? I swear to god, I did not have any naughty thoughts.

Just as he was about to turn the image off, Sun Yige's mutterings caught his attention.

"Just what are you doing? Why are you possessing my body and not leaving!?"

Sun Yige had a revealed a painful expression as she writhed on the floor. Not long later, she stood up once again and smiled calmly.

"What, don't you like it this way? Didn't you always hoped for yourself to become fiercer?"

“Hurry up and leave my body. I don’t like myself like this!” Sun Yige held her head and yelled.

Yet, not long later, her expression changed once more, “You are truly a weird chick. You clearly hope to become like this in your heart, yet you are saying that you dislike it now...”

Ye Zichen was completely stunned as he watched Sun Yige act like two completely different characters.

Split personality?

The one in pain was clearly the Sun Yige I knew, while the more bossy one seemed to have robbed Sun Yige of her body...

What the hell! Does the possession which happens in novels occur?

If that's the case, then I have to save Sun Yige!

Ye Zichen had wanted to watch on for a little longer, but Sun Yige suddenly frowned and roared, "Who dares to peek at this sovereign's shower..."

Boom.

The image in front of Ye Zichen immediately shattered as he panted heavily while grasping his chest!

Sun Yige's gaze is truly too terrifying. What's more, she actually noticed All Seeing Eye's Thousand-Li Tracking Sigil.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also made certain of another fact!

Sun Yige was definitely possessed.

At that moment, he definitely cannot just mindlessly go over. Ignoring the fact that he didn't know how to help Sun Yige get her body back, him going over like this may also cause her to be on guard.

Possession, in this case, if it's like what novels said, it should be when another soul entered one's body.

Since it's like this...

“Big Brother Ox-Head!” Ye Zichen took out his phone and sent a message to Ox-Head.

“Little bro, what is it?” Ox-Head smiled. “Oh yeah, Ox-Head got some ghosts to teach those mortals you talked about a lesson!”

“Thank you, Big Brother Ox-Head!”

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen immediately sent Ox-Head a red packet of five thousand merits.

When Ox-Head collected the red packet, a smile bloomed on his face when he saw the merits.

This little bro is truly amazing, he is giving out merits just like this.

“Little bro, just what are you doing?”

“Ox Bro helped little brother teach those mortals a lesson, so just use these merits to buy some drinks,” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.  
“Ox Bro, little brother has something to ask!”

# Chapter 276 – Soul Hooking

---

This little brother truly understands how to act. Ox-Head commented silently.

Just look at his words. Not only did he give me merits, he made me feel really good about it...

“Little bro, ask!”

Thus, Ye Zichen instantly told Ox-Head Sun Yige’s situation.

When Ox-Head saw this message, he replied as if it was no big deal, “It is very simple to deal with dual souls. Just find a soul reaper to hook the extra soul away. Do you need Brother Ox-Head to send one over?”

It's just that simple?

Ye Zichen had thought that it would be an extremely complicated issue, he never expected it to be no big deal at all.

“Then I’ll be troubling Big Brother Ox-Head!”

“Ha, it’s just a simple matter,” Ox-Head smiled faintly.

Soul Reapers only charged 100 merits per private job. Ox-Head had already gotten five thousand merits from Ye Zichen, so he definitely got a lot of profit.

Ox-Head looked around his social media app for a bit, because ever since he fell, there weren’t too many soul reapers that still

kept his contact information.

He messaged several people, only to find that a friend request verification was needed, causing him to curse in his heart.

“Fine, you dare to delete me, Old Ox! When Old Ox stands up once again, I’ll keep you guys in mind!”

He took another glance at the names of the soul reapers that deleted him, then clicked on a rather low-leveled soul reaper...

He did remember that soul reaper a little. That soul reaper was one that followed Xie Bian! Back then, the soul reaper was merely a level 3 Ghost Servant, and now, it had already been several tens of years.

He sent a message in a testing manner.

“You there?”

The message sent through successfully, and more importantly, the soul reaper replied instantly.

“Marshal Ox, why did you suddenly think of me?”

Not bad.

The soul reaper’s impression in Ox-Head’s mind instantly improved, thus, he told the soul reaper what Ye Zichen asked of him.

“No problem.”

With that, the soul reaper went into the group to find Ye Zichen’s display pic to add him as a friend...

Hmm?

Why is it him!?

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone vibrated as he stared at the ceiling on his sofa. He took a look at the notification...

White Impermanence sent it to him.

“When did you enter the Underworld’s staff chat?”

F\*ck.

How did she notice?

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then quickly replied.

“How did you notice me? Don’t spread the news!”

“I won’t,” White Impermanence replied. “Marshal Ox told me to help you hook a person’s soul. You’re so amazing, you actually

know Marshal Ox as well!”

“Naturally!”

Ye Zichen replied in a slightly arrogant manner, while he couldn't help but retort in his mind.

If I knew that I only had to look for White Impermanence, I wouldn't have troubled Ox-Head, and would have just directly went myself.

“Then I'll come and find you now?” White Impermanence asked in a testing manner.

“Nothing will happen if you come out during the day? If that's the case, then come, it's pretty urgent over here, so the earlier we take care of it, the better!”

“Alright!”

White Impermanence immediately appeared in front of Ye Zichen after she sent the message.

“What monster actually dares to cause trouble in this dog’s territory!” Lil’ White, who was lying down and taking a rest, stood up from the floor and scanned the room with green-lit eyes as his fur stood up.

White Impermanence appeared way too suddenly, so Ye Zichen was shocked by her as well.

However, he couldn’t help but make a retort at Lil’ White’s act, “Go and sleep in the corner. I’m home, so there’s no need for you to speak up!”

“Oh!” Hearing that, Lil’ White hung his head, found a good spot, then fell asleep again.

“Your dog is really amazing, just now, I even felt a hint of spiritual pressure from him,” White Impermanence pointed at the fast-asleep Lil’ White. “if it can grow older, then it will definitely be an amazing divine beast.”

“Him...?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

“Don’t look down on the small fellow,” White Impermanence replied softly. “I heard that the being beside Ksitigarbha was merely a dog back in the days, but after Ksitigarbha ascended, it became the [divine beast Diting](#).”

Diting (谛听) is the mount of Ksitigarbha. It was originally a white dog, which managed to ascend to a divine beast. It has a tiger’s head, a single horn on its head, dog ears, a dragon’s body, a lion’s tail and the legs of a qilin.

“That’s if I can become an immortal...” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “Did we go off topic? You came here to help me hook a soul!”

“Oh yeah, then quickly bring me over to the person!” White Impermanence nodded.

Thus, Ye Zichen took out his phone and dialed Sun Yige’s number.

At the cold drinks store near Polytechnic U.

Sun Yige wore a set of black skintight clothes. It was as if she loved the outfit after getting possessed.

She had even put on a faint bit of makeup on her foundationless

face.

At the same time, the heart of Ye Zichen, who sat opposite her, raced.

“Ye Zichen, this is your first time asking me out, right? And it’s this sort of place!” Sun Yige took a glance at the rather interesting room and blushed. “Does this count as our first date?”

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Sun Yige increased by 50. Current intimacy level: 60.

Ye Zichen did not have the mind to care about the increased affability level, since his mind was filled with a single thought...

Get the guy who possessed her hooked away and turn Sun Yige back to her past self.

After all, the Sun Yige of the past would have never said something like what she said earlier.

“You truly changed a lot recently,” Ye Zichen smiled faintly and took a glance at Sun Yige. “All of a sudden, I find it kind of hard to accept!”

“Just slowly get used to it. One day, you will be able to!” Sun Yige smiled.

Ye Zichen looked up, and gave a cue to White Impermanence, who was standing behind Sun Yige...

Do it!

However, the moment White Impermanence made a move, Sun Yige, who sat on the chair, stood up and walked beside Ye Zichen...

“This is our first date, do you actually just want to keep chatting about this boring stuff to me?”

Sun Yige swiped her finger across Ye Zichen’s cheek, then directly sat down in Ye Zichen’s lap and grabbed his collar with her right hand.

“I can feel that you’re very nervous!”

Ba-thump. Ba-thump.

Ye Zichen's heart beat intensely. This possessed girl is too bold! I wonder what Class Rep Sun, who is feeling this as well, feels.

It is rather exciting though...

"You don't actually know, right? I have always liked you alot!" Sun Yige squinted his eyes, hugged Ye Zichen's shoulder, then kissed him without any hesitation.

At the same time, White Impermanence also raised her equipment and got ready to act.

Yet, no-one was able to notice Sun Yige's playful smile as White Impermanence got ready to hook her soul.

After a good minute, Sun Yige finally got off Ye Zichen as she wiped her lips as she saw that Ye Zichen was about to suffocate.

“I really enjoyed this date!”

Then, Sun Yige waved her hand and left the store.

Ye Zichen sat in the chair in shock while looking at the figure of Sun Yige, who continued to remain like a queen as she left, causing him to immediately raise his eyebrows at White Impermanence.

“What’s going on? Why didn’t she change back? Did you not hook her soul?”

# Chapter 277 – The Dog That Swore To Become A Beast God

---

Sun Yige's cool figure when leaving, and the notes that she pressed onto the table...

This feels as if I went to get a prostitute, but ended up as a male one myself...

This definitely wasn't something that the normal Sun Yige could do. If the soul hooking actually succeeded, then she should have blushed, lowered her head and played with the corners of her shirt.

But just now...

“Don't tell me that you didn't make a move when such a great opportunity presented itself!” Ye Zichen's face was covered in speechlessness.

“I did make a move!” White Impermanence said plainly.

“Then why didn’t she recover?” Ye Zichen was a bit stunned.  
“Didn’t Ox Bro say that she would recover when the extra soul is hooked away? I don’t see any soul in your hand!”

“She doesn’t have any extra soul,” White Impermanence shrugged. “How am I supposed to hook it if she has no extra soul? If I really did hook, then she should be reporting to the Underworld with me right now.”

“What did you say?”

Ye Zichen was stunned. No extra soul? Then the image I saw when I used the Thousand Li Tracking Sigil...

Could class rep really have split personalities?

The extremes of everything is what's opposite it. So she suppressed herself until she exploded, and caused her to get a multiple personality disorder?

Ye Zichen closed his eyes and thought about it carefully. He needed to search through his mind to see if there is any method in Old Lord Taishang's Special Medical Journal that would cure a multiple personality disorder.

I need to cure this as soon as possible, otherwise, if this drags on, Class Rep Sun would be in heaps of trouble.

At that same time, on the way from the cold drinks store to Polytechnic University's female dorms...

Sun Yige played with her hair and carried a faint smile on her face as she occasionally touched her lip with her fingers.

A leather jacketed woman smiled in a chaotic consciousness, “How is it? I helped you say what you want to say, and helped you do what you want to do. How does it feel?”

Sun Yige, who was wearing a flowered dress, squatted on the floor near her silently with a blush across her face.

It was obvious that she had not calmed down from the kiss earlier.

“You’re not speaking, it seems like you’re really shy!” The leather-jacket woman smiled playfully. “Your little man is rather nice to you, he even got a soul reaper from the Underworld just now in an attempt to hook my soul away. But no matter what, he definitely did not expect that I am you and you are me... We were

originally one and the same!"

"I'm not the same person with you!" Sun Yige, who was wearing a flowered dress, stood up angrily. "This is my body, when are you going to leave!?"

"So what if you don't admit it? To be honest, this little man is rather interesting. It's just a shame that you two aren't the same kinds of people," The leather-jacket woman pursed her lips, walked in front of Sun Yige and patted her head. "The blood of the Nine Li flows through you. In the end, you're going to be on the side opposing him!"

Sun Yige pushed the woman's hand away, "I don't know what you're talking about!"

"That's alright, you'll understand in the future," The leather jacket woman smiled. "Some things are destined. In the future, you two will definitely be on opposing sides. No matter how much you love him right now, it is impossible for you two in the future... I would advise you to give up earlier, and let the pain be short!"

“I said it already, I don’t know what you’re talking about!” Sun Yige roared and pointed at the woman with a frown. “This is my body, please leave!”

“No problem, I’ll leave right now!”

What Sun Yige did not expect was that the leather-jacketed woman actually did not refuse, and actually left her body.

Since Sun Yige was able to control her body once again, she completely froze on the spot.

Then, she touched her lips with her hands... That was my first kiss!

Meanwhile, a leather-jacketed woman who looked identical to Sun Yige stood behind her and shook her head with a chuckle, “Such foolishness, my body double!”

After Ye Zichen sent White Impermanence away, he returned to the mansion and continued to search for a way to cure a split personality disorder in his mind...

However, even after a long time, he was still unable to find anything.

“That doesn’t make sense. Ahh, it probably is because it isn’t called multiple personality disorder in the ancient times,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

At that moment, Lil’ White ran over with his tongue out.

“Boss!” Lil’ White rubbed himself against Ye Zichen’s leg.

As he looked at the little fellow, Ye Zichen thought of White Impermanence’s words...

He rubbed Lil’ White’s head, “You can ascend into a divine beast in the future?”

“A divine beast is too weak!” Contrary to his expectations, Lil’ White actually twitched his mouth in disdain. “I’m a male dog that’s going to become a beast god, how can a mere divine beast be the ends to my advancement!”

Hehehe....

Where did this damn dog learn how to be so shameless?

Ye Zichen continued to rub Lil' White's head, "You said that you actually really ascend into a divine beast? What would you be like if you become a divine beast?"

"A divine beast is nothing. I already said it, I'm a male dog that will become a beast god!" Lil' White looked up proudly.

Bragging once was enough, why is he addicted to being shameless?

Ye Zichen immediately raised his hand to slap Lil' White.

Seeing that, Lil' White immediately jumped to the side and wagged his tail, "Boss, why are you always hitting me?"

“Beating you is care, scolding you is love, I’m spoiling you.”

“Then I rather be more distant to you. We seriously have no need to be extremely close!” Lil’ White said seriously on the tea table.

“Hehehe... you’re defying me now!?” No matter how agile Lil’ White was, he was not as agile as Ye Zichen, who reached out his hand to grab Lil’ White and smacked his head a few times.

“Try exaggerating again!”

“How did I exaggerate?” Lil’ White glared. “What I’m saying is the truth!”

“Hehe, then tell me just what sort of level are you at right now?”

“Spiritual Beast!”

“How far is that from divine beast?”

“Ten thousand miles!”

“Then what about the distant between divine beast and beast god?”

“Ten thousand miles!”

Slap.

Ye Zichen knocked Lil' White's head and cursed, "That's like twenty thousand miles in total, and you're telling me that you're not exaggerating?"

"I really am not this time!" Lil' White struggled out of Ye Zichen's hands and raised his proud proudly. "I have inherited memories in my head, this was something that my inherited memories told me!"

"Inherited memories?" Ye Zichen paused.

"Inherited memories are only in descendants of yaos that are of divine beast level and above which possesses the talent of becoming divine beasts! That's why, Boss, I'm telling you, I'm a male dog that will become a beast god!" Lil' White wagged his tail proudly with his head held high.

It was as if he was saying...

Hurry up and praise me. I'm so amazing!

"Lil' White, if you continuous to act pretentiously, I really will beat you!"

So apparently the eliminated dog I got from the Howling Celestial Hound is a divine beast!?

Ye Zichen did not think that he was that lucky.

"Everything I said was true... Why don't you believe me!" Lil' White muttered sadly. "Can't you normally feel where I'm amazing..."

"I just feel that you're extremely shameless!" Ye Zichen replied

seriously.

# Chapter 278 – Video Chatting With Taibai Jinxing

---

In the Heavenly Court...

Although Yue Lao was very tired out after wearing himself out for the dating show for an entire day, he was very satisfied with the result.

Six out of the Seven Fairies alongside twenty important female deities or celestial second generations in the Heavenly Court...

The female cast was definitely very large.

What's more, the deities in the Heavenly Court somehow managed to catch wind of the news of the cast, so a bunch of old male deities all wanted to get on the dating show, including several reputed deities.

If it was before, Yue Lao might have been extremely happy with the results and allowed those deities on the show in an impulse.

However, after he received the guidance from Sky Sovereign Nameless, he already locked in the three great deities for the male cast, so no one was able to change that.

After Yue Lao refused interests of those male deities, he lit up a cigarette for himself casually.

I'm definitely going to get the year end reward!

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen stared at Sun Yige, who stood beside him, with shock.

Ye Zichen admits that he stayed up rather late due to playing with Lil' White, and due to waking up too early, he did not catch enough sleep...

But what's going on with Sun Yige? She had that dominating queen-like personality yesterday, and now she changed back to the girl next door mode?

More importantly, her timid personality returned...

She speaks so shyly and quietly that others can barely hear what she says!

"Class Rep Sun, you changed again?" Ye Zichen asked worriedly.

Multiple personality disorder is not simple that can be fixed easily.

“Sorry, I was rather outrageous the past few days,” Sun Yige replied softly with an apologetic tone.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and grabbed Sun Yige’s arm.

She’s not sick!

Or could it be that multiple personality disorder cannot be detected?

As for Sun Yige... Her face was bright red like a cooked shrimp, even parts of her neck was completely red.

“Can-Can you let go of me?” Sun Yige asked subserviently.

Only then did Ye Zichen react, and quickly let go of her arm.

When he saw Sun Yige’s face and neck were red as a shrimp’s, he could only stand there speechlessly...

They truly are two polar extremes in personality!

She’s already so shy after I touched her wrist, but the Sun Yige last night actually forcefully kissed me...

“Class Rep Sun, actually, if you feel too suppressed, you can choose to travel and relax yourself. There is no need to force yourself too much. In terms of personality, we can just let nature take its course!”

“I know!” Sun Yige replied with a red face.

Know!

Then why did your personality split...

At that moment, Ye Zichen really didn't know what to do. He truly did not know how to cure a personality split. He could only send Sun Yige to see a therapist.

Of course, that would also depend on her situation in the near future.

There is naturally no need for him to worry if she maintains the same personality. However, if her personality keeps on switching,

then Ye Zichen felt like he had to take her to see a therapist to guide her a bit.

He had wanted to chat a bit more with Sun Yige, but the girl hurried away as if she had something important to do.

Thus, Ye Zichen could only return to the dorm to rest helplessly.

Dingdong.

The phone in his pocket instantly rang the moment he laid down.

“Yue Lao’s dating show was your idea, right?”

The person who sent the message was Taibai Jinxing.

Even if Taibai Jinxing thought about it using his toe, he would be able to guess that it was Ye Zichen's idea. Since there wasn't much of a reason to hide it, Ye Zichen did not deny it.

“Yeah, it was my idea. What, Yue Lao managed to set it up?

“I'm at the scene right now. Do you want to watch it together?” Taibai Jinxing asked.

“Together? We can watch it together?”

Ye Zichen was stunned. Is Taibai Jinxing teasing me? I'm in the mortal realm and he's in the celestial realm, how are we supposed to watch it together?

“Ha, just say whether you want to!”

“Yes!”

I would be insane if I didn't want to. I've never ever seen what the Heavenly Court looks like, and out of the deities, I've only ever seen Great Sage Sun.

Dingdong.

The moment he sent the message, Ye Zichen saw a video frame pop up from the chat...

Taibai Jinxing has invited you to a video call.

F\*ck.

Can they not be so high-tech?

Ye Zichen gripped his phone dumbly without any reaction. A deity actually sent me a video call request.

Answer.

Dingdong.

Heavenly Court Video Call Function activated.

Zoom.

A scene swirling with celestial mist appeared on the screen. Twenty-six women holding red candles stood in the middle of it all...

“Is this the scene of the dating show?” Ye Zichen muttered to himself.

Then, a laugh sounded out from the chat, “Isn’t this what you taught that old guy Yue Lao? What? Don’t you recognize it?”

...

The person who spoke just now was Taibai Jinxing, right?

Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner with a confused look on his face, “You’re Taibai Jinxing?”

“What do you think?” A playful laughter sounded out from the chat. “It’s this old man that’s video calling you, who else could it be?”

“Ahem... There is actually such a high-tech stuff which allows the celestial realm to communicate with the mortal realm!”

“There are plenty of things that you don’t know, young man!” Taibai Jinxing answered. “You recently helped me deal with the children management issue in the Heavenly Court. Treat this as my reward for you. However, it’ll be just this once!”

At that moment, another voice sounded out from the call, “Great Deity Taibai, who are you chatting with?”

“Sky Sovereign Nameless!”

The moment Taibai Jinxing said so, more than twenty something deities surrounded him, stuck their faces in front of the camera and started to speak.

“Sky Sovereign, I’m your fan so let us take a look at you!”

This was the fangirl type.

“Sky Sovereign Nameless, right? You actually stole Chang’e away while I was unprepared. Show yourself if you dare, I’ll definitely beat you to death when you get back to the Heavenly Court!”

This was the love rival type!

Ye Zichen definitely would not reveal his face, he had to remain mysterious. Otherwise, if a deity suddenly decided to actually descend upon the mortal realm...

It's fine if he or she is my fan, but if he's my rival in love...

Then... Hehe!

“Alright, go back to your seats,” Taibai Jinxing said sullenly, causing the surrounding deities to immediately scatter without complaints.

Taibai Jinxing’s position was like that of an imperial advisor’s. He was someone that was below a single person and above the rest.

Little deities like them did not dare to offend him.

After Taibai Jinxing sent the deities away, he smiled playfully, “How is it, were you worried?”

“You did that on purpose!”

“Work properly for me, then I’ll naturally keep your secret. Otherwise...” Taibai Jinxing smiled meaningfully.

Basically, he was saying that if I don’t work properly for him, he has more than ten thousand ways to expose me!

Taibai Jinxing would definitely be someone who excels in management if he is in the modern realm. He truly made amazing

use of the carrot and the stick!

At that very moment, a celestial sound rang out. The image of the phone also turned as Taibai Jinxing smiled.

“The show has begun!”

# Chapter 279 – If You Are The One Heavenly Court Version

---

Heavenly music played through his speakers.

On the screen of his phone, Ye Zichen saw celestial children holding flower baskets walking past the female deities.

The candles lit up.

Those represented the lights that Ye Zichen mentioned to Yue Lao. However, since there wasn't something as high-tech as electronic lights in the Heavenly Court, they could only be replaced by candles.

Yue Lao, with his white hair and his youthful face, wore a long red and white robe. His red scarf fluttered in the air, as he held a green mahogany staff in his right hand with a kind smile.

“It really has been some time since that old man wore this,” Taibai Jinxing’s voice rang out from the call once again.

Ye Zichen did not reply, and instead concentrated on the female deities.

Just what do the girls in the Heavenly Court eat? Their bodies and looks were both exceptional.

At the same time, Ye Zichen noticed that six crystal balls levitated around the entire stage...

“Taibai Jinxing, what are those crystal balls for?”

“They can display what’s happening here to the outside world!”

Taibai Jinxing replied.

Damn.

Doesn't that mean this If You are the One Heavenly Court version is being live streamed? I merely casually mentioned it to Yue Lao, I didn't expect him to really do that!

“Ahem, the time is right, please welcome our first male guest!”

Not long later, Third Prince Nezha appeared on his Wind Fire Wheels, holding his Heaven and Earth Ring, while the long red scarf surrounded him as he descended from above.

Yet, the originally mighty scene was completely ruined by his shota face.

Out of the twenty-six lit candles, twenty-four of them extinguished.

The remaining two either liked shotas, or just remained lit due to good will.

When little Nezha saw that, he took a glance at the two older sisters with their candles still lit, then left with a pout.

As he left, he begun to mutter, “Tsk, who wants to marry you guys. The one I like most is Big Sister Immortality Peach Fairy... And you actually blew out my candle, tsk... I’m not gonna play with you anymore.”

“Hehe, who bullied my little brother Nezha...”

Zoom.

Great Sage Equaling Heaven, who wore a golden armor, descended from the sky in all his might, shocking every single one of the female guests on the stage.

Even Yue Lao was shocked by this monkey, before he quickly spoke up, “This is our second male guest!”

Zoom.

Twenty candles instantly extinguished. These fairies were not interested in doing anything with the monkey at all. However, what was unexpected was that the candles of the six fairies still stayed lit for him.

Ye Zichen glanced over. The six fairies looked very similar...

Ye Zichen licked his lips, “Are they six of the Seven Fairies?”

“That’s right!”

I never expected that the monkey would have something going on with six of the Seven Fairies. This really is spicy!

Ye Zichen watched on excitedly to see what would happen next...

However.

Freeze.

Everyone froze, and even Taibai Jinxing seemed to have frozen on spot.

Not long later, Great Sage Sun ran over to the six fairies' side...

Ye Zichen became rather excited.

Am I going to see something that I shouldn't? Should I add a censoring machine on my eyes to auto-filter what I shouldn't see...

Ye Zichen's heart raced as Great Sage Sun's mouth neared the fairies...

Whoosh.

Great Sage Sun blew.

And extinguished the candles.

“Little sisters, I, Old Sun, doesn’t like your type...”

With that, Great Sage Sun snapped once again. As he looked at the extinguished candles...

“I, Old Sun, is eliminated. So bye bye!”

Ye Zichen was stunned. Just what the hell is going on with this

Great Sage Sun... It seems like the incident with him stealing the Peaches of Immortality wasn't out of nowhere, Great Sage is truly a lame guy at heart!

“The Jade Emperor has arrived!”

An unknown eunuch shouted.

All the deities looked up, and even Taibai Jinxing's camera turned upwards.

Ye Zichen stared at the screen intently, he truly wanted to see what the Jade Emperor looked like.

When he was young, the Jade Emperor depicted in the animated cartoons of the myths were always different. Now, he wanted to see what the Jade Emperor looked like for himself.

However...

Buzz.

An incoming call popped up on Ye Zichen's screen. As he looked at the caller ID, he really didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

He could only sigh and put the phone by his ear.

He chatted briefly before returning to the WeChat screen as quick as possible...

Yet, the video call had already ended.

“I...” Ye Zichen smiled wryly, then shook his head and returned his phone to his pocket.

I am truly at a loss for not seeing the Jade Emperor!

The paperwork for Xiao Yumei’s medical company had already been completed. Ye Zichen never expected for Elder Su to act so quickly. He had thought that the paperwork for the military needed to go through a lot of procedures and would at least take ten days or so.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows as he looked at the metallic stamp and the clear red military one, then handed it back to Xiao Yumei.

“With this military paperwork, our medicine is now exclusive, so we must make sure nothing goes wrong. Military-exclusive is for them to consume, and it has to heal wounds quickly. The product

is to be applied on the wound for what we sell to the outside world. I'll leave it to you to control how effective it is."

"I naturally will pay attention to all this," Xiao Yumei smiled kindly. "You just need to slowly wait for the money to rack in."

"Yes, yes, yes, from now on, I'll be counting on Yumei to support me. I have to hug your big legs tightly!" Ye Zichen smiled.

In Chinese slang, "hugging big legs" (抱大腿) is relying on someone to carry you forward/to success in a certain matter.

"Then you have to hold on tight," With that, Xiao Yumei even reached out her long leg covered in stockings.

What a fairy.

Ye Zichen thought to himself.

Xiao Yumei smiled slightly proudly as she saw Ye Zichen's slightly heated gaze. Then she reached out to rub his face, "We do indeed have the paperwork, but the mainland's cosmetics market is not that easy to get into!"

"So what? If our product's good, we'll naturally be able to establish ourselves firmly in the industry. Don't you have confidence in our products?" Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

"I do have the confidence, but I feel like we can't hold back against the huge number of cosmetics adverts," Xiao Yumei replied softly.

"Naturally, we definitely have to advertise it enough, and the celebrity we invite has to be very appealing."

"That's not going to be easy," Xiao Yumei twitched her mouth. "Plenty of A-List bigshots have already signed contracts with

cosmetic companies. Even if we throw money out, we might not be able to invite one. However, I do know someone who has never endorsed any products..."

"Since you know, then just directly invite the person?" Ye Zichen asked.

"Do you even need to tell me that?" Xiao Yumei rolled her eyes helplessly. "Although I don't know why she has ever endorsed any cosmetics, I will still go and try."

"Mm, giving it a try is good," Ye Zichen nodded then he said half-jokingly; "Who is that A-List bigshot you're talking about? I might know her!"

"Yang Yusi!" Xiao Yumei said playfully. "My little man, do you know her? If you really do, then I will admire you to no end.."

“...”

Ye Zichen's expression froze.

“Yang-Yang Yusi!”

# Chapter 280 – The Pitiful Erlang Shen, Yang Jian

---

Yang Yusi.

This person would always get randomly brought up by the people around me. Originally, I thought that there would never be any kind of connections between us anymore, I never expected Xiao Yumei to actually mention her.

“What’s with your expression?” Xiao Yumei called softly.

“Nothing, I just didn’t expect the person you to be talking about actually be her. She really is a true bigshot, could she actually get interested in our small medical company?” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

“Didn’t you just say that we have to have confidence in our product? I have confidence that our company will become one of the leading companies of the cosmetics industry in the future,”

confidence swirled in Xiao Yumei's eyes. This confidence was not out of nowhere, rather, it was because she had absolute faith in their products.

It really was going to be hard for a product that could quickly heal one's body, any facial scars and improve their skin not to get popular.

"Oh yeah," Ye Zichen smiled slightly forcefully. To be perfectly honest, he didn't want too much to do with Yang Yusi in any shape, fashion or form.

"Then I'll leave getting Yang Yusi to be our spokesperson to you."

"No problem," Xiao Yumei smiled softly, then immediately revealed a naughty smile. "Even if we can't find Yang Yusi, then we'll get your little girlfriends as spokespeople. They don't look any worse than celebrities, the only slight issue would be the lack of a reputation."

“... Don’t screw with me!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly. Xiao Yumei was truly someone that would find chances to tease and make fun of him whether she had the time or not.

“Zeze, am I supposed to screw other people if I don’t screw you?” As she spoke, Xiao Yumei subconsciously pushed out her full breasts.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes as he looked at her alluring look, “You are seducing me into committing a crime!”

An hour later, Ye Zichen leaned back on the sofa with his collar buttons undone, while Xiao Yumei leaned on his shoulder with a faint redness on her face like a tamed kitten.

Buzz.

The phone on the table rang. Xiao Yumei stood up and picked up the phone lazily.

Not long later, she hung up and smiled towards Ye Zichen softly, “I’m going out to deal with some stuff.”

“Mm!” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, lit a cigarette for himself and took out his phone...

It wasn’t a big deal when he didn’t look, but the moment he took a look, he was completely shocked.

His Red Packet Server actually had 999 unread messages.

He subconsciously looked at the number of members in the group. 7.

Then he took a look at the messages on the screen, only to find the Monkey King and Erlang Shen having a flame war.

Erlang Shen: Monkey, laozi is going to duel you.

Monkey King: Hehe, my son, you...?

Erlang Shen: Fight me if you dare.

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, is busy. I have no time to waste with you.

Erlang Shen: You're just scared!

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, is scared of you? Give me your position now. I, Old Sun, can beat you to a pulp with just a body double.

Canopy Marshal: Where's the fight? Send some coordinates, I, Old Pig, is going to come and take a look.

God of Fortune: Peace brings wealth!

Old Lord Taishang: If you get hurt, then buy pills from me. We're all acquaintances, so I'll give you twenty percent discount.

Yue Lao: Just what is this for.

Erlang Shen: @Yue Lao, you dare to come out...

Yue Lao: True Lord Erlang, please don't be angry. This has nothing to do with this old man.

What's going on? Why is it related to Yue Lao?

Ye Zichen did not have the patience to scroll up and read everything, so he just directly spoke up in the group.

“What's going on? @Everyone.”

Erlang Shen: Brother Nameless, I'm suffering!

Old Lord Taishang: It's just a small grudge between youngsters.

Yue Lao: <insert a roll of black face emojis>

Monkey King: @Only Idealism, I, Old Sun will send you a PM.

Erlang Shen: @Monkey King! You dare!?

Monkey King: What does I, Old Sun, not dare to do? I, Old Sun, isn't going to PM it anymore. I, Old Sun, will just send it here.

With that, a video appeared on the screen.

Ye Zichen clicked on the video with a look of confusion.

Ye Zichen was rather stunned when he saw the setting of the video. Isn't this where If You are the One Heavenly Court version was held?

Ye Zichen continued to watch...

Zoom.

Erlang Shen appeared in his silver war armor, while the third eye on his forehead also flashed with a faint white light. He held his three-pointed, double-edged divine lance in his hand while he rode on top of a white horse. At the same time, the Howling Celestial Dog also raised its proud head and swept its gaze over the fairies.

Even Ye Zichen couldn't help but be shocked when he saw this. I never thought that my bro was this cool...

Actually, it was all thanks to Ye Zichen. If he didn't teach Erlang Shen how to play Landlord, the latter was going to have to sell his weapons sooner or later. It was fortunate that Erlang Shen learned how to play Landlord, allowing Erlang Shen to become a true "tall rich and handsome" in the Heavenly Court!

If he was in the Modern World, he would definitely be the target of many girl's dreams...

However, those fairies...

"Why did he come?"

"I don't know, I didn't hear that he'll come to this show!"

“I heard daddy say that he’s number one in the flaming circles of the Heavenly Court...”

“No way, no way, we can’t have someone like him!”

Zoom...

All twenty six of the candles were blew out.

The Yang Jian in the video was instantly stunned and the Howling Celestial Dog did not manage to react at all, instead it merely stuck out its tongue dumbly.

“Hey, don’t make a mistake, blowing the candle out means not wanting to date me...”

“We know, so hurry up and leave!”

One of the girls said, while the others also agreed.

Only the six out of the Seven Fairies smiled apologetically, “We are relatives, sorry!”

The Erlang Shen in the video was truly shocked as he opened his eyes wide, while listening to the boos around him...

“You guys aren’t interested in me... laozi?” Erlang Shen shook his head, then spat on the floor. “Tsk, aren’t interested in laozi. Laozi... I am not interested in you girls, you... bunch of unmarried spinsters. I came over to stop your suffering in good will. Hmph,

you deserve dying alone.”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but facepalm with a sigh when he saw Erlang Shen's lame actions.

So shameful, this is even more shameful than getting all the candles extinguished.

But... Why did he sound so weird when he spoke?

Erlang Shen left bitterly in the video as it ended. When Ye Zichen returned to the chat group, he saw that Erlang Shen and Monkey King started to argue again.

“@Erlang Shen, I have watched the video. Rest in peace.”

Dingdong.

At that moment, Erlang Shen sent Ye Zichen a PM.

“Bro, you saw that video?”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen nodded faintly. “It is rather embarrassing to get all the candles extinguished, but your words afterwards were even more so...”

“That isn’t me!” Erlang Shen, who was in his manor, stomped his feet in anger. “That Erlang Shen was one that the monkey transformed into!”

“What?” Ye Zichen was shocked.

“That monkey gave me a bottle of monkey wine when before he went on stage, causing me to randomly fall asleep,” Erlang Shen sighed. “Then when I woke up, I noticed that the dating show was over.”

“...”

Ye Zichen was truly speechless. Great Sage is truly evil. But on the side note, the Seventy-Two Transformations is truly amazing. If I learn it, then can't I make others take the blame as well!

“But it was whatever that he caused my reputation to become worse. I, Yang Jian, is not afraid of that. What I'm f\*cking angry about is that...” Erlang Shen paused.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“What are you angry about?”

“I’m angry about them all blowing out my candles. No matter what, I, Yang Jian, is a handsome guy in the Heavenly Court. Even the monkey had six candles remaining, but I didn’t get any at all! Are they saying that I, Yang Jian, is even worse than a monkey?”

# Chapter 281 – Equipment!

---

Ye Zichen hesitated to give a reply as he saw Yang Jian's retort.

He had seen the Great Sage before. In terms of appearance, Erlang Shen, Yang Jian, was definitely above the Great Sage by a bit. However, in terms of position, that's a completely different story.

As the Victorious Fighting Buddha of the Buddhist Region, no one in the Heavenly Court dared to bully Great Sage Sun, and he has even beaten up the Jade Emperor.

On the other hand... to be frank, Erlang Shen was just the head of security in the Heavenly Court. There were all too many people that could manage him, making the difference between the two apparent.

"Bro, no need to mind so much about those common girls so much. Take it easy."

At that moment, all Ye Zichen could do was comfort his bro's damaged heart a little.

"That's it, I have to go and fight with the monkey. Bro, wait for my triumphant return.

Ye Zichen glanced at the messages in the group. The two seemed to have decided on the location of the duel, making it seem like they were truly going to fight.

To be honest, Ye Zichen did not have that much confidence in Yang Jian.

The Great Sage and Erlang Shen had fought before, but the monkey seemed to have always won.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a soft smile. Then, he suddenly realized that Erlang Shen, the final male guest, had failed to get a girl as well... Doesn't that mean that no one succeeded?

Thinking that, Ye Zichen couldn't help but sent Yue Lao a message.

“Yue Lao, how are the reactions to the show?”

At that moment, Yue Lao was definitely extremely happy. The Jade Emperor had just rewarded him, and plenty of families in the Heavenly Court sought him out continuously for a private chat, wishing to get their family's children on the show...

During those, he would receive many red packets. In merely four hours' time, Yue Lao had already received several hundred thousands in cultivation experience and gold ingots.

As his phone rang, Yue Lao, who was smoking leisurely, thought that it was just a deity that wanted a spot on the next dating show, but when he saw that it was actually Ye Zichen, he instantly put out his cigarette and stopped looking so carefree.

“Sky Sovereign, the reactions to the show is rather good. The Jade Emperor just rewarded me. Here is a sign of my goodwill, please accept it!”

Dingdong.

A red packet appeared on the screen.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and collected it.

You received Yue Lao's red packet.

Cultivation experience x100000.

Gold Ingots x50.

Thousand-year wild ginseng x5.

Worldly Daoist Robe x1.

It's an equipment drop!

Ye Zichen immediately raised his eyebrows. He had worked so hard for all sorts of missions before, it was his first time getting

any equipment out of it!

He forcefully suppressed his excitement and sent Yue Lao a message.

“This daoist robe...”

“This is just a bit of goodwill from this little deity. It isn’t much use for Sky Sovereign, but it might be of use for Sky Sovereign’s family or friends.”

In Yue Lao’s heart, Ye Zichen’s cultivation level was already through the roof, so he naturally didn’t need the daoist robe.

Worldly Daoist Robe: A new daoist robe produced in 2016 from the Heavenly Court. It is woven by the Weaver Girl using heavenly silk.

Effects: Increases the purity of the wearer's celestial spiritual energy.

Something made by the [Weaver Girl](#) is definitely excellent!

Weaver Girl (织女) as in the one from “The Cow-Herd and the Weaver Girl”.

Ye Zichen immediately took the daoist robe out and put it on without thinking.

There were something that was different from what Ye Zichen imagined. The daoist robe was pretty much completely transparent, while the material itself was rather soft.

Thus, Ye Zichen locked the office door, stripped, impatiently put on the robe, and then his clothes at the quickest speed possible.

Oh? It's rather comfortable.

Dingdong.

Immortal Heart of Pure Yang daily experience gain has changed.  
Current experience per day: 10.

Ye ZIchen smiled, then took out his phone and sent another message to Yue Lao.

“Not bad, it seems like you earned quite a bit!”

“It is all thanks to Sky Sovereign’s plans,” Yue Lao smiled softly, then replied. “Sky Sovereign, before the Jade Emperor left, he asked me whose idea it was. I didn’t dare to steal any credit, so I

told him that it was your idea.”

Actually, Yue Lao did have some reason for saying that. He wanted to kiss ass, but...

He ass-kissed in the wrong way!

Ye Zichen felt like he was going to explode when he saw the message. This geezer actually told the Jade Emperor that it was my idea?

I'm supposed to be a deity in the Heavenly Court, what if the Jade Emperor actually looks for me? It's not just me, even Taibai Jinxing just got screwed by this geezer!

Yue Lao naturally didn't know how Ye Zichen felt. At that moment, he was still gripping his phone tightly and staring

intently at the screen, as if he was saying...

Praise me.

“Oh!”

The reply Yue Lao waited for intently was actually just a simple “oh”.

Yue Lao was stunned. What's going on with Sky Sovereign, does he not care?

“The Jade Emperor is very satisfied with your idea, he might even reward you greatly.”

“Oh!”

Another “oh”.

Yue Lao squinted his eyes. He, who was old and crafty, immediately thought of a possible reason. Sky Sovereign can't be worried that I would want a piece of the cake, right...

Yue Lao thought about it for a moment, then replied.

“It is natural for Jade Emperor to award Sky Sovereign. This little deity is not jealous at all, I merely ask Sky Sovereign to give me some discounts when I want to stock up goods!”

“Hehe!”

Ye Zichen smiled as if there was nothing to live for, while he clenched his fist tightly as he looked at Yue Lao's kind-looking profile pic.

“This gramps...”

Ye Zichen closed his chat with Yue Lao in annoyance.

At the same time, Yue Lao, who sat within the Marriage Hall was completely confused as he looked at Ye Zichen's reply.

What does Sky Sovereign's “hehe” mean?

Could Sky Sovereign be so strong that he can ignore the Jade Emperor's rewards? Then this Sky Sovereign is truly amazing!

He sent some more messages to Ye Zichen, but did not get any reply.

“Sky Sovereign’s not in service coverage again. Never mind, I’ll just say it when Sky Sovereign comes back.”

Yue Lao was single and bored, and there was nothing for him to actually be anxious about, so since the Sky Sovereign wasn’t there, he decided to just wait.

Three days passed by in the blink of an eye.

Xiao Yumei wore simple clothes, but they were unable to hide her voluptuous figure.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen sat in the front seat and leisurely smoked, “Where are we going?”

“It’s too hard to find Yang Yusi directly. Since I coincidentally have a friend that says she knows someone at Yang Yusi’s side, I wanted to call out the person by Yang Yusi’s side through her to pass along a message.”

“So complicated!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “Actually, there is no need for so much trouble.”

“You mean to change to someone else? I don’t think that’s so good, and it won’t have as good of an effect. Since we’re finding a spokesperson, we have to go and look for the best,” Xiao Yumei replied softly.

Ye Zichen’s face stiffened. What he actually wanted to say was that if it was too much trouble, then he would go and find Yang Yusi. They were technically friends, so it shouldn’t be too hard to

get her to endorse their products.

As for Yang Zhen, Ye Zichen believed that he wouldn't interfere when it was purely business cooperation.

However, since Xiao Yumei said so, Ye Zichen could only shrug and remain silent.

When Xiao Yumei parked the car, Ye Zichen was completely stunned. The business clubhouse in front of them was the one that Young Master Han opened.

Ye Zichen even had a diamond card there, but that was something he gave to Mu Chuang to play with.

The moment they entered the lobby, Xiao Yumei directly took the elevator to the third floor with him. It was clear that both her

and the other person had already decided on the meeting spot beforehand.

As they pushed open the door to a room, a beautiful looking woman around Xiao Yumei's age stood up to greet them.

“Xiao Yumei.”

“Cai Xinyu,” Xiao Yumei smiled faintly.

Cai Xinyu’s face was also wreathed in smiles as she sat her gaze on Ye Zichen.

“Zeze, this young handsome guy... Yumei, he can’t be your... little lover, right!?”

# Chapter 282 – Pretending

---

A bell-like giggle sounded out from the room.

Xiao Yumei nodded immediately, “Yeah, this is my little lover.”

“My god, I was actually right,” Cai Xinyu smiled exaggeratedly, then pinched Ye Zichen’s cheek. “You actually managed to make our Yumei fall, you’re one charming kid! How about letting sis feel your charm tonight?”

“...”

Ye Zichen’s expression stiffened.

“Hehe,” Another round of giggles sounded out when Cai Xinyu saw Ye Zichen’s stiff expression.

“Alright, stop bullying my little man. I have proper business to talk about with you.”

“I know,” Cai Xinyu threw a flirty glance over at Ye Zichen, as if flirting with him was her hobby. “But I am merely getting my friend to go through some contacts for you, I can’t guarantee whether it’ll work or not.”

“Mm,” Xiao Yumei nodded.

At that moment, a man walked into the room.

The man wore name brand casual clothes, and had a Vacheron Constantin watch on hisr wrist.

“This is?” Xiao Yumei glanced over at Cai Xinyu.

“Gong Cheng!” The man handed his business card over to Xiao Yumei with a smile that would make others feel rather comfortable.

Ye Zichen smiled, then took the name card over, “Haha, a business card with gold power plating. It really is luxurious.”

Then, he put it away like a money lover. As he did, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but mutter, “I might be able to sell it for quite a lot later.”

“Ha, if this little friend lacks money, I think I can offer some assistance,” The man smiled faintly and took out a card that he placed on the table. “Three hundred thousand...”

“Enough!” Xiao Yumei’s expression turned a bit dark.

Cai Xinyu also felt that the atmosphere wasn’t right, causing her to quickly lighten the mood, “Yumei, this is the friend I wanted to introduce to you, Gong Cheng! He knows a person by Yang Yusi’s side.”

Then she turned towards Gong Cheng, “This is Yumei’s boyfriend, his name is...”

“Ye Zichen!” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

“You’re actually Director Xiao’s boyfriend! Then I’m so sorry, I thought that you were Director Xiao’s secretary or assistant or something,” Gong Cheng’s face was covered in an apologetic smile, but the underlying meaning of his words were clear.

Secretary, assistant!

It was clear that he was mocking Ye Zichen for not having the right to even be her friend.

Xiao Yumei's expression darkened even more, causing Ye Zichen to hold her hand and squeeze softly.

Then he smiled towards her and nodded.

“Since we all know each other, then let's sit!”

The moment everyone sat down, Gong Cheng poured two glasses of wine and placed them in front of Ye Zichen, “Little Brother Ye, there was much offense just now, sorry about it.”

Then, Gong Cheng immediately downed the glass of white.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen also nodded and downed his glass as well.

Before Ye Zichen placed down the wine glass properly, Gong Cheng started once again, “It seems like Little Brother Ye is still in University, right?”

“Yeah, second year,” Ye Zichen replied softly.

“It really is amazing for you to actually be with Boss Xiao during your second year. Back when I was your age, I was starting up a business with a few friends. Although it was rather difficult then, I do have a bit of accomplishment now. For example, this room is something only platinum members can get, and a platinum membership requires five million.”

“Wow,” Ye Zichen continued to reply softly.

Gong Cheng felt extremely annoyed. Ye Zichen’s replies made him feel like he was physically hitting cotton, so there was no sense of satisfaction at all.

“Little Brother Ye is doing fine too. Date Director Xiao properly, then when you graduate, be a manager in Director Xiao’s...”

“No need, I’m not going to work at her place.”

“Little Brother Ye wants to start your own business? It’s not easy for university students to do it now. However, Little Brother Ye should be able to succeed with Director Xiao.”

Gong Cheng mentioning Xiao Yumei all the time was just to emphasizing how he thought Ye Zichen was treating Xiao Yumei as his sugar momma.

But Ye Zichen...

“I’m not going to start my own business, it’s fine as long as she supports me,” Ye Zichen shrugged plainly.

Gong Cheng was speechless, he never expected Ye Zichen to be shameless to this degree.

He actually clearly stated that he was going to leech off Xiao Yumei so blatantly, it’s like he’s not afraid of being laughed at at all.

Also, Xiao Yumei’s expression seems to show that she has already

accepted that?

“F\*ck, it seems like he’s servicing her real good,” Gong Cheng thought darkly.

However, Cai Xinyu did not think that. She understood Xiao Yumei’s personality very well. The young and handsome guy in front of her was definitely not someone simply leeching off her...

All of a sudden, her gaze towards Ye Zichen become more meaningful.

Ye Zichen also noticed Cai Xinyu’s change. I didn’t think that this open sis is kind of capable as well.

“Little Brother Ye...” Gong Cheng wanted to speak up once again, but Ye Zichen had already gotten sick of bullshitting with him.

“Stop calling me Little Brother Ye, we’re not really acquainted. We came here for business, everyone’s pretty busy as well, so let’s stop wasting each other’s time, alright?”

“Little... Boss Ye truly speaks straight to the point, hahahaha!” Gong Cheng used his laughter to hide his embarrassment. He could totally just leave in a situation like that, but he didn’t...

He wanted to show off his contacts!

He wanted to make Xiao Yumei and Cai Xinyu see the difference between him and the sugar baby.

Gong Cheng took out his phone, then spoke with the person on the other side of the call.

Doing so, Gong Cheng placed himself in an extremely low status. That was something unavoidable, since he had gotten the phone number from a rather amazing friend of his.

From what he heard from the friend, the owner of the number was a true young master. Even that friend of his had to speak subserviently to this lord that he just spoke to.

And that's really something, considering how his friend was truly in an amazing spot in Gong Cheng's eyes.

Gong Cheng naturally had to submit to someone that even his friend was afraid of.

After the call, Gong Cheng placed his phone onto the tea table.

As he saw the strange looks in the room, he couldn't help but cough, "An amazing person is coming later. Don't blame me for not reminding you, but you have to be careful when you speak."

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth with a smile. From his perspective, Gong Cheng was nothing at all.

The amazing person he spoke of was definitely just mediocre in Ye Zichen's eyes. What's more, Ye Zichen did not rely on Gong Cheng's contact. If it doesn't work out, he's just directly go to find Zu Siliang or Yang Yusi.

About an hour later.

During that hour, Gong Cheng's shitty mouth endlessly showed off his achievements in his career, while putting down Ye Zichen with his underlying meaning.

Xiao Yumei was extremely angry, but Ye Zichen ignored him...

We aren't the same level of people from the start, so there was no need for me to get angry at someone like him.

Also, the amazing person that Gong Cheng invited is rather arrogant, he's actually taking more than an hour to come over.

At that moment, the door to the room was pushed open. Ye Zichen looked up. The moment he saw the person who had arrived...

He smiled.

# Chapter 283 – An Invisible Slap

---

The person that came was no other than Zu Siliang.

To be frank, Ye Zichen was rather surprised by Zu Siliang accepting the invitation to this sort of small gathering.

At the same time, Zu Siliang was also stunned the moment he entered the room. The reason he chose to attend the gathering was merely because he would have passed by the clubhouse as he was going to meet with a client and that a friend of his had mentioned the gathering to him.

He never expected to meet Ye Zichen there. Even the bodyguards behind Zu Siliang were shocked...

Why did we bump into this lord?

“Director Zu,” Gong Chang stood up from the chair with a subservient smile. “Let me introduce them to Director Zu. These are Director Xiao and Director Cai, and I’m called Gong Cheng.”

With that, he even humbly handed his name card over.

Zu Siliang was stunned.

He looked blankly at Ye Zichen, who was smiling faintly on the sofa, “This friend...”

“Him?” Gong Cheng said with a look of disdain. “No need to mind him, Director Zu, he’s Director Xiao’s boyfriend.”

The underlying meaning was basically saying that the brat was nothing except a sugar baby leeching off someone.

Zu Siliang couldn't help but laugh, "Young Master Ye, the number of female friends by your side is truly envious."

"If you want, tons of woman will crawl to your side with but a wave of your hands, right?" Ye Zichen smiled, then twitched his mouth. "You truly put on airs. I have waited here for you for a good hour."

Zu Siliang poured a glass of wine into a wine glass on the table and finished it one gulp.

"Treat that as me apologizing to Young Master Ye. If I knew that Young Master Ye was here, I definitely wouldn't have taken so long."

Everyone in the room was shocked, and the person with the worst expression was none other than Gong Cheng.

The guest that he had to carefully welcome actually knew the person he thought was merely a sugar baby. From the looks of things, the two were rather familiar with one another, and his important guest was even extremely careful around that ‘sugar baby’.

Just what is going on...

Meanwhile, although Xiao Yumei did not understand the situation, she could tell that Ye Zichen knew the important guest.

She subconsciously glanced over at Gong Cheng, and smiled proudly when she saw his shocked expression...

My man is the best. That guy just mocked my man just now, see? He just got face-smacked!

“Sit,” At that moment, Ye Zichen instantly became the person with the most authority in the room.

After Ye Zichen signaled Zu Siliang to sit down, the latter raised his eyebrows, “I wonder what business do you have with me? Young Master Ye is actually here too! If there is anything that requires my action, Young Master Ye just needs to go directly to me, I will definitely help out fully. What’s the point of asking in such a roundabout manner?”

Zu Siliang’s words gave a lot of face to Ye Zichen, while Gong Cheng, who sat on the side, felt the invisible palm smack him loudly.

From the very beginning, Ye Zichen had never once cared about his provocations, he had thought that Ye Zichen was just shameless...

However, he finally understood. Ye Zichen didn't think much of it at all.

His actions were comparable to an insect showing off his achievement in front of a lion, while the latter completely disregarded them.

The difference was too great, so there was no need for the lion to mind at all.

“Before that, let me introduce someone to you,” Ye Zichen smiled faintly, and glanced towards Xiao Yumei. “This is Director Xiao, Xiao Yumei of Maintaining Beauty International.”

“Xiao Yumei, the same Director Xiao who once managed a jewelry company?” Zu Siliang raised his eyebrows.

“Yes, I didn’t think that you would know.”

“Naturally, I know of her, she is someone who is among the top of all the female bosses in Bingcheng in both beauty and capability,” Zu Siliang smiled. “Could the person looking for me be Director Xiao? If that’s the case, then just get Young Master Ye to find me directly. What’s the point of going about in such a roundabout manner!”

“Some small issue came up in the middle, but don’t mind the details,” With that, Ye Zichen smiled towards Xiao Yumei. “Say it, Director Zu could be considered someone that’s rather close to Yang Yusi.”

“It’s actually related to Yang Yusi?” Zu Siliang was surprised, while the expression on his face turned rather unusual.

They didn’t even go through him to find Yang Yusi.

With Ye Zichen's relationship with Yang Yusi...

“Director Zu, it's like this...”

Thus, Xiao Yumei sincerely talked about the reason for their meeting.

Zu Siliang only felt as speechless as it was humanly possible. Why find me when you want to get Yang Yusi to endorse you guys, just directly go to the talent agency...

What's more, Ye Zichen's words are much more effective than mine.

“No problem, I will definitely relay Director Xiao's message to

her,” Zu Siliang smiled, then looked towards Ye Zichen. “Brother Ye, how about I tell Yusi that this company is yours...”

“Your choice, just say it if you want, but I feel like not saying it is better. I don’t want to put any burden on her.”

Zu Siliang let out a soft sigh, then nodded, “Alright, then I’ll decide for myself.”

Dong dong dong.

The door to the room was pushed open. The supervisor of the clubhouse pushed a trolley in with some deserts, a fruit platter and plenty of expensive alcohol, then smiled towards Ye Zichen, “Mr. Ye, why didn’t you tell us you were coming beforehand? This is the fruit platter and alcohol that our owner is giving you, we wish you a happy time.”

“Han Yu truly knows how to show surface formality,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Meanwhile, Xiao Yumei raised her eyebrows, “This is Han Yu’s clubhouse?”

“Yeah,” Ye Zichen shook his head, stood up from the sofa and stretched lazily before walking in front of that supervisor. “Go back and tell Han Yu that I thank him for his good will.”

Ye Zichen patted the supervisor’s shoulder, then walked out of the room.

After him, everyone also followed suit. At that very moment, Gong Cheng’s face was smacked by an invisible palm countless times, almost to the point of becoming swollen.

The accomplishments and contacts he had thought so highly of were merely a joke in the eyes of Ye Zichen, who he thought was just a lowly sugar baby.

After they walked out of the clubhouse, Zu Siliang left first.

The other four stood together. At that moment, Gong Cheng had already lost all of the cockiness that he had in the room. Since he was smacked by an invisible palm countless times, he finally learnt his lesson...

“Mr. Ye, there was much offense just now.”

“You’re not calling me Little Brother Ye anymore?” Ye Zichen smiled softly.

Gong Cheng answered frantically, “Mr. Ye, it was my mistake

just now. I ask for forgiveness.”

Ye Zichen answered with a shrug, then ignored him and looked at the time, “It’s getting late, let’s part ways here.”

With that, he got into his car. Xiao Yumei also chatted a bit before getting in. However, to nobody’s expectation, Cai Xinyu also got in.

“Yumei, your little man is pretty amazing!” Cai Xinyu’s eyes were filled with a meaningful look.

Xiao Yumei sighed softly, “Why did you not return to your car and instead climbed into mine?”

“I’m rather interested in your little man. No, I am attracted by your little man, so my body just got in here uncontrollably,” Cai

Xinyu smiled faintly. “How about lending me your little man for a day?”

# Chapter 284 – Getting Into Danger

---

Birds of a feather flock together was definitely a saying of absolute truth.

As Ye Zichen glanced at Cai Xinyu's wiggling waist and the flirty gaze she sent him, he was unable to deny that she was definitely a beauty.

"Hey, come back here. You got so focused on her, could it be that you really want to leave with her?" Xiao Yumei pouted in complaint.

Ye Zichen lifted his hand and pinched her cheek, "What are you thinking? I can barely satisfy you, if that sis joins in as well, I'm afraid that I would die before I get old."

"Hehe," Xiao Yumei giggled. "Don't just think about how slutty Xinyu appears. Actually, she's more conservative than anyone. Also, don't think that she's simply a flirtatious flower, even if she

is a flower, she's the kind with thorns..."

Ye Zichen shrugged. He didn't actually have much interest in her.

Whether she has thorns or not has nothing to do with me.

After Ye Zichen left Xiao Yumei's place and returned to his mansion, he sat on the sofa and re-organized the items in his Treasure Chest.

He found a greenish-blue secret scripture within. When he saw the secret scripture, he was completely shocked.

He had a limited number of secret scriptures. Unbreakable Body, Fiery Eyes of Truth, Taibai Jinxing's Special Medical Journal, Literari Star's Memory Techniques and God of Food's Culinary

Experience.

He chose to learn all of the secret scriptures after getting them, but he... did not remember this one at all!

Ye Zichen clicked on the secret scripture.

Great Dao of Heaven's Birth Technique: A divine-level technique created by the Yellow Emperor of the Five Emperors.

This technique can see fate and find the location of the deities, demons, ghosts, yaos and people in the Three Realms. As this technique goes against the laws of the world, it requires tremendous energy to use.

Required level: False Earth Immortal.

Expenditure: Large amounts of cultivation experience.

Ye Zichen read the introduce of the secret scripture in shock.  
Doesn't this mean that I can see whoever I want after learning it?

That includes the deities in the Heavenly Court!

This technique is way too amazing, but why is this secret scripture in my Treasure Chest?

Thus, Ye Zichen decided to go through the past system notifications...

As he expected, there was a notification about the secret scripture. The time of the notification was after his video call with

Taibai Jinxing.

At that moment, Lil' White ran over.

"Boss, there's a situation!"

Ye Zichen looked up in confusion and saw Lil' White's face frown in a human fashion with a hint of solemnity.

"What's happened?"

It was Ye Zichen's first time seeing Lil' White like that. What's more, since Lil' White was a dog from the Heavenly Court, Ye Zichen's expression also turned serious, "Did you feel something?"

“Your mom!” Lil’ White’s eyebrows knitted.

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked Lil’ White immediately and raised his eyebrows, “You got so brave that you dare to curse me now?”

“No, I’m saying that your mom is in trouble!” Lil’ White’s face was completely serious.

“Your mom’s in trouble, my mom went on a tour with Jinglei-jie and Tiantian... You mean that my mom is in trouble?” Ye Zichen jumped up from the chair.

Lil’ White nodded, “I left an imprint on your mom. The thing I feel from the imprint is danger.”

“Sorry.....”

Ye Zichen immediately dialed Mother Ye's number.

“Sorry, the number you dialed is not in service at this time.  
Please try again later. Sorry...”

Ye Zichen immediately dialed Mu Jinglei's number, but the answer was the same.

“Can you locate them? Ye Zichen frowned.

There might be a very normal reason for the call not to get

through, they might be having fun in a place with no signal. But Lil' White wouldn't just randomly...

"Yes," Lil White nodded with certainty.

With that, Ye Zichen drove out the car as quick as he could and threw Lil' White in the front seat, "Tell me where!"

...

"Auntie Ye, don't you feel like there's something weird about our tour guide?" Mu Jinglei, who followed behind the tour guide asked quietly.

They were with a tour, but what was strange was that there was no group activity at all when their tour guide sought out the three of them.

The tour guide had said that he would take them to look at a rather famous cave nearby, but they had been in the car for nearly an hour, yet no cave was in sight.

“Grandma, Tiantian wants water,” Tiantian looked up and opened her mouth.

Ye Rong handed a bottle over to her with a smile, then asked the tour guide, “Tour Guide Li, how long until we’re there?”

“Soon, we’ll be there in a moment,” The tour guide was a very sweet-looking girl. Her smile made it hard for people to be even a tiny bit vigilant.

“Tour Guide Li, this is the third time you have said soon. We’ve been in the car for more than an hour, the speed you’re driving isn’t slow at all, we’re clearly already out of the scenic area!” Mu

Jinglei said with a frown.

“Don’t be anxious, we’ll be there very soon,” The tour guide smiled sweetly, then turned around and ignored them.

Mu Jinglei was clearly very dissatisfied with her answer, but Ye Rong grabbed Mu Jinglei’s hand and shook her head.

Some ten-odd minutes later, the car gradually came to a halt.

Both Mu Jinglei and Ye Rong, looked outside. It was very rural, and there weren’t any caves in the surroundings either.

“Tour Guide Li, what did you drive us here for?”

At that moment, even Ye Rong looked a bit angry. They had gone out to take their minds off things, but after sitting in the car for more than an hour, they found out that their tour guide actually took them to a place like that.

What's more, Tour Guide Li had said that she would take them to see a mysterious cave, but it was clear that...

Their tour guide had lied to them.

“Don’t be angry, just follow me and you’ll see,” Tour Guide Li smiled kindly, while her sweet smile calmed people down...

But Mu Jinglei did not care one bit.

“Tour Guide Li, please take us back to the scenic area now. If

that's the case, then we'll treat it as if nothing happened. If you don't, then we'll take a cab back and file a complaint against you to your agency..."

Slap.

Mu Jinglei immediately felt a slap on her face before she even finished.

The sweet-looking girl looked at her menacingly and cursed, "I didn't like the look of you from the start. You had the most to say during the journey. I told you to come with me, so just follow... Why the heck do you have so many questions!?"

"What are you doing? Ye Rong frowned, but she did not directly complain about the tour guide's attitude.

It would clearly be laughable for her to mention the tour guide's service attitude when she had already used violence. What's more, she even drove them to a place like this...

"What?" The sweet-looking girl clapped. Not long later, two long-faced men with snake scales on their arms walked out.

The two men instantly had a lustful look in their eyes as they gazed towards Mu Jinglei and Mother Ye.

Snakes were lecherous creatures, so they were naturally unable to control their lust when they saw Mu Jinglei and Mother Ye.

At the same time, the sweet-looking girl smiled, "Capture them!"

# Chapter 285 – The Grim Reaper’s Smile

---

In the Immortal Region.

Crack.

The jade tablet in Fuxi’s hands suddenly shattered, causing him to instantly close his eyes and formed signs with his hands.

Not long later, both the Flame Emperor and Suiren appeared in his room as he opened her eyes.

“You guys felt it as well.”

“Yeah,” Flame Emperor opened his hands, showing a cracked jade pendant in his hand. “I never would have thought that Brother Yellow Emperor’s great tribulation would come so

quickly..."

"Should we go and interfere?" Suiren frowned.

"No need, since Brother Yellow Emperor's tribulation is here, there will naturally be someone to block it off. I had given someone that will block a tribulation a bone bracelet in the Modern Realm, but I don't know which tribulation she will block! If she is the one blocking this one, then Brother Yellow Emperor will naturally not be in any danger." Fuxi smiled faintly.

However, Suiren frowned, "But if she isn't..."

"Then all we can do is pray for Brother Yellow Emperor's good fortune!" Fuxi replied as he looked up at the empty sky.

Meanwhile, a black Panamera sped through the dark and silent

night like a mirage on the highway.

The eyes of Ye Zichen, who gripped the wheel with both his hand, were bright red, while his forehead was covered in droplets of sweat.

“How far left?”

“The feeling is getting stronger, so we should be there soon,” Lil’ White sat in the front seat and frowned slightly.

“They truly have guts. There better not be anything that has happened to my mother, Tiantian and Jinglei-jie, otherwise, I’m going to be hard on them even if the heavenly king comes!” Ye Zichen’s eyes were completely dark. His personality was definitely one which was more at ease and lacked ambition.

However, he did have his own bottom line, and that's leaving his family out of everything.

Never awaken a slumbering lion was definitely a phrase that could describe Ye Zichen at that very moment. One better not go pass his bottom line, since he... is the Yellow Emperor!

“Captain, why are we sending those beauties to leader without getting us brothers a taste? Also, there is actually a young girl... What a pity...” The snake scale man’s eyes were filled with sadness.

“Don’t at any ideas about them. At least you aren’t allowed to before luring the mission target over here...”

“Understood!” The snake scale man smiled, then wrapped his arm around the sweet-looking girl’s waist. “Then, before that, it’s fine for captain to satisfy us, right?”

“Hehe... That’ll be up to you guys,” The sweet-looking girl smiled.

Not long later, the surrounding snakemen all rushed up to her.

After an entire three hours passed, the air became filled with a revolting stench of love making.

The sweet-looking girl laid limply on the ground with a look of enjoyment on her face.

When she saw that another snakemen came up to “have fun”, she immediately stopped him, “Stop messing around, the mission is more important.”

With that, she took out her phone and dialed Ye Zichen’s

number, but at that very moment...

“Don’t bother, I’m here. Wow, public sex!”

An ice-cold voice that emitted a faint but suppressing aura rang out. The sweet-looking girl looked over and saw Ye Zichen’s eyes flash with a gold light while he held two dead snakemen in his hands...

He chucked the two snakemen onto the ground with a faint smile, causing a wave of dust to splash up.

The sweet-looking girl’s face was covered in shock. She gripped her phone in surprise, while Ye Zichen laughed, “Snakemen, hehe... It was you guys that tried to assassinate me last time, right? Half-beastmen, do you guys want to see me that much?”

As Ye Zichen walked forward step by step, the surrounding male snakemen all charged towards Ye Zichen.

“Die!”

Ye Zichen yelled angrily, while his hands moved at a speed that could not be seen with one's eyes. Ye Zichen did not put up any defense at all, he didn't need any with Unbreakable Body active, all he needed to do was...

Attack.

Attack relentlessly.

Attack using the most savage way possible.

Blood drenched his shirt as corpses covered the ground.

Blood flowed down Ye Zichen's face and dripped onto the ground as he looked up with a smile...

Under the faint glow of the moonlight, his blood-covered hands and the raised lips... It was as if the Grim Reaper... was smiling!

Another step, followed by a second one!

The sweet-looking girl dropped her phone onto the ground. At that moment, she was completely naked, but she was not embarrassed at all. She didn't know what embarrassment was...

All she knew was that death loomed at her. The Grim Reaper-like man, who was akin to the Devil himself, walked over.

And smiled.

Under the moonlight, the man's smile was like that of the Grim Reaper's.

He raised his hand and grabbed the sweet-looking girl's cheek...

"Demon, you demon!"

The girl was already scared senseless. After she witnessed the ten-odd men who were just having fun with her several moments ago die in such a cruel manner, her mind had already stopped functioning, and she had lost all desire of resistance.

“Demon? Are you talking about me?” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.  
“Thank you for your compliment, I really like this name. Yes, I am a demon...”

Ye Zichen traced his finger along the girl’s cheek and smiled like the Grim Reaper once again.

“Don’t kill me,” The girl’s pupils contracted under the threat of death.

“What a cute face!” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

The girl immediately spread her legs, “As long as you let me go, you can do anything you want to me.”

The words of the naked snake girl would be very alluring to most other men, but Ye Zichen merely smiled faintly, “I’m not

interested in trash like you. Tell me, where is my mother?"

"Inside the cave with leader. If you need, I can take you over. I beg you, please don't kill me. I was merely following orders!" The girl trembled in fear. That pitiful appearance combined with her looks definitely invoked pity.

However, she was merely a snake in human skin thanks to Ye Zichen's Fiery Eyes of Truth.

"Lead the way. No need, go be with your lovers!"

Crack.

Ye Zichen broke the snake girl's neck. Then, at that moment, a group of snakemen appeared, surrounding Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen chucked the dead snake girl onto the floor and smiled playfully, “Are snakes social animals?”

Ye Zichen swept over the snakemen with a cold gaze. The snakemen were mostly of False Spiritual Body level, and only a mere few reached Spiritual Body level.

“It seems like I have been underestimated. They actually sent these small fries to deal with me.”

“Boss Ye!”

At that moment, the Hou brothers arrived. Previously, Ye Zichen had left in too much of a hurry, so he didn’t have time to bring them along. Thus, they merely followed behind the car, causing them to be slightly slower.

“You guys came too,” Ye Zichen smiled faintly, then looked at the orange-red moon. “This moon, is not red enough!”

“Then use the blood of these trash to dye it red,” The Hou Brothers said together.

“That’s right,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and smeared his blood-stained hands across his cheek. “Just use their blood to dye this moon red!”

With that, Ye Zichen revealed a deathly smile and shot out like a sword out of its sheath...

Directly at the snakemen!

# **Chapter 286 – You Dare To Make A Move Against My People?**

---

Blood dyed the night red.

Ye Zichen had already lost count of how many snakemen he killed. There was only one thought remaining in his mind.

Kill them all.

Assassinating him was fine, causing trouble for him was fine, but reaching their sinful hands towards his family...

That was something he could not tolerate.

Although he would be killing many by doing that, he did not

care.

He did not know what dangers would await him in the future, but he must use this opportunity to tell everyone that...

Target him with their plots and tricks, that's fine, but if you cross the line...

Sorry, you're already on the death list.

As countless snakemen fell onto the ground, a heavy scent of gore filled the air.

Meanwhile, the surrounding snakemen retreated. They were completely terrified by Ye Zichen's slaughter. The man in front of them wasn't a man at all, he was a true grim reaper who used his bare hands to harvest the originally lowly lives of the snakemen.

When another snakeman got ripped apart by Ye Zichen, there was already no snakemen that dared to even step forward in a two meter radius around him.

“Hehe...”

Ye Zichen laughed with a cold gaze just like a Grim Reaper mocking them. The surrounding snakemen instantly stiffened as their eyes twitched, while their retreating steps displayed their anxiety.

The Hou brothers also returned to his side. When they saw the small hill of corpses around him and his cold gaze...

A shiver couldn't help but run through their spines.

After being with Ye Zichen for so long, they had always assumed Ye Zichen was an extremely carefree person. However, at that very moment, they finally knew that savagery also flowed in Ye Zichen's blood.

A woman, with a snake-like waist, wearing a thin veil poured a glass of wine for a man on a stone chair in the cave, "Leader, are we not going out yet? Our subordinates have suffered terrible losses."

The man's skin was very dark, while a patch of white shone on his right cheek. He had an eagle-like nose and triangular eyes, while his greenish hair was messy like that of a bird's nest...

His limbs were clearly muscular and powerful underneath a black skin-tight vest and a blue jacket.

Three people laid on the straw mattress behind the man. They

were Mother Ye and co.

“My purpose is to capture the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation and suck the essence from his body... As long as I can reach my goal, then their deaths do not matter!”

Snakes were cold-blooded creatures, so he didn’t care about the death of his subordinates at all.

As long as one was powerful enough, he would always be able to gather subordinates.

“Wait, wait till the children waste most of the spiritual energy from the Yellow Emperor and his lackeys. Only then will we go out to feel the joy of the fishermen!” The man smiled faintly and downed all the wine in his glass in one gulp.

“My lord, we won’t stop you anymore. Leader is in the cave right in front. Your family is also in said cave. Please have mercy on us,” A male spiritual body level snakeman stepped forward. Although he was also of the spiritual body level, he had no chance against Ye Zichen at all.

When he saw that his side was being mown down, while the other side was getting more and more fierce...

“If you need, we can help you defeat leader in the cave as well. We only beg for you to let us go alive after that.”

“Please let us go alive.”

The remaining snakemen all spoke up together.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes with a smile and walked towards the

spiritual body leveled snakeman.

“My lord!” The snakeman lowered his head, he didn’t have the courage to meet Ye Zichen’s gaze at all.

“You want to rally under my banner and be used by me?” Ye Zichen said in a condescending tone.

“Yes, yes, yes, we are willing to submit to my lord,” The snakeman immediately nodded.

Crack.

Just as the snakeman continuously forced a smile, Ye Zichen directly snapped his neck.

At the same time, Ye Zichen glanced at the Hou brothers.

“Kill them all, leave none alive!”

Howls, curses and begs filled the air!

When the remaining ten-odd snakemen had also passed onto the afterlife, the Hou brothers returned to Ye Zichen’s side.

“Boss Ye, they’ve all been dealt with.”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen nodded expressionlessly.

At that moment, Third Hou spoke up, “Boss Ye, the snakemen just now already had the intention of submitting to us. Why didn’t you chose to accept them for your own use? Ignoring those false spiritual body-level ones, the spiritual body level snakemen would have been definitely a great aid for us.”

“Hehe,” Ye Zichen smiled. “Snakes are cold-blooded animals. They literally just betrayed their leader, so couldn’t they just as easily betray me?”

Seeing that the Hou brothers understood, Ye Zichen snickered, “C’mon, it’s time for the main dish.”

Within the snake cave.

The snakeman leader at the entrance of the cave and the snake girl beside him had waited for a long time.

Ye Zichen, whose body was drenched head to toe in blood, stopped at a place ten meters from the entrance.

Both the man and the woman caused him to feel threatened.

“Yellow Emperor.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he heard what the snakeman leader called him.

I didn't think that this guy would actually know my identity!

“How are you so sure that I'm the Yellow Emperor? Do you guys have some way of gathering information?”

“Actually, I wasn’t completely sure whether or not you are the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation before this,” the snakeman smiled.

“Then aren’t you afraid of killing the wrong person?” Ye Zichen sneered.

“So what? What can a mere mortal do to me?” The snakeman leader replied with incomparable confidence.

Indeed, he was definitely a tough enemy for normal people in the Modern Realm.

“I’ll give you a chance. Let my family go, then I won’t kill you,” Ye Zichen said expressionlessly.

However, the snakeman laughed, “Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, you are so cute... Are you threatening me?”

“It seems like you aren’t going to release them. Then I can only kill you!”

With that, Ye Zichen immediately begun his assault with the Hou brothers following closely behind him. However, the snakeman leader smiled, while the snake girl beside him also charged out leisurely.

Contrary to Ye Zichen’s expectations, the snake girl was able to mess with both the Hou brothers by herself, while Ye Zichen also felt troubled after starting to fight the snakeman leader.

“False Earth Immortal!”

“Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, I’m so sorry, but I’ll be taking your reincarnated blood essence.”

With that, the snakeman directly reached his hand out towards Ye Zichen’s chest without any extra movements. It was a simple and casual attack, yet Ye Zichen could not block it at all.

Everything was futile against absolute power.

“Dad, that brat is going to get killed by the snakeman,” Wei Teng monitored Ye Zichen’s situation carefully behind a worn down wall nearby.

“Go!” Wei Chen frowned. However, he immediately squatted back down after standing up.

“What is it?” Wei Teng didn’t understand.

“We don’t need to care anymore,” Wei Chen, who had a look of nervousness on his face earlier, relaxed, then leisurely lit a cigarette for himself.

“Why?” Wei Teng still did not understand.

“Ye Zichen won’t die with her here!”

As Wei Chen finished his words, a cold voice reverberated where the snakeman and Ye Zichen were fighting.

“You even dare to make a move on my people?”

# Chapter 287 – Ice Empress Lu Lu!

---

The cold voice resonated from all around them, causing Wei Teng, who was hiding behind the wall, to shudder.

Wei Teng grabbed a cigarette for himself from his father and lit it, “Dad, who is the person that just arrived?”

Wei Chen glanced towards the cave, then shrugged, “A great Yao that is quite famous in the Three Realms!”

“Yao? You said that it is a Yao that has come?” Wei Teng raised his eyebrows. “Then why is the Yao helping that brat? Also, why do you always have to protect him?”

“Why do you bullshit around so much. Just stay here and come with me to clean up the battlefield once everything settles,” Wei Chen twitched his mouth and kicked Wei Teng on his ass.

“Fine...”

Meanwhile, the ice-cold voice seemed to have even lowered the temperature of the cave by a few degrees...

After the ice-cold voice resounded, a thin layer of ice gradually appeared on the snakeman leader, who had been on the verge of success.

Zing.

The snakeman leader immediately discarded that arm without thinking and rushed backwards.

“Who is it!?”

“You’re very decisive!” A playful chuckle tinkled. Not long later, Ye Zichen saw Lu Lu, who was in green clothes, put on a chilling smile, while she radiated an unbearable frigidness to her surroundings... “If you were just slightly slower, you might be like that snake girl now.”

Lu Lu looked towards the snake girl. The snake girl, who was messing with the Hou brothers all by herself just moments ago, had already turned into an ice sculpture.

Snap.

Lu Lu snapped her fingers.

The ice sculpture instantly shattered into countless pieces, while the snakegirl encased ceased to be.

The moment it happened, the Hou brothers involuntarily shuddered. They never expected that the girl who beat them up the other day was actually so fierce. At the same time, they also felt fortunate that they weren't frozen...

Otherwise... The result was terrifying even when they merely thought about it.

Ye Zichen also shivered and looked at Lu Lu in shock.

My god!

Too fierce.

"You-You are the Ice Empress!" The snakeman leader at the

entrance of the cave started to shiver uncontrollably.

Lu Lu smiled softly, then curled her lips, “Oh? You actually know of me! You come from the Three Realms? But since you know me, you still dared to make a move of my person? Don’t you know my history with him?”

Ba-dump.

The snakeman leader kneeled down.

Ice Empress was an existence that could shake the Three Realms with a stomp of her feet. Yet, while the snakeman leader was in the Three Realms, he was merely a lackey of the half-beastmen’s snakemen tribe.

“Ice Empress, please have mercy on this puny one.”

However, the only response to him was the ice that begun to appear on his body, which very soon covered the snakeman leader and turned him into another ice sculpture.

“Hilarious. You actually want to stay alive even after making a move on my person!”

Snap.

As Lu Lu snapped her fingers, the newest ice sculpture shattered.

The moonlight flickered and shimmered as it was reflected by the pieces of ice and fell to the ground, while Ye Zichen also ran into the cave the moment the ice sculpture shattered.

Mother Ye and co. laid peacefully on the straw mattress within the depths of the cave.

At the same time, Lu Lu also walked in, “Don’t worry, they merely fainted due to the snake poison. They’ll wake up after a while.”

Ye Zichen nodded happily after hearing that.

Lu Lu also acted like she sought out praise, “Come on and tell me, how do you want to thank me?”

“You... couldn’t have come over following my scent again, right?” Ye Zichen scratched his head.

“Mhmm,” Lu Lu smiled. “I did follow your scent over. It was

fortunate that I did, otherwise, you...”

Ye Zichen nodded silently.

Indeed, if Lu Lu had not appeared in time, I really might have just passed onto afterlife.

However, that only made him hate his own weakness even more.

If I wasn't this weak, my family would not have gotten into danger. I need power, and not just physical power for myself, I also need a bunch of subordinates who are loyal to me.

At that moment, Lu Lu smiled, “The snakemen are merely the weakest existences among the half-beastmen. You will have more and more tribulations in the future. You should start to establish your own power. In your previous reincarnations, you always had

your own force!"

We seem to have thought about the same thing.

Ye Zichen also realized that he needed to gather people and build his own force.

But from where?

I only have four monkeys with me and a Fatty Jin with his spiritual power sealed. That's pretty much it.

"Who is it!"

At that moment, Lu Lu raised her eyebrows and chucked an icicle towards the worn-down wall.

The rocks shattered, revealing Wei Chen, Wei Teng and a group of men, who walked over with coy smiles.

“Don’t... Comrades, comrades!” Wei Chen put his hands up with a coy smile.

Lu Lu glanced over at Ye Zichen, and only put her hands down when she saw him nod.

Lu Lu glanced at Wei Chen and frowned.

False Earth Immortal.

From what she could see, the person in front of her should not be limited to just that!

Yet, he was indeed of the False Earth Immortal level judging from his celestial spiritual energy.

“Young Mater Ye, chivalrous woman...” Wei Chen nodded with a forced smile.

Ye Zichen also raised his eyebrows, “You came to protect me?”

“Yeah,” Wei Chen clapped his hands. “Big Sis Keke ordered us to protect your safety 24 hours a day.”

“Keke as in Xia Keke?” Lu Lu asked.

“Yes, he’s Wei Chen, as he has said, he’s Keke’s subordinate,” Ye Zichen explained.

Wei Chen nodded, then shouted towards his subordinates, “Go cleanup the battlefield.”

The subordinates immediately ran out, but before they made any actual distance, Lu Lu signaled Ye Zichen, “No need!”

Shroom.

The corpses on the ground all became ice sculptures, then immediately shattered, leaving nothing behind.

If it wasn’t for the air still containing faint smells of gore, and the

blood on the ground, it would be very hard to imagine that an intense battle had occurred there.

As Ye Zichen thought about Lu Lu's cold gaze from earlier, his sights landed on Wei Chen's subordinates, causing him to look towards Wei Chen.

Wei Chen, who was smiling coyly, felt rather disturbed by Ye Zichen's gaze, so he couldn't help but ask in a testing manner, "Young Master Ye, what is it?"

"How many subordinates do you have?" Ye Zichen asked straightforwardly.

"Several tens of people!" Wei Chen answered honestly.

Ye Zichen nodded in response.

At that moment, Ye Rong and co., who were within the cave, woke up dazedly.

“Zichen?” A weak call sounded out from behind him, causing Ye Zichen, who was in deep thought, to be surprised, before he ran into the cave.

“Mom, Tiantian, Jinglei-jie!”

“Why are you here?” Mother Ye’s face was filled with shock. Then she looked over at the surrounding people. “You even brought so many people. There’s blood on you...”

“Don’t mind everything so much,” Ye Zichen smiled towards his mother and helped up her. “Let’s go home!”

“Sure, let’s go home,” Ye Rong also smiled tiredly.

As Ye Zichen passed by Wei Chen, he looked at Wei Chen meaningfully, “Find a time to meet tomorrow!”

# Chapter 288 – Establishing One’s Own Power

---

As Ye Zichen drove Mother Ye and co. back home, both Mother Ye and Mu Jinglei smelled the gory smell in the air, and saw the bloodstains on the floorboards alongside Lil’ White in the car, and the blood on Ye Zichen...

However, both of them chose not to ask Ye Zichen what had happened, nor did they ask why Lil’ White was present.

When they finally got back to the mansion, Mu Jinglei took Tiantian for a bath with a look of exhaustion, while Mother Ye sat on the sofa and occasionally looked at Ye Zichen as if she wanted to say something.

“Mom, is there something you want to ask me?” Ye Zichen, who had noticed all that, raised his eyebrows.

Ye Rong hesitated for a moment, then smiled, “Nothing, it’s

getting late, get some rest!”

With that, Ye Rong turned around and returned to her bedroom.

As Ye Zichen gazed at his mother’s back, he felt like she truly did want to say something, but yet she couldn’t...

Ye Zichen shook his head, then went to the bathroom for a bath to wash off the blood after Mu Jinglei came out of the bathroom with Tiantian, before he decided to go back to his room to sleep.

The next day...

“Zichen-gege!”

Xia Keke wore an orange T-shirt with skinny jeans as she revealed the beauty of youth.

Waiting for such a school beauty definitely a luxurious thing, but some male students immediately twitched their mouth when they heard Xia Keke's call...

“Tsk, him again!”

As these students had already experienced everything from feeling envious to getting used to it all after witnessing the power of the School Beauty Harvester, they would only retort in their hearts to make themselves feel better.

“Why is she here?” The moment Xia Keke arrived at the school gates, she immediately pointed unhappily with a frown at Lu Lu, who had her arms wrapped around Ye Zichen’s.

“Hehe, don’t be so stingy!” Lu Lu stuck her tongue out.

Ye Zichen’s heart shook when he saw this. It was very hard for him to imagine the cute girl in front of him was actually the Ice Empress, who chilled the entirety of the Three Realms...

“What stingy? Why are you sticking to Ye Zichen all the time?” Xia Keke frowned, then immediately hugged Ye Zichen’s other arm, then made a face towards Lu Lu.

Since Ye Zichen felt rather helpless that the two girls were fighting over him, he pulled his arms away and shrugged, “Stop messing around, we have proper business to discuss.”

“She’s coming as well?” Xia Keke pointed at Lu Lu.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Don’t mind it so much. You’ve contacted Wei Chen already, right?”

“Mhmm.”

“Then let’s talk about it when we get there!”

At a teahouse.

Ye Zichen, Xia Keke and Lu Lu sat on the second floor of the teahouse. The two girls sat on either side of Ye Zichen and hugged both of his arms without backing down.

Wei Chen, who sat opposite them, smiled awkwardly, “Uhm... What did you call me here for?”

“Since Keke is here as well, I’ll say it directly,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. “I want you to work for me from now on!”

“...” Wei Chen remained silent.

Xia Keke blinked, then tilted her head at Ye Zichen, “Why do you need him to work for you?”

“I want to establish my own force,” Ye Zichen said candidly.

After the events of the previous day, he had begun to notice the importance of his own power even more. Since the future path was filled with thorns, he might as well start paving the way for himself right now...

It was just like doing your prep work before fighting a boss in a

game.

“Establishing your own force?” Xia Keke was shocked. “Did you run into some sort of trouble?”

“Just small ones,” Ye Zichen smiled. “Although these small troubles haven’t disturbed me too much, they did make me realize how puny I am. In order to strengthen myself and protect the people around me, I need a force that I can use however I see fit.”

“If it’s like that, then I support you!” Xia Keke nodded with a giggle, then pointed at Wei Chen. “From now on, you’re Zichenge’s subordinate! But you still have to call me Big Sis whenever you see me, do you understand?”

“Understood, Big Sis Keke,” Wei Chen replied speechlessly.

He was truly unable to retort. Just when did I fall to the point of having to be someone else's subordinate?

And this time, my boss has even changed!

No matter what, I'm still...

But then again, I'm under the Yellow Emperor this time, so it's not as bad as before.

“Boss Ye, please take care of me.”

“We'll take care of each other,” Ye Zichen smiled. “Oh yeah, what sort of level are the several tens of people you have at?”

“They aren’t particularly strong. Just False Spiritual Body level and Spiritual Body level. There’s two at the False Earth Immortal level including me.”

The existence of two at the False Earth Immortal level did make Ye Zichen rather happy.

Ye Zichen nodded in satisfaction, “You’re my people from now on, so you naturally can’t be as carefree as before. I need you to establish an information gathering group to gather information from all realms. Also, hire more people. Don’t mind their level at the beginning, only start limiting it later. There’s also no need to worry about funding, I’ll take care of that.”

“No problem, as long as Boss Ye gives us enough money, I can definitely help you organize everything properly,” Wei Chen smiled. “But we do need a meeting point if we want to re-organize everything like Boss Ye said and my casino isn’t suitable...”

Since Wei Chen made it that obvious, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then glanced at the teahouse around him, “What do you think about this teahouse?”

...

Two hours later, Ye Zichen managed to buy the teahouse from its owner at a price that was fifty percent above market price.

The decisiveness in Ye Zichen’s actions shocked Wei Chen.

After they sent the original owner of the teahouse away, Ye Zichen slammed the contract onto the table.

“From now on, this Leisure Home is our meeting point!” With that, Ye Zichen took out his chequebook and wrote a twenty million yuan cheque that he handed to Wei Chen. “This is

preliminary funding. Ask me for more if it's not enough!"

Xia Keke had told him that Wei Chen was definitely trustworthy.

Don't doubt people you use, don't use people you doubt.

Since Xia Keke had said that, Ye Zichen naturally categorized Wei Chen under the trustworthy role and handed everything to him.

When they left from the teahouse, Xia Keke's and Lu Lu's desires coincided once in a blue moon as they yammered about going shopping.

When Ye Zichen heard that the ladies were going shopping, he was truly scared.

Just as he wondered about how to escape it, he looked up and saw Yu appear ten meters or so in front of him with lifeless eyes.

“Young Master Ye.”

“I remember, I remember, we’ll go right now,” Ye Zichen gave a cue to Yu, then smiled wryly at the two girls. “It seems like I can’t go shopping with you two since there’s stuff for me to do!”

With that, Ye Zichen waved towards Yu and left.

Xia Keke and Lu Lu, who were left behind, met each other’s gaze, then rolled their eyes simultaneously before turning to depart in different directions.

“What did you suddenly seek me out for?” Ye Zichen said as held

a cigarette leisurely in his mouth.

At that very moment, a dagger shimmering with cold light suddenly appeared in his hands.

“To kill you!”

# Chapter 289 – Xie Bian’s Red Packet

---

Ye Zichen’s hand that was holding the cigarette shook, while he instinctively took a step back.

Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched intensely as he looked at the enraged Yu...

“Have you gone mad!? What are you doing!?”

Ye Zichen was about to have a mental break down. Just what the hell is going on!?

He’s biting the hand that fed him!

Did I meet some evil thing recently? Why do people keep wanting to kill me...

“I’ll take your dog life!”

With that, Yu dived towards Ye Zichen like a shadow.

“If you want my dog’s life, then go and find Lil’ White. Why are you coming after me...” Ye Zichen shrunk his neck and cursed softly.

Lil’ White, who was resting in the mansion, suddenly sneezed, “Who is talking about me behind my back!?”

Lil’ White was rather speechless, but Ye Zichen, who was frantically evading Yu’s attacks, felt even more speechless.

I had treated his niece with goodwill, and he had promised that he wouldn't cause any more trouble for me.

Just how long has it been? He's coming to kill me again.

Since Ye Zichen noticed that the Hou brothers were not around, after dodging a few of Yu's attacks, Ye Zichen licked his lips and stopped.

“I didn’t want to fight you, don’t reject face when given it.”

“Hehe...”

However, Yu merely laughed coldly in response as the dagger in his hands shimmered.

F\*ck.

He really thinks that laozi is easy to push around.

Ye Zichen formed a fist with his right hand.

Since he did not know any spiritual techniques or secret arts, he merely swung his fist decisively.

Absolute strength trumps all.

Whoever is the strongest when fighting is the winner. There is no point of having those flowery techniques.

The eyes of Yu, who stood opposite him, twitched when he saw this before he swung his fist out as well.

Bang.

A loud noise echoed in the alleyway.

When the fists of the two collided, a torrent of wind caused by spiritual energy instantly spread out with the contact point of the two fists at the center...

Crack...

The pavement underneath their feet started to crack.

“Cough...”

Yu spat out a mouthful of blood, then retracted his fists with a shocked look. He glanced at Ye Zichen in surprise for a split second before leaping back and disappearing from the street.

“Seriously, what an ungrateful person.”

Ye Zichen flung his arm bitterly. Ye Zichen immediately felt rather sorry for himself when he thought of how much he had done for Yu.

People should have a conscience. Could his conscience have been eaten by a dog?

Thus, Ye Zichen snorted coldly before turning away. However, what Ye Zichen did not notice was that the mouthful of blood that Yu coughed up...

Was not red like a normal person's.

When Ye Zichen sat down in a cold drinks store to rest, he habitually took out his phone and opened up the Underworld staff chat, which was unusually very active.

He took a careful look...

It's actually Xie Bian's birthday!

Ox-Head: What sorts of presents has everyone prepared? Could you guys leak it for Old Ox?

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right.

Judge Cui: @Ox-Head, how about Marshal Ox telling us first?

Hua Tuo: This old man isn't capable at anything except medical stuff.

King Chujiang: @Hua Tuo, Elder Hua is too humble. You can stand atop of everyone with merely your medical skills.

Seeing that the Ten Yama Kings were in the group as well, Ye Zichen started to get nervous.

If King Chujiang notices me, then would he report me and kick me out of the group?

At that moment...

Xie Bian: Brothers.

Wow.

Xie Bian actually spoke up! That alone caused the entire group to be filled with surprise, and even Ye Zichen was shocked.

Ye Zichen stared closely at the screen as his screen started to become flooded with messages.

Judge Cui: Marshal Xie! Why did you come!?

Hua Tuo: General Xie, what a rare guest!

King Chujiang: Why isn't Brother Xie being a good birthday boy and actually has the spare time to speak up in the group?

King Lunhui: Old Xie spoke up?

King Pingdeng: Old Xie, it really has been a long time. Come visit me when you have time.

Old Lady Meng: Greetings to Marshal Xie.

Zhong Kui: I wish Marshal Xie a limitless lifespan. Marshal Xie,

do send a red packet.

Ox-Head: Brother Xie.

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Ye Zichen could clearly feel Ox-Head's depressed mood. That was something he immediately understood after thinking about it. No matter what, Ox-Head was a Ghost Marshal of the Underworld.

But look at the reaction to Xie Bian's entrance, which summoned up quite a few Yama Kings, and even those officials that didn't speak much in the group spoke up.

Yet, look at Ox-Head's entrance.

Maybe everyone is just too familiar with him since he speaks up in the group every single day.

Xie Bian: I feel rather nervous when I see your intimacy. <insert a row of sweating expressions>

Old Lady Meng: Marshal Xie is too funny.

King Chujiang: Old Xie @Xie Bian. Don't say that I, your brother, didn't remind you. You should hold your birthday feast, but it has to be quick.

Xie Bian: Why?

King Lunhui: @Xie Bian, did you forget that Big Brother King Qinguang was taken away by the Heavenly Court?

King Pengdeng: Indeed. The Heavenly Court is watching us rather closely. Old Xie needs to be careful.

Xie Bian: Sigh, just that? What can they do? What can the Heavenly Court do to laozi for holding a birthday feast? I, Xie Bian, do not have the word “submit” in my dictionary. Going against the flow is real temper!

Zhong Kui: Boss Xie has a fierce temper.

Old Lady Meng: Marshal Xie, worst come to worst, just come to me and drink the Soul-Breaking Soup to start over.

Ox-Head: Be careful.

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Xie Bian: I know you're all saying it for my own good. I was just kidding, don't take it seriously.

King Chujiang: Ignoring that, why did you come over here when it's your birthday?

Xie Bian: Ha, I came to spread a bit of wealth.

Spread wealth.

Is he going to send red packets?

That wasn't something that only Ye Zichen thought of, it was something that the entire staff chat thought of.

Zhong Kui: I smell the scent of red packets.

Old Lady Meng: Wait a second, let me finish this bowl of soup...

Hua Tuo: This old man can't compete against those youngsters.

Judge Cui: I really look forward to Marshal Xie's red packet.

Ye Zichen immediately focused completely on his phone as he waited for the red packet.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's phone vibrated.

When a huge red packet appeared on the screen, Ye Zichen reacted swiftly...

Snatch!

You received Xie Bian's red packet.

Bone Ring x1

Judge Cui: Marshal Xie is generous.

Hua Tuo: I never would have thought that even this old man managed to grab one.

Zhong Kui: Boss Xie, thank you for your red packet.

Old Lady Peng: Let us dance after making a toast with this bowl of soup...

Ye Zichen subconsciously took a look at everyone else's luck, which mostly consisted of some sort of special fruit or sigils...

Judging based on the name of the item, Ye Zichen felt that the Bone Ring should be equipment.

He clicked on his Yinyang Box.

An ancient ring laid within.

Bone Ring: An item Xie Bian picked up in a mountain of corpses in the mortal realm when he first became a Ghost Marshal. He only chose to bring it back to the Underworld after seeing that it was rather extraordinary. This item was created in the time of the Five Emperors, and its exact functions are yet to be known...

This...

Not only is this an equippable accessory, it's actually an unidentified equipment.

However, Ye Zichen still chose to take out the Bone Ring due to

his curiosity.

The Bone Ring was of a skeletal white band with a small skull on top. If one was merely judging from its appearance, it really was nothing special...

Ye Zichen put it on his finger, then...

A call suddenly pealed through in the cold drinks store.

“Li Jiayi!”

The familiar name caused Ye Zichen to look up, but at that very moment, the eyes of the skull on the Bone Ring that rested on his left index finger emitted a ghostly blue light that went unnoticed by him.

Old Lady Meng (孟婆) is the being in the 10th hall of the

underworld who ensures that the spirits that are going to reincarnate do not remember their past lives.

Zhong Kui (钟馗) is a famous exorcist in Chinese mythology. One of the things he is most famous for is being able to command 80000 demons.

This Soul-Breaking Soup (断魂汤) is the thing spirits drink before they reincarnate to forget all their memories.

# Chapter 290 – Chu Jingshuo

---

“These guys...”

Xie Bian continuously shook his head as he glanced at the messages on the screen.

At that moment, a voluptuous mature woman hurried over from the room.

“Dear!”

“Hmm?” Xie Bian smiled at the woman. “What is it? Aren’t you preparing the feast?”

“Dear, punish me!” The beautiful mature woman lowered her head deeply.

Xie Bian frowned in confusion, “Why are you suddenly asking me to punish you? Today is my birthday, no matter what mistakes you have committed, I will not fault you for them.”

The woman bit her lips, looked up and asked in a testing manner, “Dear, is that for real?”

“Every single word that I, Xie Bian, says is naturally for real!” Xie Bian raised his eyebrows. “Say it, what did you do?”

“The Bone Ring...”

“What happened with the Bone Ring?”

“I seemed to have mixed the Bone Ring into the things when you were sending red packets... You, seem to have sent the Bone Ring out!” The woman’s voice gradually got quieter and quieter.

Meanwhile, Xie Bian, who sat in the vine chair, also opened his eyes wider and wider.

In the end, he stood up from his chair and looked at the red packets he sent out.

There was indeed a person called “Bean Bun” who had received the Bone Ring.

The woman looked down without daring to utter anything. Xie Bian glanced at her and sighed, “You really are a klutz. Already, I’m not putting you at fault, go and busy yourself with the birthday feast. I’ll deal with the Bone Ring issue myself.”

“Okay.”

After the woman left, Xie Bian still frowned for a long time without speaking.

Eventually, he squinted his eyes, then sent Ye Zichen a friend request.

Ye Zichen naturally did not see the friend request notification, since he was drawn by a scene in the cold drinks store.

A handsome-looking young man in front of a rose-covered sportscar worth millions kneeled down on one knee and presented a rose in his left hand and a diamond ring in his right, while he looked passionately at the girl in front of him.

The romantic scene attracted countless people, but...

Everyone was stunned when they saw the girl.

There was an extremely large birthmark on the girl's face. If that was removed, the girl would definitely be an exquisite beauty, but that birthmark was like a black dot on a plain white sheet of paper...

It was so offending to the eye that others couldn't even look straight at it.

The bystanders had no idea why a guy with such conditions would actually like a girl like that.

"Li Jiayi, marry me!" The man's eyes were filled with softness and passion, while the extremely passionate voice caused the surrounding girls to scream.

However, the girl who was being proposed to...

“Chu Jingshuo, stop annoying me. If you continue to trouble me like this, then I’m calling the police.”

Rejected!

“What the hell, she actually rejected him? My god, are they shooting a tv show?”

“There’s something wrong with that girl, right? She rejected him?”

“Crafty bitch, she’s just playing hot and cold!”

All of a sudden, the young girls in the surrounding all chose to stand on the man’s side.

“Jiayi, why are you always rejecting me? Is accepting me just so difficult?” Chu Jingshuo’s eyes were filled with innocence and confusion.

“I already have someone I like,” Li Jiayi frowned. “My entire heart is filled with his image. It cannot accept anyone else anymore, sorry!”

After Li Jiayi rejected the young man coldly, she immediately turned to walk back to the cold drinks store.

“Li Jiayi, you always reply with those words. Then can you let

me see him so that I will truly accept my defeat?" Chu Jingshuo shouted loudly.

However, Li Jiayi continued to walk inside without any care for him...

Bang.

"You should look at where you're going when you walk. Did someone proposing to you stun you this much?" A familiar tone sounded by Li Jiayi's ear. When she looked up, she saw Ye Zichen looking at her with a faint smile.

Zoom.

Jiayi's beautiful face immediately flushed, while she bit her lips frantically and explained, "I... don't really know him, he is..."

just..."

"Why are you so nervous?" Ye Zichen rubbed her head to calm her down.

However, when the intimate action fell in Chu Jingshuo's eyes...

It made him burn up in envy.

"Who are you!?" Chu Jingshuo quickly walked forward.

As Ye Zichen looked up, he heard Li Jiayi hurry to explain, "Didn't you always want to see that person? He is the one!"

“Me?” Ye Zichen was stunned.

As he spoke, he felt a sudden pain on his waist, causing him to turn around, only to be met with Li Jiayi’s terrifying expression. He could only sigh. Why do I have to end up being as fake boyfriend?

“I’m her boyfriend,” Ye Zichen quickly ‘corrected’ himself.

Wow.

All of the bystanders immediately noticed that a popcorn worthy show was on.

The boyfriend meets the pursuer, it might even become a physical fight scene. That alone caused plenty of people to take out their phones and readied them to film so that they wouldn’t miss a

single second of it.

All of the young ladies nearby also exclaimed in their hearts...

Why is this ugly girl so lucky to always get this sort of handsome guy with her?

“Boyfriend,” Chu Jingshuo’s fury could be seen from his eyes. However, he quickly calmed himself down and nodded with a plain smile. “Then I wish you happiness. Sorry, please excuse me.”

Thus, he turned around and left bitterly. At the same time as he turned, the action itself also broke many of the hearts of the ladies who were watching.

After Chu Jingshuo returned to his sportscar that was covered with roses, his expression turned beyond dark.

“That bitch!”

Even Ye Zichen did not expect Chu Jingshuo to just turn around and leave.

He had expected Chu Jingshuo to actually attack him physically, so he even activated Unbreakable Body.

As he watched the sportscar race away, Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile, “It’s done.”

“Let me treat you to cold drink,” Li Jiayi smiled before walking off.

When Li Jiayi returned in her work clothes, Ye Zichen suddenly remembered that they were at where she worked.

“Actually, I feel like that lad is pretty nice, why did you reject him. Oh yeah, you said that you have someone in your heart already, can you tell your old classmate just which lucky boy actually got chosen by our Fairy Li?” Ye Zichen’s eyes burned with a passionate interest for gossip.

Li Jiayi giggled softly, then stared right at him.

She did not speak, but her actions were even more deadly.

“Ahem...” Ye Zichen quickly coughed dryly to hide his embarrassment.

At the same time, the shop owner’s call eased the awkwardness...

“Jiayi, come and help.”

“Coming!” Li Jiayi immediately looked up and smiled towards Ye Zichen after hearing that. “I need to work now, come by and visit often!”

As Ye Zichen gazed at the fleeting image, he suddenly felt at a loss, as if he had once experienced a similar scene in the past. However, he was unable to recall it properly.

When he finally returned to the mansion, Ye Zichen took out his phone habitually...

Xie Bian has sent you a friend request.

Verification Message: Brother, there is an important thing I need to discuss with you.

Ye Zichen blinked. What do I have to discuss with Xie Bian? We're people on completely different levels.

# Chapter 291 – Dragon God Ring

---

Ye Zichen pondered for a long time as he held his phone, but he was unable to guess what Xie Bian sent him a friend request to talk about.

However, since Xie Bian himself had said so, it wasn't good if he didn't accept the friend request.

If Xie Bian had a slightly impulsive temper and directly mentioned him in the group, causing the Yama Kings to see it, then he was screwed.

Thus, Ye Zichen accepted the friend request after a brief hesitation.

The first thing he did was naturally to take a look at the intimacy level.

100, Friendly.

Ye Zichen immediately stopped worrying after seeing the green intimacy level.

“Little brother!”

Xie Bian was indeed very friendly.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then replied.

“Marshal Xie, I saw the verification message you sent me just now. Marshal Xie has something to discuss with me?”

Xie Bian, who sat in the vine chair, immediately curled his lips when he saw the reply.

It seems like he's an impatient one.

But that's good, it's to my liking. The people he disliked were the people that took their time when doing things.

“Since little brother said that, then elder brother will just say it directly. When I was sending red packets just now, did little brother get a bone ring?”

Bone Ring!

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked at the ring on his right hand.

Xie Bian actually sought me out for this? Could this ring be a great treasure? But even if it is one, it is useless in my hands...

Since I don't know how to use it, it is just trash to me.

“This one did indeed get the ring.”

“Mm, then that’s right, can you return the ring to elder brother? Elder brother naturally will not cause you to be at a loss. Just say what you want, as long as elder brother has it, then elder brother will immediately send it over!”

So generous.

Ye Zichen was actually prepared to return it and ask for nothing in return, since he truly did not have a use for the ring.

As opposed to wasting space in my hands, I might as well return it to Xie Bian to earn some intimacy level.

But since Xie Bian said that, then if I don’t rip him off, then I really am not doing myself justice.

Ye Zichen smiled evilly as he imagined the scene of Xie Bian being ripped off big time.

However...

“F\*ck!”

Ye ZIchen grabbed the ring and yanked with a lot of force, but he was unable to remove it.

“What’s going on?”

Ye Zichen chucked his phone to the side, then yanked as hard as possible. However, even when his fingers turned red, the ring did not budge at all, as if it was something that grew on his finger.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt a bit frantic...

“Marshal Xie, how do you take off this ring?”

Xie Bian was truly stunned upon hearing that, causing him to immediately reply with a voice message in surprise.

“You put it on?”

Ye Zichen’s heart leaped when he heard Xie Bian’s slightly surprised, confused and shocked tone.

“I shouldn’t have?”

Xie Bian’s heart was completely shocked.

He had owned the ring for a long time, and he could feel a tremendous amount of energy from within the ring...

He had tried countless ways within a thousand years to withdraw the energy from within, but he was unable to even succeed in putting the ring on.

The little brother than got the ring actually managed to put it on.

“It’s not that you can’t. This ring has been in my hands for more than a thousand years. Countless people around me have tried, but none of them could put the ring on. I never thought that little brother would be able to put it on. It seems like the ring was fated to be with you, so I’ll just leave it with little brother.”

Xie Bian reacted rather generously, but Ye Zichen truly wanted to cry.

Why did I manage to put on a ring that nobody else could? Even if I have plot armor, it can’t be like this can it? What’s more, why can’t I take it off after putting it on?

“Marshal Xie, then do you know how to take the ring off? The ring is on my finger right now, I can’t take it off at all.”

“Little brother, do you think that I would know?” Xie Bian was speechless. “I’ve never put it on, and you’re asking me how to take it off...”

Ye Zichen silently cursed himself for his own stupidity when he saw Xie Bian’s reply.

He truly acted rather rashly. However, the extra ring on his fingers that he could not take off would cause anyone to be worried.

“Little brother, are you coming to elder brother’s birthday feast later? Show me what the ring looks like when it’s worn later!”

Xie Bian was very curious about the ring. Since the ring that he could not decipher for a thousand years suddenly managed to be worn, he naturally wanted to take a look.

“This one isn’t in the Underworld recently...”

“Oh, so you’re on a business trip. What a pity. Then let’s talk about it when you’re back. I’m telling you, you have to come to the manor to find me when you return.”

“No problem!”

“Then that’s it. Elder brother’s birthday feast is about to start, so I’ll be off!”

Ye Zichen chucked his phone to the side, then started to looked down at the ring on his finger in anxiousness.

It doesn’t come off!

“Boss!”

At that moment, Lil’ White, who just woke up, ran over with a look of excitement. At the split second before he leaped into Ye

Zichen's arms, he came to a speedy halt.

"Such powerful soul energy," Lil' White muttered with his eyes wide. Then, he twitched his mouth and casually jumped onto the sofa. "Boss, where did you get that ring from?"

"Don't talk about it, I've nearly been tortured to death by this ring," Ye Zichen fell weakly onto the sofa.

"You can't take it off, right?" Lil' White suddenly asked.

"How'd you know!?" Ye Zichen sat up and grabbed Lil' White up by his two fore legs and stared into his eyes. "Do you know something about it?"

"Boss, put me down first!" Lil' White, who was in midair, kicked wildly. Then, as Ye Zichen placed him back onto the sofa, he also lifted his head up proudly. "My inherited memories have information about this ring..."

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped Lil' White on the head.

"Get to the point!"

Lil' White twitched his mouth in a wrong manner. Whenever he acts cocky in front of his lackeys, his lackeys wouldn't even dare to

utter a sound.

But when it came to Ye Zichen, acting cocky once was harder than going into the skies.

A Five-Finger Mountain would approach him whenever he tried...

I have to be less cocky in front of Boss in the future!

“This ring’s actual name should be called the Dragon God Ring, it is crafted from the ashes of the skeletal remains of a dragon god during the ancient times of the Five Emperors. There is a complete physical and spiritual dragon soul within. I was able to sense its presence just now as well!” Lil’ White shook his head. “However, although there is an intense soul energy, it is just a drizzle for me, who is a male dog that shall become a beast god!”

Slap.

Another Five Finger Mountain was Ye Zichen’s response.

“Speak properly!”

Lil’ White, who was slapped, paused for a moment. I clearly said that I can’t act cocky in front of Boss, why couldn’t I resist just now...

It seems like acting cocky is something that is engraved deeply into my bones, and no one can stop me.

Lil' White calmed himself down a bit, then let out a sigh, "Boss, since you can put on the ring, it means that the dragon god soul has recognized you. However, the reason it can't be taken off is because the ring itself is recognizing you as its master. It can be taken off after a while."

"It's that simple?" Ye Zichen glanced at Lil' White.

"It's that simple!" Lil' White nodded.

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped Lil' White's head again.

"Okay, then you can go away now!"

# Chapter 292 – You’re Fired

---

Three days passed in the blink of an eye.

Even after twenty-four hours, the ring on Ye Zichen’s hand still had no signs of falling. Thus, he had once asked Lil’ White how long it would take for the ring to recognize him as its master.

Lil’ White’s response was...

He didn’t know.

Fortunately, people of Ye Zichen’s age would often wear some weird things, so the skull on the ring stuck on his hand did not attract too much attention.

Even if they saw it, they would just turn away after a single glance.

Something worth mentioning was that Yang Yusi did end up becoming Maintaining Beauty’s spokesperson, which in turn caused the internet and television to be filled with Maintaining Beauty’s advertisements.

All of a sudden, the brand appeared in the northern parts of the country with an unstoppable force.

The Maintaining Beauty headquarters were the tallest office

building in Bingcheng. The huge Maintaining Beauty logo gave everyone the feeling of it being a large corporation.

It was very difficult to imagine that it took less than a month to establish everything.

When Ye Zichen drove to the Maintaining Beauty headquarters.

“Sir, excuse me...” The receptionist asked in a testing manner as she stopped Ye Zichen, who was about to get in the lift.

There was no other reason aside from the fact that the flowers in Ye Zichen’s hand were too dazzling.

“Sir, are you confessing to one of our colleagues? I personally encourage your action since girls like romance, but our company has regulations about how unrelated personnel are not allowed to go up.”

The girl spoke in a very roundabout manner, causing Ye Zichen to nod.

“So your company has this sort of regulation,” Ye Zichen nodded understandingly.

“This is because the higher-ups don’t want us to get distracted! There is no overtime in our company, work is work and rest is rest, so I feel like this sort of regulation is really good. But it does trouble you...” The girl replied with a smile. “How about you tell

me who the flowers are for and I'll send them over for you?"

"Xiao Yumei!" Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

"Xiao Yumei..." The girl wrinkled her eyebrows. "What a familiar name!"

"Xiao Yumei is Director Xiao, the director of our company! It is clearly stated in corporate culture. Did you not participate in that during your training?"

A suit-wearing man walked out from behind the girl. Ye Zichen glanced at his nametag.

Maintaining Beauty International, Administration Supervisor.

Tan Zhengwen.

"Director Tan!" The girl immediately revealed a timid look on her face.

"Director Tan?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then looked at Tan Zhengwen meaningfully. "He's just a supervisor, and not even a manager, but he's already called director?"

"You've got problems with that?" Tan Zhengwen looked at Ye Zichen in disdain. "Recently, there have been plenty of people who sent flowers to Director Xiao, but they either own companies, or

are of management levels in large companies. This is the first time I've seen someone so cheap.”

“Are you talking about me?” Ye Zichen pointed at himself.

“You want to file a complaint about me? Sorry, I won’t give you the chance. As for who I’m talking about, think about it yourself,” Tan Zhengwen smiled in disdain. “if you truly want to pursue Director Xiao, at least get some good clothes. Even if you can’t afford real branded clothes, then buying some fakes to put up an image is fine too...”

“I smell the stench of money on you,” Ye Zichen smiled. “Maintaining Beauty International does not need a snob like you. Sorry, from this moment onwards, you are fired. Go to Finance to get three months of salary. Tell them Ye Zichen sent you!”

“Are you joking?” Tan Zhengwen laughed like he heard a hilarious joke. “You’re going to fire me?”

The girl, who wanted to stop their argument, pondered a little when she heard the name “Ye Zichen”.

She remembered that when she first arrived, she had been really curious about why Director Xiao did not sit in the chairman’s office, and that office has been empty the entire time.

Once, she had heard some colleagues gossip about that. They said that they had once seen from the entrance of the room that the

name stand on the desk said...

Chairman of the Board – Ye Zichen!

What's more, the legal owner of the company was also Ye Zichen.

“Tan Zhengwen, you’re fired!”

As Tan Zhengwen mocked Ye Zichen, Li Shuang, who was in business attire and heels, walked over.

Tan Zhengwen, who was laughing, suddenly stopped laughing.

“Secretary Li, what are you saying?”

Everyone in the company knew Li Shuang’s identity. She was the person that Xiao Yumei trusted most. It could be said that her status was merely below a single person in the entire company...

She could fire whoever she wants! Xiao Yumei definitely would not question it!

“You’re fired. Go to Finance to get your salary,” Li Shuang smiled faintly.

“What grounds are you firing me on!?” Tan Zhengwen roared. Although Maintaining Beauty International was just established,

anyone could tell from the initial investments on the advertisements that Maintaining Beauty International's future was immeasurable.

Although he was starting as a supervisor, he would be someone on the level of an elder later on...

He might even be able to compete for the assistant director position.

And more importantly, the salary at Maintaining Beauty was far higher than that of other companies.

"Boss Ye said you're fired, so you're fired," Li Shuang smiled, then began her introduction. "Maintaining Beauty International's Chairman of the Board and legal person, Ye Zichen. He said that you're fired, does he actually need a reason for that?"

"Impossible!" Tan Zhengwen's face was filled with disbelief.

"Nothing is impossible. You're fired," Ye Zichen smiled plainly, then clapped his hands. "Lil' Hou, come over and bring this annoying thing away."

Not long later, the Hou brothers walked over in security uniforms in the Maintaining Beauty International's lobby, and dragged Tan Zhengwen out by his arms.

After they took Tan Zhengwen away, Ye Zichen pointed at the

girl, who was standing on the side, “Come over here!”

Li Shuang smiled understandingly when she saw the familiar scene.

I had gotten a raise just like that. Even at that very moment, Li Shuang was still very thankful towards her Boss Ye for giving her the chance back then.

Now, she was able to buy apartments and cars with her own money...

Everything started with that sentence from back then...

“Come over here...”

“Di-Director Ye,” the girl dipped her head as if she was a bit afraid. When she thought back to how much she said to the chairman back at the elevator...

“I’m the chairman, doesn’t calling me director lower my status too much?” Ye Zichen chuckled.

“Ahhh, Chairman Ye,” the girl quickly corrected herself with her head lowered.

“Why are you so nervous,” Ye Zichen patted her shoulders, then reached his hand towards her chest.

The girl was stunned. Is Chairman Ye going to molest me here?

If Chairman Ye really grabs me, should I scream or should I endure it?

As the girl's thoughts went all over the place, Ye Zichen used his finger to hook her nametag...

Administration Department: Gu Lüdan.

"Very good, Miss Gu Lüdan. From this point onwards, you are a supervisor of the administration department!" Ye Zichen smiled towards her.

# Chapter 293 – Terrifying Woman

---

This is the exact scene.

Li Shuang giggled at the side as she looked at Gu Lüdan, who was completely dumbfounded.

“What are you blanking out for? Thank Chairman Ye.”

This girl is just like me back then...

“Can I seriously?” Gu Lüdan pinched her own arm with a lot of force, as if she had not calmed down from the shock yet...

“Ouch.”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but chuckle when she saw the girl's slightly idiotic look, “Everything is real. Alright, you are a supervisor of the administration department from now on. The administration department is the face of Maintaining Beauty, so you have to make sure that everything is alright!”

“No problem!” Gu Lüdan answered confidently.

Later, within the elevator...

Ye Zichen stood within the elevator with a smile.

Li Shuang's heart leaped when she saw his smile, "Boss, are you thinking about that girl?"

"A pretty cute kid," Ye Zichen replied like an old man.

"You don't seem to be older than that staff member," Li Shuang chuckled.

"But my heart is old," Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly with a smile. After so many things have happened to him, it would truly be unnatural if his heart did not age.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then glanced at Li Shuang, "What did you just go to do? It looks like you just came back?"

"Mu Chuang had several things that he didn't understand in the jewelry store. Since Director Bai wasn't there, I went over to help!" Li Shuang smiled in response.

"How is Mu Chuang doing there?"

Ye Zichen did care quite a bit for this little brother of his. Although they weren't real brothers, they did grow up together on great terms.

"He's very focused."

“Li Chuang, what do you think about Mu Chuang as a person?” Ye Zichen suddenly asked. However, before Li Shuang replied, he quickly spoke up again. “Never mind, pretend like I didn’t say anything.”

“Boss, what did you actually want to ask?” Li Shuang couldn’t help but ask.

“Aii, I was just wondering whether you two might get together, and I could help pair the two of you or something. But then again, it seems like there is a kind of large difference in your ages... Never mind, pretend like I didn’t say anything!”

At that moment, the lift door opened.

Ye Zichen quickly walked out of the elevator, leaving Li Shuang alone within to gaze at his back with a sad smile.

Ye Zichen directly rushed to Xiao Yumei’s office. When he got to it, he took a sniff of the flower’s fragrance, smile, then directly pushed the door open without knocking...

“SURPRISE!”

Ye Zichen had wanted to surprise Xiao Yumei, but the moment he entered...

He noticed that a business negotiation seemed to be going on.

“... Do continue,” Ye Zichen smiled awkwardly as he closed the door with flowers in his hand.

Then, a hand reached over to pull the office door, “Since Mr. Ye came, then let’s discuss this together, this corporation does belong to you.”

This familiar tone...

“Why are you here?”

Ye Zichen was truly speechless. The person in front of him who spoke up was the woman that screwed him over in the ore trade center.

“We’re talking business! Since I’m a businesswoman, I will join in wherever there is profits to be made!” The veiled lady spoke with a smile.

Since it was her, Ye Zichen did not mind at all and directly walked over to Xiao Yumei with the flowers.

“Yumei, these are for you,” Ye Zichen handed the flowers in his hand over.

When Xiao Yumei saw the flowers, a smile bloomed on her face, “Thank you, I like them a lot.”

“I never expected Mr. Ye to be a romantic person as well. Director Xiao, I’m so envious!” The veiled lady sat on the office’s sofa while hugging her shoulders.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but get annoyed when he looked at her, “If you’re that jealous, then find a man to send some to you. What are you getting envious here for!”

“You...”

“What? You wear a veil all the time, are you afraid of being seen? Back then, I didn’t dare to offend you since it was on your turf! It is my turf now, so can’t I act more to my liking?” Ye Zichen glared. “Yumei, what sort of cooperation did she come to discuss about?”

“She wants to be an agent fpr our company!” Xiao Yumei replied.

“Don’t let her!” Ye Zichen glared at the veiled lady as he said that. It was as if he was saying ‘I’m going to piss you off’, ‘I’m going to piss you off’...

The veiled lady merely smiled, then brought over a contract from the side with a shrug, “It’s been signed already.”

...

Ye Zichen was completely speechless.

Ye Zichen picked up the contract from the table and took a glance...

Qu Qitong.

Then, he took a look at the actual body of the contract.

“Twenty percent? It can’t be, a businesswoman like you only wants twenty percent of the profits?”

“Twenty percent is already quite a bit,” Qu Qitong smiled faintly. “Director Xiao is a smart businesswoman as well. When smart people cooperate, both sides naturally have to show some goodwill.”

Xiao Yumei nodded in response, then looked at Qu Qitong, “Director Qu, actually, I’ve always had a question I wanted to ask you about. Just what exactly gave you so much faith in our product?”

“You really want to know? Qu Qitong smiled, then took off her veil.

Both Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei were completely shocked when they saw her face.

An originally beautiful face was completely ruined like she had

been in a car accident. The dense scars crawled along her face, which would be described as menacing without any exaggeration.

“Sorry!”

Both Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei apologized together.

Qu Qitong merely smiled, then put the veil back on, “There is nothing to apologize about. It should actually be me who thanked you guys.”

“?”

“It was this product of yours that filled my future with hope. You might not be able to imagine it, but actually, the scars on my face were much more severe three days ago,” Qu Qitong smiled faintly.

Meanwhile, both Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei were completely stunned.

Even more severe, just what was it like before?

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen actually felt a hint of pity for the girl. Just what did she go through to get her face ruined like this?

“I don’t need your pity,” Qu Qitong’s voice suddenly turned cold. “I did not get to this stage through others pity.”

Can this girl read minds? Ye Zichen frowned.

“I can’t read minds,” Qu Qitong spoke up once more. “I’m just a businesswoman. Observing expressions is just a basic survival skill.”

“...”

“Ye Zichen has no need to feel speechless,” Qu Qitong raised her eyebrows, then smiled. “Instead of whether I can read minds, I’m actually more interested in Mr. Ye. I brought all of the stones you picked for me back. Aside from the two useless rocks that you specifically chose to hide the truth, all of the other rocks gave out jade.”

Ye Zichen was shocked.

This woman is truly terrifying. How did she know I intentionally chose two pieces of useless rocks?

“Mr. Ye, I’ve said it already, I have great observation skills,” Qu Qitong smiled faintly. “Your rate of choosing rocks with jade is a hundred percent. Even old experts that have been in the industry for several tens of years merely have a sixty percent rate. If it wasn’t because I’m rather realistic, I really would suspect you have x-ray vision!”

# Chapter 294 – Not The Same Person

---

This woman...

Ye Zichen forced a smile to his face. The only thing he could do at that point was empty his mind and disregard everything she said.

God knows whether this woman could guess something from my expression or not.

I can't let others know about my secret, and even for the ones close around me, I will only tell them everything after confirming some situations.

“Mr. Ye is very nervous,” Qu Qitong smiled faintly. “Actually, I just said it randomly, you don’t have to mind it too much.”

Then, she nodded slightly towards Xiao Yumei and Ye Zichen, “It’s getting late, so I’ll be leaving first. Director Xiao, let me wish us a happy cooperation in advance.”

“Happy cooperation,” Xiao Yumei pursed her lips with a smile.

Qu Qitong glanced at Ye Zichen meaningfully one more time before leaving.

The moment she left the office, her lips underneath her veil raised slightly, “Has x-ray vision, but at the same time not. Just

what was he thinking just now? That man is rather amazing!"

Phew.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh of relief the moment the office door closed.

He had been completely tense during the short few minutes previously.

As Ye Zichen leaned limply on the sofa, Xiao Yumei smiled, "She's an amazing person."

"I know this as well," Ye Zichen shrugged unenergetically. "Being able to train one's observation skills to her level makes her a miracle in the business circles as well, right?"

Xiao Yumei nodded in confirmation, "At the very least, I admit that I'm worse than her at it."

"What a terrifying woman," Ye Zichen couldn't help but exclaim.

Since she was able to guess the thoughts of others through reading their actions and expressions very accurately, Ye Zichen truly suspected that woman knew how to read minds.

"Oh yeah," Xiao Yumei suddenly took out a name card from her wallet on the table and handed it to Ye Zichen.

“What is this?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Wouldn’t you know after taking a look?” Xiao Yumei smiled faintly.

Ye Zichen glanced at the name card...

Yang Yusi.

Mobile Number: 15XXXXXXXXX

Those were the only two rows on the card. At the same time, Xiao Yumei also smiled.

“Yang Yusi told me that it is her personal number. Although she said that it was for me, I could tell from her expression that she actually wanted to hand the card to you through me,” With that, Xiao Yumei smiled playfully. “Little man, you truly hid it well! I really couldn’t tell that you even knew Yang Yusi. What’s more, from the looks of the girl’s face... Zeze, you truly are a playboy.”

“Ha...”

Ye Zichen smiled softly, stood up, then placed the card back onto the table.

“She gave it to you, so you guys stay in touch. There is no need

for contact between her and I.”

“Are you sure?” Xiao Yumei smiled. “Yang Yusi is the goddess of the hearts and dreams of countless men.”

“The heck does that have to do with me?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then shrugged. “I admit that I’m rather fickle in love, but I can promise that I am sincere towards all of you. I’m merely a normal person, and it is already a blessing to have you all by my side. I can spare no energy to find more... A beauty’s favor is the hardest to accept. I am scared that I am unable to repay it!”

Then he stretched lazily with a smile towards Xiao Yumei, “You’re busy, so I won’t disturb your work any longer.”

Ye Zichen had a smile on his face as he left the Maintaining Beauty. He did not pay any heed to the matter with Yang Yusi at all.

Just as he was about to drive away, he felt someone following him.

He took back to take a look, and saw Yu, who was in a black coat, staring intensely at him.

“Are you done yet?”

Ye Zichen was truly a bit angry when he saw Yu.

Does this bastard think that I can't get mad at all? Did he come over to kill me over and over again because I was too nice before?

"Didn't you clearly find out last time that you can't beat me? You're still not giving up? Do you really think that I can't kill you?"

"..."

Yu revealed a look of confusion.

After a long while, he lifted his hand and scratched his head, "Didn't I say that I won't try to kill you already? What are you saying? I came this time because I have something to discuss with you!"

"Hehe..." Ye Zichen smiled coldly. "Your knife was almost on my throat last night and you're saying that you won't kill me?"

"Impossible, I went out to buy clothes with Lingling yesterday," Yu shook his head quickly.

...

The two of them looked at each other in confusion.

Ye Zichen tilted his head and looked at Yu's face, which did not

seem like he was lying.

Impossible, Yu did come to kill me last night.

“I get it now,” At that moment, Yu, who stood ten meters away, suddenly spoke up. “Huo Da might have hired him...”

“What the hell?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“The reason I came this time was to tell you that Huo Da returned from the capital to target you and the jewelry shop woman,” Yu frowned. “No wonder his expression seemed a bit weird when he found me yesterday. It is very possible that he found out about the relationship between us through some means.”

Although Yu did not look like he was lying, Ye Zichen did not have Qu Qitong’s ability to tell whether Yu was actually lying just from observing his actions.

Ye Zichen had always believed in what his eyes saw, and he had seen Yu try to kill him the other day.

Even though Yu said that now, Ye Zichen was still unable to believe him.

More importantly, the God of Fortune is doing things to Huo Da’s family behind the scenes. At this moment, Huo Da should be running around for his family’s business and should not have

returned to Bingcheng to target Xiao Yumei and him.

From Ye Zichen's views, Yu's words were filled with issues...

Just to be on the safe side, Ye Zichen chose to keep his suspicion.

"Right now, I still cannot believe your words. If you want me to believe you, then just turn around and leave. We'll pretend like we didn't meet," Ye Zichen pointed.

Yu nodded, "I can understand your thoughts right now. If it really is that person, then he can indeed imitate me extremely well!"

With that, he turned around and begun to walk away from the car park. Right before he left, he turned around again with a smile, "I, Yu, never goes back on his words. Since I said that I won't kill you, then I won't. Believe me if you want, but I am not guilty!"

Then, Yu directly left without any hesitation. When Ye Zichen saw this, even his belief had slightly wavered.

Could the person that came to kill me yesterday really have not been Yu...?

But why are they so similar to the point that their voice, tone and weapons were exactly the same?

Thus, Ye Zichen drove away from the car park while maintaining his doubts. Not long after he left, a shadow suddenly popped out from the wall of the car park.

“It is confirmed, Yu has gone over to the target’s side.”

# Chapter 295 – The Sky Sovereign’s Rage

---

Within a certain high-class mansion in Bingcheng...

The living room swirled with dense smoke. Huo Da was dressed in bathrobes, as he smashed the expensive bottles of wine on the table to pieces.

The bright red wine was split all over the ground like blood...

“Young Master, we, the Huo family, are incomparable to back then. This kick of yours cost us five hundred thousand,” the elder in butler clothing raised his eyebrows as he ordered some servants to come over to clean it up.

Huo Da twitched his mouth coldly and glared with red eyes, then snorted, “We might have fallen, but the Huo family has not fallen to the point that we have to worry about five hundred thousand. What’s more, I came to Bingcheng to turn the tables. As long as I control Xiao Yumei, I will make those families that are kicking us when we’re down to come and beg me!”

“Young Master is right,” the old butler nodded with a smile.

“Yu betrayed us. How do you think he should be dealt with,” Huo Da calmed his anger down after a long time, then raised his eyebrows.

“Naturally, he cannot be used anymore,” the old butler smiled

softly.

“Of course, but I can’t let people who betray me end well. Find a chance to kill Yu off, and if it’s possible kill the girl called Lingling off first to make him feel worse than death!” Huo Da clenched his fist tightly with a menacing look on his face.

“Understood,” the old butler nodded and maintained his smile.

“Mm, I’m not worried if I leave that to you. Oh yeah, did you fully research about that grandson, Ye Zichen’s, family?” Huo Da squinted his eyes. Although he was above these sorts of things in the past, he had been placed in a desperate position.

Since the Huo family was falling, they needed a chance to completely turn the tables.

Ye Zichen was definitely his greatest obstacle, and in order remove the obstacle, he was willing to pay any price.

“Not yet!” said the old butler.

“Still not yet?” Huo Da frowned. “Bingcheng is damn tiny. I’ve told you to start searching from the capital, you still didn’t find them?”

“No!” The old butler shook his head.

Creak.

Huo Da clenched his fist tightly. If it had been anyone else, Huo Da would have already started to curse.

However, the person in front of him was not a mere butler, so he would only helplessly endure.

“Deal with it quickly.”

“Understood,” the old butler nodded with a smile. “Then Young Master, stay here and rest, I’m going out.”

“Mm!” Huo Da waved his hand impatiently.

At that moment, the old butler also turned around and... revealed a meaningful smile.

Back at Ye Zichen’s mansion, he laid down on his bed, and contacted the God of Fortune before doing anything.

At that moment, the God of Fortune was having fun playing Landlord. When he heard his phone buzz on the table, he immediately put down the cards and opened up WeChat.

His phone showed that there were several tens of unread messages in his chat with the Sky Sovereign.

“God of Fortune!”

“God of Fortune!”

“God of Fortune!”

All of the messages shouted his name.

“Boss, it’s your turn.”

The ones playing the God of Fortune with was some of his subsidiary staff. Recently, he left quite poorly against Erlang Shen and co., so he decided to play a bit with his staff members to get them to lose a bit to him.

However, the staff were not understanding at all, and won seven to eight thousand gold ingots from him alongside several tens of cultivation experience.

“Wait a moment, I’m busy here!” He rolled his eyes at the staff, then lowered his own status as he wrote his reply.

“Great deity, I’m here!”

The title given to him when he became a god was the God of Fortune, but the one talking to him was a real God of Fortune.

That person definitely earned tons with Yue Lao, the number one agent, selling mysterious food in the Heavenly Court.

“I gave you two hundred thousand cultivation experience last time and told you to destroy the capital’s Huo family. How is that coming along?”

The God of Fortune paused for a moment, then shouted at his staff, “How is it going with the capital’s Huo family?”

“It’s all done. Recently, the Huo family should not have any luck with money. They are currently losing money,” the staff replied softly.

The God of Fortune nodded, then relayed the words to Ye Zichen.

“Losing money? So they are not completely destroyed?”

“Sky Sovereign, you might not understand the structure of syndicates in the Modern Realm. The Huo family could originally be described as a huge entity in the Modern Realm. It was rich to the point that their wealth could match countries. Even though we, the ones in charge of fortune, did some work on them, some time is needed to fullywreck the Huo family. But don’t worry, the Huo family is currently losing money for an indefinite amount of time...”

The God of Fortune replied with a soft smile.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then directly sent a voice message to the God of Fortune.

“I don’t care if it is a huge entity, I only want results. I’m not satisfied with the results you have showed me.”

Boom.

A loud thundering sound sounded out from the hall the God of Fortune resided in. Then, Ye Zichen’s ice-cold voice resonated from all around the celestial hall.

This...

The God of Fortune and his two subordinate staff stood up.

Voice transmission from the sky. And even more terrifyingly, even I, who owns a celestial manor, am unable to find the origin of the voice.

Gulp.

The God of Fortune silently gulped. As expected of the Sky Sovereign, he is not someone a small deity like me can compare up to.

“Please be at ease, Sky Sovereign!” The God of Fortune replied frantically. “I will deal with the capital’s Huo family’s matters as

soon as possible!"

Beep.

A voice message appeared on Ye Zichen's screen.

After he listened to it, he snorted coldly.

"Hmmpf!"

A cold snort sounded out around the God of Fortune's celestial hall. The God of Fortune could feel his blood boil in his body, causing him to nearly cough up blood.

"I await your good news."

After a long time, the God of Fortune finally suppressed his annoyance, then glanced at the two staff who did not know what had happened, "Did you feel the Sky Sovereign's anger just now?"

"Yes!" The two staff nodded at him with a tremble.

"Then hurry and deal with it!" The God of Fortune shouted and slammed the table. "One week, if I don't see the results in one week, then never return!"

That caused the two staff members to leave frantically.

Only then did the God of Fortune sit down on the table with a sigh.

At the same time, the Sky Sovereign's rage resonated in his heart.

Sky Sovereign Nameless has always been a mysterious existence in the Heavenly Court, even though everyone knew that the title of Sky Sovereign was not something that just anyone could possess.

Yet, some people still looked down on the Sky Sovereign!

However, the God of Fortune was able to feel the Sky Sovereign's anger already.

As I expected, the Sky Sovereign's strength is incomparable.

Ye Zichen chucked his phone angrily to the side. If it really was like the God of Fortune had said, it would take some time to wreck the Huo family.

Then Yu's words back then might very well be true.

But who would that person be?

Just as Ye Zichen was getting confused, Liu Qing stretched lazily and exited the Dragon Eye. Due to needing to revive her soon, Ye

Ye Zichen had asked her to stay within the Dragon Eye to nurture her soul.

“Young man, it’s been a while,” Liu Jing greeted him with a giggle. Since she had been nurturing her soul within the Dragon Eye recently, it caused her to be much more energetic, and it even seemed to have made her body develop.

“Young lady, it’s been a while.”

Ye Zichen waved his hand with a soft smile.

Liu Qing smiled sweetly, glanced at the phone by the bed and ran over.

“I haven’t read it for a few days, I have to hurry to catch up.”

Ye Zichen wanted to retort a bit, but the girl immediately chucked him the phone after gripping it.

“So annoying, why does someone look for you whenever I take your phone?”

# Chapter 296 – Force Established! Name – Tribulation!

---

Someone is looking for me?

Ye Zichen rubbed Liu Qing's head, then took the phone and saw Xie Bian's grandson, Xie Lei, was looking for him.

“Big Brother, thank you so much!”

That was the only message on the screen, while a red packet followed it.

You received Level 3 Ghost Messenger Xie Lei's red packet.

Heaven and Earth merits x100000.

Hundred Ghost Night Walking Sigil x3. It has been added to the Yinyang Box.

Dingdong.

Your level in the Underworld has increased. Current level: Level 5 Ghost servant.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Xie Lei increased by 400. Current intimacy level: 600.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Xie Lei leveled up. Current intimacy level: Respected.

Dingdong.

You received 10 Admiration Points from Xie Lei.

Dingdong.

Struggle for the Three Realms mode is about to activate.

Activation criteria. 1000 Admiration Points in the Heavenly Court and the Underworld, and 500 Reputation.

The series of system notification completely stunned Ye Zichen. Meanwhile, Liu Qing also opened her eyes wide for a long while before she spoke, “What are all these? What is the Struggle for the Three Realms?”

“I’m not sure. It might be that a game updated or something?” Ye Zichen replied in confusion.

Then, Ye Zichen disregarded the system notifications, and instead glanced at the title in front of Xie Lei's name...

Level 3 Ghost Messenger.

If I remember correctly, he was merely a Level 1 Ghost Messenger a few days ago.

It seems like he got quite a good bit of benefits during Xie Bian's birthday feast!

"Kid, you turned the tables?"

At that moment, Xie Lei was busy dealing with the Underworld staff that had come to visit him. During Xie Bian's birthday feast, his packet of jasmine tea completely shocked everyone and earned continuous praise from the birthday 'boy' Xie Bian.

When the feast ended, Xie Bian directly gifted him a manor in the Ghost Capital.

The manor was one that Xie Bian had resided in while he was younger. The fact that Xie Bian gave out this manor caused plenty of Underworld staff to guess at Xie Bian's intentions while they started to get closer to Xie Lei's side.

That was something which had never been seen before.

Xie Lei shook his head with a soft smile when he saw the group of ghosts that came to him to offer their good will. At that moment, the phone on his table rang. He immediately picked it up, and replied to the message with a smile.

“I turned the tables, and it was all thanks to Big Brother. I, Xie Lei, am not an ungrateful person. I, Xie Lei, will do as much as I can whenever Big Brother has need of me.”

“Haha, since you said that, I really do have something to trouble you with!”

Ye Zichen replied with a soft smile.

“Big Brother, please say it!”

Xie Lei’s eyes were completely serious.

“I might come to the Underworld in the near future. I will be on unfamiliar grounds then, so please take care of me!”

Since Ye Zichen wanted to revive Liu Qing, he definitely had to go to the Underworld once.

He did not know what the situation over there was like either, so he had to be completely prepared.

“It won’t be me taking care of you, but I will definitely help! Just

contact me then!”

Xie Lei replied without any hesitation.

“Sure, then that’s it. We’ll talk then!”

“Mhmm!”

The moment Ye Zichen finished his chat with Xie Lei, Liu Qing snatched his phone. He had wanted to try to figure out what the Struggle for the Three Realms was, but since the girl wanted it that badly, he’d just let her have it.

What’s more, it’s not like he will get the answer just by studying it a little.

The next day.

At Leisure Home.

Ye Zichen arrived in casual clothes. At the place where he entered, a thirty-something years old woman sat at the counter.

“Sir, how many will it be?”

“I’m looking for Wei Chen!” Ye Zichen said plainly. The woman was confused for a moment before she smiled, “Third floor!”

The teahouse had been completely redecorated. Originally, the entire building was a place to drink tea.

However, after the improvement, the first and second floor continued to operate as a normal teahouse, while the third floor became the place where they gathered.

There was a stand at the staircase between the second and third floor.

Non-staff members were prohibited.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile and walked up. At that moment, Wei Chen was playing cards with his subordinates. When he saw Ye Zichen arrive, he immediately chucked the cards away.

“Boss Ye!”

The subordinates did not know Ye Zichen, so they all stood to the side.

Ye Zichen nodded with a soft smile and glanced at the arrangement of the third floor.

“Good!”

It was the sort of effect he wanted it to have.

He wanted the base to be hidden within the city, and since the teahouse continued to operate normally, it would not raise the suspicion of others at all.

“Ha, it’s alright if Boss Ye likes it,” Wei Chen smiled, then raised his eyebrows at the subordinates behind him. “He is our boss from now on. Call him Boss Ye from now on!”

“Boss Ye!” The subordinates all spoke up.

“Oh yeah, Boss Ye, name our organization!” said Wei Chen.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. The reason he established this power was to block off the troubles and tribulations around him...

“We’ll call it Tribulation!”

“Tribulation. Haha, good name!” Actually Wei Chen did not know how it was a good name, but kissing-ass was a must.

Ye Zichen ignored his compliment and raised his eyebrows, “Old Wei, is everyone in the teahouse one of our people?”

“Mhmm,” Wei Chen nodded, but then quickly shook his head. “No, not everyone. The lady at the front counter isn’t one of our people!”

“She isn’t?” Ye Zichen was stunned. But when I mentioned Wei Chen earlier, the woman smiled meaningfully...

I thought that she was as well.

“That lady was the sales manager of the teahouse before. I had wanted to change her for someone else, but she is rather pitiful. She said that she can’t lose her job and stuff, so I left her behind,” Wei Chen licked his lips.

“Rubbish, how can an outsider stay here? What if she finds out?” Ye Zichen frowned. Then he smiled playfully. “You couldn’t have gotten interested in her, right? Would Wei Teng agree?”

Wei Chen instantly blushed, “Boss Ye, you really know how to crack jokes.”

“This isn’t a joking matter. As an outsider, she will have an impact on us. Can you promise that she won’t ever find out anything?” solemnity filled Ye Zichen’s eyes.

“Uhm... I’ll find a chance to speak to her!” Wei Chen sighed, then changed the topic. “Let me tell you about the strength of our members!”

With that, he called over a thin man with a plain hairstyle.

“This is my ex-assistant. He’s of the intermediate rank of the False Earth Immortal level. He’s called Dahua!”

“Boss Ye!” Dahuo smiled with a nod.

“These...” Wei Chen pointed to approximately fifteen people behind him. “Spiritual Body level!”

Then, he pointed at the remaining twenty something people at the back.

“False Spiritual Level.”

Ye Zichen nodded. Although these people were not particularly strong, they were irreplaceable aid for the current Ye Zichen.

“What about the intelligence gathering group?”

“The intelligence personnel aren’t here!” Wei Chen smiled. “If they keep on sitting here, then what sort of intel are we supposed to look at. Am I right?”

“That’s right!” Ye Zichen nodded in satisfaction and smiled. “Then I’ll give you your first mission. Help me investigate the whereabouts of a man named Huo Da. If he is in Bingcheng, then send some people to protect those around me!”

“No problem!”

With those simple orders, Ye Zichen walked down from the third floor.

When he arrived on the first floor of the teahouse, he intentionally looked towards the lady at the counter. As he walked past her, she suddenly spoke...

# Chapter 297 – Terrifying Connections

---

“Mr. Ye,” the lady suddenly spoke to Ye Zichen, causing the latter to be stunned.

“What is it? Do you have some sort of business with me?” Ye Zichen stopped.

The lady wanted to say something, but merely shook her head with a smile in the end, “Nothing, please be careful on your way.”

Ye Zichen looked at the woman in confusion, but she maintained a faint smile on her face.

Ye Zichen rubbed his nose and left the teahouse. He did not pay any heed to what the lady said, and directly drove towards the Maintaining Beauty headquarters.

“I hope you will keep what I said in mind. Seriously, I’m getting old and getting kinder,” the lady shook her head slowly with a sigh several minutes after Ye Zichen left.

At the Maintaining Beauty Building.

Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei had said that they would get dinner together, but when Ye Zichen drove over to get her, he saw her rushing outside hurriedly.

“Yumei,” Ye Zichen waved towards her with a soft smile.

Xiao Yumei paused for a moment, then remembered that they were supposed to have dinner together.

“Zichen, sorry, I have some urgent business to deal with. I can’t have dinner with you tonight!” Xiao Yumei said apologetically. “Oh yeah, you drove over, right? Let me have the car for a bit, Li Shuang borrowed mine!”

“Here!” Ye Zichen’s face was filled with helplessness as he handed the car keys over.

Xiao Yumei tiptoed and pecked his cheek, “Don’t be angry, I’ll make it all up to you next time!”

The flirtatious gaze and smile instantly caused the flames of lust in Ye Zichen’s body to rise up.

Ye Zichen could only silently comment on how she was a fairy, while sighing helplessly, “Alright, I get it. Hurry up and busy yourself, my Goddess of Fortune!”

As Ye Zichen watch Xiao Yumei drive off, he could only sigh. He finally understood what it felt like for his partner to be a strong woman.

Ye Zichen stretched lazily, and just as he pondered about what he should go and do...

A silver sports car stopped in front of him.

Su Yiyun, who was wearing sunglasses, whistled towards Ye Zichen, “Ye-zi, what are you wandering around here for? Want to come and go around with big bro for a bit?”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in response to the intense rich second-generation aura and raised his eyebrows, “For what?”

“Why are you asking so much? Just get in the car!” Su Yiyun glanced towards the front seat.

Ye Zichen thought about it. Since I have nothing to do, I might as well go around with him.

...

“What is this place that you brought me to?”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but gasp at the parking lot full of fancy cars.

Su Yiyun smiled faintly and hooked his arm and Ye Zichen’s shoulders, “What are you getting worried for, come with big bro. Do you think I’ll sell you out? What’s more, it’s all too simple if you want to come to these sorts of places, it’s just that no one knows that the medical company belongs to you since you pushed

Xiao Yumei into the light.”

When they reached the clubhouse lobby, Su Yiyun handed a card to a waiter beside them and begun to lead Ye Zichen in.

“Sir!” The waiter quickly ran over and blocked their path with a smile. “Could that gentleman show his membership card please?”

“Dude, you deliberately came to annoy me, right?” Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows. “Is my card not enough?”

“Mr. Su, you did show your membership card, but this gentleman has not yet,” The waiter smiled humbly.

“Are you new? Don’t you know who I am?” Su Yiyun pointed at his nose. “I can’t even bring someone in with the name of Su Yiyun?”

“Yo, Young Master Su! What happened? Why are you so angry?” At that moment, playful laughter rang out.

Han Qi walked over with several people that seemed like youngsters of rich families. His hand was still wrapped in a bandage, making it seem like his broken finger had not yet healed.

“Han Qi?” Su Yiyun’s face was filled with disdain. He might have looked at him properly if it had been Han Yu.

But Han Qi...

Was not enough.

Su Yiyun disregarded Han Qi's mockery and squinted his eyes at the waiter, "Are you sure that you're going to block me?"

The waiter revealed a troubled look.

Han Qi immediately spoke up on the side, "This sort of place is not for everyone. You guys have to watch over it properly. Do not fear brute force!"

"Han Qi, I'm slightly regretting not causing your entire jaw to dislocate. Come over here, let's have a good chat," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, causing Han Qi's face to immediately stiffen.

"You want to hit me? I'm telling you, this sort of place isn't for all sorts of little shits. Someone who can't even display a membership card... Hehe..." Han Qi put up a brave front, but as he said so, he continued to ensure that he maintained a fair distance from Ye Zichen.

"Han Qi, if you don't want to get beaten, then shut your damn mouth," Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows, then looked at the waiter. "I do understand the rules here, but isn't there also one about how if someone a member brings is of a certain level or above, that person would get an automatic membership?"

“Yes!” The waiter nodded.

“Then he’s the one I brought over, is his level not enough?” Su Yiyun questioned.

“You alone are not enough proof,” the waiter answered fearlessly.

“Hahaha, Young Master Su is in trouble. Zeze...” Han Qi laughed manically on the side and mocked. “I’m telling you, the brat beside Young Master Su isn’t even a little shit...”

“Isn’t that Big Brother Ye?” a questioning voice sounded out from the side.

Not long later, Xiao Hai and Huang Ming walked over, side by side.

“Lil’ Ye!” Xiao Hai raised his eyebrows and smiled. “Why haven’t you come over to Hai-ge’s for so long? I’ve missed you!”

Following them, Lin Hanben also hurried over when he heard them. He bowed and smiled towards Ye Zichen, “Mr. Ye.”

“Young Master Ye is actually here as well...” Dongfang Wenyi also walked over passionately.

“Why is it so crowded here?” At that moment, Zu Siliang also

walked over with a smile. When he saw Ye Zichen, who stood at the entrance, he raised his eyebrows with a smile. “When did Brother Ye come, why are you just standing here?”

In a mere ten minutes, several big shots gathered at the entrance to the clubhouse.

The waiter was completely stunned, while Han Qi’s expression was truly terrible.

He had just said that Ye Zichen wasn’t even a little shit, but now everyone that knew him were peak existences in their circles.

“It’s so fortunate that you all came!” Su Yiyun snorted meaningfully before Ye Zichen even had the chance to utter a word. “I brought Ye-zi to come out and play, but I was blocked off by this guy. He said that my identity cannot prove that Ye-zi can become a member here. But this guy is just doing things according to regulations. On the other hand, this grandson...”

Su Yiyun indicated towards Han Qi with his mouth, “This grandson was adding fuel to the fire and said that Ye-zi isn’t even a little shit... Hehe... I really can’t stand it anymore!”

# Chapter 298 – Auction House

---

Han Qi immediately felt that the atmosphere wasn't right when Su Yiyun said that, so he immediately slipped away.

At the same time, Xiao Hai raised his eyebrows, "This clubhouse seems to have a rule that if five advance tier members simultaneously request it, it is possible to kick a member of a lower tier out, right?"

"There is indeed a rule like that!" said the waiter who had blocked Ye Zichen from entering.

"Good," Xiao Hai raised his eyebrows. "We just managed to get five advance tier members here. I propose kicking that brat... What's he called again?"

"Han Qi!" said Su Yiyun.

"Yes, that brat. I suggest that we request to kick him out of the clubhouse, is that alright?" Xiao Hai smiled at the people around him.

"No problem!" Lin Hanben smiled.

"Since he dared to speak ill of Young Master Ye, then I naturally will not let him stay!" Dongfang Wenyi curled his lips.

“I raise both hands and feet to kick that grandson out!” Su Yiyun raised his hand.

Out of the five advance tier members, only Zu Siliang did not say anything.

As Zu Siliang saw everyone look over at him... “It has already come to this, so do I have any reason to refuse?”

Han Qi, who ran from the place of the incident, let out a sigh of relief as he silently complimented himself for his intelligence.

If I continued to stay there, who knows what trouble would arise.

“This really is strange, why does that brat know so many big shots?”

Just as Han Qi was deep in thoughts, two security guards with white gloves walked in front of him.

“Mr. Han, your membership status has been revoked. Please leave!”

“Bullshit, how could laozi’s membership get revoked!” Han Qi cursed with a glare. “Laozi is Mayor Han’s son, do you dare to revoke laozi’s membership?”

“I’m very sorry, the membership you possess is of the

intermediate tier. Five advance tier members have declared jointly to cancel your membership status. According to the regulations of this clubhouse, you are no longer a member. Please leave!”

The security guards made a please gesture. Han Qi still wanted to muck around, but the two security guards frowned.

“We apologize in advance!”

The two guards each took one arm of Han Qi and directly dragged him out. During the process, Han Qi continued to scream out phrases like “I am the mayor’s son” and “I won’t let you guys off”.

“I wonder what Han Zhenguo would feel if he finds out that his second son made him look so terrible,” Xiao Hai wouldn’t help but chuckle as he watched Han Qi get dragged out.

“He’s lucky that his eldest son is rather smart. Otherwise, his family would be pretty screwed!” Dongfang Wenyi twitched his mouth.

From the views of everyone else in the clubhouse, Xiao Hai and co. were clearly important people in the clubhouse.

Plenty of people in the clubhouse would occasionally look towards them, but would not dare to walk over.

The split of levels in the business circles were clear. If you go over to people of a higher level than you without that sort of

status, that was just asking to get shamed.

However, most of the people were actually more curious about Ye Zichen.

He was someone that they had never seen in the clubhouse before. However, the high leveled people were all very friendly towards the young man.

Thus, they all forced themselves to remember Ye Zichen.

It was so that they would try to get closer to them if they met in the future, and even if they couldn't, they still had to ensure to not offend him.

"Uhm, what sort of place is this? Why are you guys all here?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. None of the people in front of him were ones that people could meet easily. He never expected to see all of them here at the same time.

"The name of this clubhouse is Treasure Vault. It is an auction house and can be counted as a business circle!" Xiao Hai smiled. "The people that can come here are normally those that have a net worth of more than ten million. Normally, people can come here to gather, but most of the time it is rather quiet."

"Xiao Hai is right. Actually, the reason we all came here is because an auction is being held," Zu Siliang also smiled.

“Auction?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“This clubhouse occasionally auctions some antiques or special items. You’ll understand after coming in to take a look!” Su Yiyun chuckled.

Ta ta ta...

The sound of high-heels walking on floor sounded out. Not long later, a woman wearing a red qipao arrived and made a please gesture, “The time is right. Ladies and gentlemen, please head upstairs!”

The moment they reached the second floor, Ye Zichen finally believed that it was really an auction house since neither the exterior of the clubhouse nor the first floor made it seem like one.

There was a podium for the auction alongside auction machines for entering your bid...

“Stop spacing out, our place is upstairs!” Su Yiyun clapped his shoulder. Only then did Ye Zichen realize that there were separate rooms upstairs which were probably for the advanced tier members only.

As Xiao Hai, Zu Siliang and co. went to their respective rooms, Ye Zichen followed Su Yiyun to his.

“Actually, my dad was the one who was supposed to come to this

auction, but since he's busy with business deals, he told me to come," Su Yiyun shrugged. "To be honest, I'm not very interested in stuff like antiques."

"Well, it's not anyone else's fault that you're free!" Ye Zichen shrugged.

"How am I free. I invested in a project as well! It's your medical company. I feel like it will definitely be profitable!" Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows and smiled.

"Anyone can tell!" Ye Zichen was speechless.

At the same time, the auction had officially begun.

It was as Xiao Hai had said, the items being auctioned were mostly famous paintings or antiques, and after using the Fiery Eyes of Truth to check, Ye Zichen confirmed the fact that all the items on auction were real.

Actually, he would be able to know that they were real even without using the Fiery Eyes of Truth to check since there was no way everyone shouting out so much were all idiots!

"The next item on auction is a weapon!"

The auctioneer in red qipao smiled. At the same time, the staff also took out a sword-shaped item wrapped in a red cloth.

When they pulled the red cloth away, it revealed that what was wrapped within was not a sword. Rather, it was a sword's sheath.

From the stains on it, the sheath seemed to have a long history.

"We, the Treasure Vault, have estimated that this item is from the primordial times. We are unable to confirm the exact dates, but it can be certain that it was from before the Han Dynasty!"

Wow.

The entire auction house exclaimed out in surprise.

If what they said was real, then it really would be an ancient antique.

Even if this sheath was merely a normal sheath, there is a huge collection value after so many years.

Plenty of rich businessmen already begun to call out their price, while Su Yiyun, who sat in the room, twitched his mouth, "What's the point of bidding for a shitty sheath. Ye-zi, am I right?"

No one answered.

"Ye-zi, what are you thinking about?" Su Yiyun nudged Ye Zichen with his elbow.

Only then did Ye Zichen come back to himself and raised his eyebrows, “How much is it at now?”

“Four million!” Su Yiyun said plainly.

“Ten million!”

Ye Zichen immediately pressed down on the auction machine without hesitation!

# Chapter 299 – The Bid

---

“Number 117 has offered ten million!”

Wow.

Throughout the many years that it has been established the Treasure Vault auction house's customers had already came into agreement about an unspoken rule.

The price of good items would intensely rise by small increments as people try to outbid each other, just like the heating of a small flame. This way, not only can it display the value of the product, it also allowed everyone to participate.

The rise of four million to ten million instantly caused plenty of members to lose their right to bid.

Many people subconsciously looked around for the number the auctioneer said...

It was on the third floor.

Seeing that, they instantly did not dare to say anything.

The third floor was filled with existences at the peak of the business circles. So what if they break the rules? What's more, that rule was merely set by middle-tier and low-leveled members, it

wasn't the official rule of the auction house!

The other members who stayed in rooms took a glance. Since they were also third floor members, they minded each other's faces, so they all chose to give up. What's more, Xiao Hai and co. knew which room was Su Yiyun's so they naturally did not choose to bid either.

“Su Yiyun,” Han Yu squinted his eyes and glanced through the window.

“Isn't that grandson not interested in antiques? It was normal for him to buy the first one for his dad, but why is he bidding again?”

Han Yu thought about it for a long time, before a smile gradually surfaced on his face as he pressed down on the auction machine.

“Number 196 offers twenty million!”

Before the auctioneer finished, Ye Zichen increased his bid once again.

“Number 117 offers fifty million!”

At that moment, the auctioneer finally revealed a satisfied smile, because all products had a price set before the auction. Only if she raises the price to a certain degree would she be able to get the commission for the item.

Fifty million!

Everyone in the auction house was stunned.

“Ye-zi, what are you doing!?” Su Yiyun stared at Ye Zichen, who was holding the auction machine, in confusion and raised his eyebrows. “There is no meaning for you to buy such a crappy thing with fifty million!”

“You wouldn’t understand!” Ye Zichen replied plainly.

The moment after the sheath was revealed, Ye Zichen felt like he had seen a dream.

Of course he knew that it was no daydream. Rather, it was his previous experience, and the sword sheath on his waist during the scene was identical to the one of the stage.

Thus, he decided to buy the sword sheath for himself.

“Who is the person that is continuously trying to outbid me?” Ye Zichen frowned.

“That number seems to be Han Yu, the grandson,” Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows. I didn’t see him downstairs just now, so I thought that he didn’t come!”

“Hehe, that grandson!” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

At that moment.

“Number 196 offers sixty million!”

Ye Zichen immediately raised the bid one again!

“Number 117 offers a hundred million!”

Everyone was able to feel Number 117’s desperation, and the people in the other rooms on the third floor were also shocked.

They could feel that the two people are ones with a grudge. Number 117 clearly needed the item, while Number 196 was just trying to piss the former off.

As third floor members, Number 196’s actions were rather disrespectful.

“Number 196 offers a hundred and ten million!”

“This Han Yu is rather rich!”

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. People cannot randomly add to their bid since the clubhouse would only recognize it as a valid bid if the member was able to show that they could definitely afford that

much. If that wasn't the case, then the auction house would be a complete mess.

"I have to investigate their family when I have time. It really is thought provoking that the son of the mayor can afford that much!"

"Number 117 offers a hundred and twenty million."

With that, he dialed Fatty Bai's number, "Fatty, how much money can the jewelry store withdraw? I need to buy something which costs a lot!"

"Around a hundred and thirty million!"

The moment Fatty Bai said that, Ye Zichen's heart sank.

I definitely would not be able to buy it if the price calling continues like this.

"You're out of money aren't you!" Han Yu sneered as he leisurely drank wine within his room. "You screwed me over for sixty million. Since you want this sword sheath, then prepare to bleed!"

"Number 196 offers a hundred and fifty million!"

After Han Yu put up such a high bid, Ye Zichen realized that if he suddenly said that he doesn't want it anymore, Han Yu might

actually vomit blood.

“Grandson, you’re very lucky!” Ye Zichen licked his lips, then turned to Su Yiyun. “Help me contact the auction house. I want to exchange the sword sheath with something!”

Several minutes later, a man in the auction house’s uniform appeared in the room alongside a middle-aged man.

“Sir, did you request for an exchange of items?”

Ye Zichen nodded, then took out five wild ginsengs.

One could tell that the wild ginsengs had a long history just from its appearance. What’s more, there was also a faint fragrance being emitted from it that was able to make people feel relaxed.

“I want to use these five thousand-year wild ginseng to exchange for the sheath!”

At the same time, a man also appeared in Han Yu’s room.

“Sir, Number 117’s room has requested for an exchange for items. Please name the highest price you can accept to bid!”

During this exchange, the sword sheath was not auctioned. Instead, the auctioneer continued on with the auction of other items.

A man suddenly appeared beside the auctioneer and whispered something. After hearing that, the auctioneer nodded and smiled.

“Congratulations to Number 117 for getting the Primordial Sword Sheath!”

“Yay!” Ye Zichen clenched his fist in the room. Gaining the sword sheath was more important than anything.

Han Yu was also stunned upon hearing the result, but he very quickly revealed a satisfied smile.

Nothing was more important than making Ye Zichen waste a lot of money.

Not long later, a auction house staff sent the sword sheath to Ye Zichen’s room, while handing him a membership card.

“Sir, this is our clubhouse’s membership card. You can enjoy the treatment of an advance-tier member in anyone of our clubhouses within the country with this card.”

Ye Zichen received the card with a nod. The card wasn’t really that important to him.

The sword sheath was what’s important.

“Ye-zi, just what’s so amazing about this thing to make you not mind using so much money and thousand-year ginseng, something that is a treasure for healthcare, to exchange for it?” Su Yiyun put up a look of confusion on his face.

Ye Zichen merely smiled, “I just wanted to collect it since I feel like this sword sheath has collectible value.”

Ye Zichen traced his finger over the pattern of the sheath. He could feel that the sheath was very intimate. More importantly, the moment he traced his finger over it, it was as if a lot of the rust on it disappeared...

“Don’t bullshit with me. I know you well enough. There is definitely something special about the sword sheath,” Su Yiyun asked in curiosity. “Tell brother just what’s special about the sword sheath. That grandson Han Yu is definitely feeling great about screwing you over. Tell me about what’s special about it so that I can be happy as well!”

“Hehe, I’m not telling you!” Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

At the same time, Ye Zichen’s phone also rang.

When he saw the caller ID, he smiled and answered the call. However, his happy expression turned to shock as he chucked the sword sheath in his hand to Su Yiyun.

“Help me keep it!”

# Chapter 300 – Car Accident

---

An empty truck and an expensive sports car crashed into each other. The front of the sports car was completely crushed, while its airbag had deployed. The truck driver had already ran away when the police finally rushed to the scene of the accident.

Meanwhile, a large crowd competed to take photos outside the cordon as they gossipped about the accident itself.

At Bingcheng Number One People Hospital.

Xiao Yumei laid on a sick bed. She was the victim of the car accident.

What was fortunate was that she was not hurt at all. Rejoice could be seen in her eyes as she stared a single tooth that she held in her hands.

Bang.

The door to the ward swung open as Ye Zichen ran in worriedly.

“Yumei!”

Xiao Yumei, who was in the ward, looked up. A faint smile surfaced on her face as she held the bone tooth in her hands tight and called out softly, “Why did you come!”

“How could I not when something like this happened?” Ye Zichen walked over to the bedside worriedly. “Are you alright?”

“Of course I’m not, don’t be like this...” Xiao Yumei smile and caressed Ye Zichen’s worried and tensed face. “Look, I’m completely fine. Actually, I’m not hurt at all, but the police said that I still have to come and get a checkup in the hospital.”

Only then did Ye Zichen stop worrying, “That’s great.”

On his way over, he was completely worried sick since the one who called him was the police officer who merely told him that Xiao Yumei was in a car accident so he should hurry over if he was a relative.

On his journey over, the taxi driver also mentioned the situation with the car accident...

The front of the sports car was completely ruined, while the suspect had run away!

“I heard that the car was completely trashed...” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Yeah, it did get trashed. I was on my way back to the company when the truck drove in the wrong direction and hit me,” Xiao Yumei’s words radiated with fear as she opened her hand and set her gaze upon the bone tooth. “Technically speaking, I should have

died in the situation. But I actually didn't. Only afterwards did I notice the bone bracelet around my hand had broke. This is the only thing remaining of it that I could find!"

The tooth no longer shimmered, and its surfaced displayed faint cracks.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. He had already wondered about the origin of the bracelet when he noticed it on Xiao Yumei's wrist.

From the looks of it, some sort of master really did come in contact with Xiao Yumei, predicted that this trouble would come, and thus deciding to give her the bracelet.

However, Ye Zichen did notice the main issue of the accident. The truck drove in the wrong direction!

"Who did you offend recently?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. I must make whoever caused Xiao Yumei to end up in such danger pay.

"I didn't offend anyone! From the looks of it, someone is jealous of our medical company's profits, and so wants me dead," Xiao Yumei smiled. She was unable to think of who she had offended, so she could only comfort herself with those words.

However, Ye Zichen did not agree with that thought at all.

The medical company had just been established. Although it was

coming off strong, it was not to the point that it would affect the profits of other people.

Could another cosmetic company want to kill it while it is in its cradle?

Ye Zichen frowned, then glanced at Second Hou, who was standing guard in the room.

“Where is Eldest Hou?”

“Big Brother went to catch that perpetrator,” Second Hou answered.

“Capture?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “With your abilities, isn’t it extremely easy for you to capture the perpetrator!?”

Then, his heart sank.

“The other person isn’t a normal person?”

Second Hou nodded.

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly. These guys were truly outrageous. They only just put Mother Ye, Jinglei-jie and Tiantian

in danger a few days ago.

Now they actually dared to try it on Xiao Yumei.

Buzz...

At that moment, Ye Zichen's phone rang once again.

Ye Zichen answered the call and placed his phone by his ear.

Wei Chen's voice sounded out from the phone, "Boss Ye, the person called Huo Da is indeed in Bingcheng. We were able to find out that the grandson is thinking of a way to hurt you and your family. I have already sent people to protect your family in secret, so don't worry."

Huo Da!

Ye Zichen's eyelid jumped for a moment.

He looked at Xiao Yumei's beautiful face...

She was driving my car, my car!

"Tell me his position. NOW. IMMEDIATELY!"

Within a certain deluxe hotel in Bingcheng.

Huo Da looked at the man standing in front of him with bloodshot eyes and questioned, “I told you to kill Ye Zichen, why didn’t you investigate who was driving the car properly!?”

“Hehe, you are hilarious,” the man twitched his mouth and laughed coldly. “You told me personally that the person in the car was the mission target. I crashed the truck into it and now you’re faulting me? What, do you want to repudiate and not pay up?”

The man twisted his neck and revealed a savage smile, “I don’t have a particularly good temper. If you want to repudiate, then I can only...”

A domineering aura suddenly filled the room. The man also licked his lips and walked towards Huo Da with a sinister gaze.

“Pay him!” Huo Da’s heart tensed, but the old butler behind him did not react.

“Butler, give him the money!”

The man stopped and set his gaze upon the old butler. Only then did the old butler smile and take out the cheque he had prepared beforehand.

“Here is your commission!”

“Hmmph, that’s more like it.”

The man picked up the cheque to leave. At the split second after he turned his back...

Bang.

A bloody hole appeared in the man, causing him to fall onto the ground.

Huo Da, who sat on the sofa, turned his head in shock and saw the old butler holding a gun with a silencer in his gloved hand.

“Butler, you...”

“This person actually dared to disrespect Young Master, he deserves to be killed!” the old butler snorted coldly.

“Yes, he deserved to be killed,” Huo Da’s gaze hardened.

At that moment, the old butler chucked the gun to Huo Da, “Young Master, go and finish him off.”

Huo Da caught the gun. To be honest, although Huo Da was sinister and killed plenty of people through other people’s hands, it was his first time trying to actually kill someone himself.

He subconsciously gripped the gun with shaking hands, then thought about it. He realized that he was under too much pressure recently and had to let off the steam somehow.

He made up his mind. He pointed the gun towards the man in the pool of blood and shot him a few times before picking up the cheque from the ground and burning it with a lighter.

After he finally finished enjoying himself, he turned around with a maniacal laugh, “Get someone to deal with him.”

Bang.

A loud noise suddenly sounded out right outside the hotel room door. Immediately afterwards, the door fell down into the room.

Huo Da subconsciously wanted to use something to cover the corpse, but it was already too late.

Ye Zichen’s eyes were completely dark while Wei Chen followed beside him...

“Grandson, I finally caught you!”

“Ye Zichen!” Huo Da glared, then smiled coldly. “Die!”